



EMPEROR'S DOMINATION

BOOK 01

Yan Bi Xiao Sheng

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Emperor's Domination

(帝霸)

by

Yan Bi Xiao Sheng

(厌笔萧生)

Synopsis

One million years ago, Li Qiye planted a simple water bamboo into the ground.

Eight hundred thousand years ago, Li Qiye had a koi fish pet.

Five hundred thousand years ago, Li Qiye cared for a little girl.

.

.

.

In the present day, Li Qiye woke up from his slumber; The water bamboo reached the apex of cultivation; The koi fish became a Golden Dragon;

The little girl became the Nine Worlds' Immortal Empress.

This is a tale regarding an immortal human who was the teacher of the Demon Saint, Heavenly Beast, and Immortal Empress.

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Bao @ [Wuxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1 : Three Demon Master (1)

-Baa baa... baa baa... baa baa

A young shepherd's sheep noises echoed across the normally tranquil mountain range.

Li Qiye crawled on top of the cliff while the cold night breeze blows heavily; however, at this moment, perspiration drowned his body. At thirteen years of age, a little boy like Li Qiye was using all of his might to climb the mountain range; this scene in the night sky exuded a macabre sensation for any spectators that were around to experience it.

Although the night was quiet, his mind was tormented by fire and uncertainty.

Heralded from a poor family, his parents were both peasants. At the age of seven, he started his life as a young shepherd. His name was [Li Qiye](#) because he cried for seven days and seven nights after birth.

Today, he was performing his daily task; however, during the evening dawn's approach, he noticed that he was missing his leading sheep. Filled with worries, he rushed back to the mountain range to find it. After what was seemingly comparable to scouring the entire mountain, he could not find the sheep.

Thinking about the evil owner and the missing sheep that

belonged to him, Li Qiye feared for the worst.

There was only one place that he didn't search, the Heaven Demon Grotto.

As he looked toward the cave in front of him, the mountain range in the dark night resembled a fierce beast from the Ancient Desolate Era with its mouth opening, hungering for human flesh. Hearing the wolves' howls reverberating from side to side, he couldn't help but shiver in fear.

The Heaven Demon Grotto was considered a cursed place in the surrounding area. Legend has it that there exists an evil demon and any trespasser would be instantly consumed. No one had ever come out of the cave alive.

His fear of the punishment from his evil owner and the sound of the eventual whipping that he would receive pushed him to overcome his fear of the Heaven Demon Grotto. Grinding his teeth, he approached the cave as his body disappeared in the night.

-Aaaaaaaahhhhh...

The sad night screeched along with the young boy's scream.

-You, you, what is your intention? ... Ahh...

Suddenly, the screams came to an end.

A moment later, at the depths of the Heaven Demon Grotto, the silence was answered with a menacing voice.

-Good, good, my immortal Dark Crow has finally completed. Only a soul was missing; it is fortunate that your soul will be suitable.

-Phwoosh... phwoosh... phwoosh!

As each flap rung loudly, a strange, dark crow flew away from the Heaven Demon Grotto.

-Fly, I will use your soul to find all the Forbidden Burials; fly across all the land. As long as the Nine Worlds exist, I will find you again!

From then on, between this Heaven and Earth, a Dark Crow flew across the planes. From Heavenly cities to the most dangerous edges and secret places, it flew without free will, straight through the Nine Worlds for eras without end.

As time passed, millenniums had come and gone; a new peerless master rose up as another fell. Slowly, the crow would appear again. It wanted to escape its master; it wanted to find a purpose to its life.

From the Medicine God to the Immortal Emperor Sky, Immortal Emperor Sanguine, Immortal Emperor Min Ren to Immortal

Emperor Lunar Devourer and Immortal Emperor Bing Yu... all the way up until the Black Dragon King.

Behind each of these paragons lied the shadow of a crow; one that struggled to find freedom. As these strongest beings came and went, the crow treaded upon the unending road of time to combat its master.

-Aaa!

As Li Qiye was floating in the river, he was picked up by an old man. His first reaction was jumping up as he was unfamiliar with the scenery as well as his own body.

-Ah, my body!

Looking down and seeing that his body had stayed the same, Li Qiye was both ecstatic and scared. Even after the millennia of struggles while fighting against the unending waves and winds, the Dark Crow, Li Qiye, still couldn't contain his emotions after regaining his own body.

Taking a deep breath, he lifted his head and saw an old man in front of him.

-Hehehe, it is this Old Man that has saved you from impending doom.

The Old Man laughed loudly in an inglorious manner, revealing

his three remaining yellow teeth.

Upstream, Li Qiye could still see the dimming structure of the Heaven Demon Grotto. His eyes became increasingly cold; his aura exceeds anything that a thirteen year old child could produce.

-How should I address you, Old Man?

-Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, San Gui Ye.

The old man answered with his mouth agape, spitting everywhere.

-Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect...

Li Qiye whispered under his breath. This name reminded him of the sealed memories in his head; the time he was still imprisoned in the body of the Dark Crow.

-Right now, who has the Heaven's Will?

Li Qiye regained his composure and asked the man.

-Heaven's Will eh? Right now, in this era, no one has been able to carry the Heaven's Will.

The Old Man was still smiling as he answered.

-Where is Immortal Emperor Ta Kong?

After hearing his answer, Li Qiye's complexion darkened. How long has he been asleep for? Over one hundred thousand years?

-Immortal Emperor Ta Kong has been missing for thirty thousand years.

-What about Black Dragon King of the Heaven Protector Palace?

Li Qiye inquired about the Old Man once again.

-No one knows, the Black Dragon King went missing at the same time as well.

San Gui Ye shook his head with the answer.

Li Qiye looked back at the Heaven Demon Grotto angrily, finally knowing why he had regained his body.

-Let us go.

Wearing a sad complexion, Li Qiye turned around and started to walk away. After experiencing near immortality, he knew exactly what he had to do.

The Heaven Protector Palace has the strongest lineage of a peerless master in the current times. That era, when the Black Dragon King was still alive, no one could match him across the Nine Worlds.

Even though he has been missing for thirty thousand years, the Heaven Protector Palace was still residing arrogantly in this heaven.

Standing outside the Palace's outer city, Li Qiye was burning ceremonial money while whispering.

-Little Black Dragon, you don't have to worry. This life, you have helped me by obtaining my body again; one day, I will stomp the evil land to get revenge for you.

After the burning was complete, Li Qiye stared at the Heaven Protector Palace ahead. The scenes were still the same, but the people were no longer there; everything had become foreign. He reminisced about the old days; Little Black Dragon and the memory of them building this city from the ground up through their sheer effort.

-Heh, let us go back to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect now.

At this time, the Old Man glanced at Li Qiye and told his purpose while revealing his three golden teeth.

Li Qiye calmly nodded his head. No matter how illustrious or

mysterious this Old Man may be, his origin could not surprise Li Qiye.

As they were leaving, an extremely elegant and beautiful girl stepped out of the Palace. She resembled an angel from heaven; a goddess out of this world. She inadvertently saw the fire left over by the ceremonial burning, as well as some mysterious symbols left behind.

After seeing those symbols, her expression greatly changed.

-Who was having a ceremony here just now?

An old servant nearby immediately went around to look for information and came back with results.

-The city guards said that there was an old man and a young boy here just now.

-Find them immediately.

The girl declared.

-Your Highness is supposed to go to God's Lake right now.

The old servant hesitantly whimpered.

-Find them!

The goddess yelled softly; her body disappeared across the space to find the two.

In the end, she was unable to find them and had to return dejectedly to the Palace. The symbols rotate around in her head. They have disappeared for a long time, why is it that they were appearing again in the outskirts after thousands of years. Are they friends or foes?

-I have to read the ancient books that the ancestors have left behind; something strange is happening.

She immediately went to the deepest part of the forbidden grounds in the Heaven Protector Palace.

Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect resided in the nation of Heavenly Jewel Kingdom. It used to be of Immortal Emperor lineage with a long history. In the beginning of Emperor Era, Immortal Emperor Min Ren imperiously stood at the peak and created a sect and named it Cleansing Incense.

Unfortunately, it could not stand the test of time and its unforgiving nature. The sect was no longer of the Immortal Emperor ranking that could rule the land like in the old age. No matter how hard it tries, it could not rekindle the ancient glory nor

stop the unrelentingly slow demise.

-Elder, a mortal said he wants us to accept him as the Prime Disciple.

A disciple hurriedly reported to the First Elder of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

-Kick him off the mountain!

Without giving a care, the First Elder proclaimed.

-Why would you even report such a little thing? A mortal wanting to be the Prime Disciple of our sect? What a joke. A Prime Disciple is the same as the Sect Master's protégé; one with the highest chance of becoming the future Sect Master.

-But he was recommended by San Gui Ye.

The disciple stuttered.

-San Gui Ye?

Raising his eyebrows, the First Elder unhappily said.

-Is he bribed by liquor? Is that why he is recommending this mortal?

San Gui Ye used to belong to the sect, but the sect did not want to recognize this member. Although the name sounded very heroic, this name had caused the sect to lose all dignity.

San Gui Ye had three “good” qualities to him. He was very good at spending money, lying, and fooling around in the brothels. That is why they called him [San Gui Ye](#).

He had not cultivated any methods to its end, but he did have a very big background within the sect. Rumor has it that he was the bastard child of the last Sect Master. That was why, when the last Sect Master died, he asked for the current one to take care of San Gui Ye.

No matter who his father was, the whole Sect and its upper echelon had no love for the Old Man and the unflattering words regarding San Gui Ye’s character.

-So what if it was San Gui Ye’s recommendation, kick him off!

The First Elder yelled out of annoyance; his morning and good mood were ruined by this event.

-But, but he said he has the Cleansing Incense Ancient Order from San Gui Ye.

The disciple stuttered once again out of fear.

-Cleansing Incense Ancient Order!

After hearing these words, the First Elder's expression darkened. After a quiet contemplation, he quickly ordered:

-Gather all of the Elders and tell the mortal to wait outside of the Grand Chamber.

The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect has a total of Six Elders. After hearing the four words "Cleansing Incense Ancient Order", the other five quickly came to the meeting.

The original patriarch of the sect was Immortal Emperor Min Ren who left behind three Orders. Two have been recalled to the sect but the third one had fallen into the hand of San Gui Ye.

Outside of the request from the last Sect Master to take care of San Gui Ye, the second reason why the Elders were helpless against San Gui Ye was because he possessed the last Order. The Order represented Immortal Emperor Min Ren. The holder could request anything from the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

Sitting in the Grand Chamber of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, while staring at the elusive statue covered by a golden smoke, Li Qiye couldn't help but recall many stories from the past.

The statue of Immortal Emperor Min Ren stood strong at the tallest point. Although many years had passed, the statue still

carried an ancient aura, seemingly capable of piercing the nine skies. Spectators couldn't help but worship the mere sight; it was as if the Emperor was still in front of them.

Li Qiye didn't know how to describe his feeling. The Emperor was dead, but Li Qiye was still alive; he forever will be. Although he had obtained his goal and regained his body, all of his old acquaintances have slowly disappear into the mist of time.

[Li Qiye \(TL: Qi meaning seven, Ye meaning night\)](#)

[\(TL: San – Three, Gui – Demon/Ghost, Ye -Master/Old-man\)](#)

Chapter 2 : Three Demon Master (2)

Li Qiye remembered when the Old Minh era was coming to an end and the age of the Emperors had started; his soul was still trapped in the body of the Dark Crow at that time. This was currently the era when he temporarily regained his sanity from the control of the Heaven Demon Grotto after an eternity of struggles.

When he met Immortal Emperor Min Ren for the first time, Min Ren was still a little boy who was in love with martial arts and had no knowledge of grand cultivation.

There lied an obsidian colored, wooden stick next to the altar below the statue. Li Qiye couldn't help but slightly chuckle at the sight. He couldn't believe that the stick still existed after so many years.

He made great use of it in the past to discipline that group of energetic children, including the Immortal Emperor.

At this moment, the Six Elders' sharp eyes preyed on Li Qiye, intending to unravel his secrets. However, Li Qiye remained calm while sitting quietly through the uncomfortable atmosphere.

-Cleansing Incense Ancient Order?

Eventually, the First Elder gravely inquired. The Order was extremely important because it was an object left behind by the founding Immortal Emperor.

Li Qiye slowly opened his palm to reveal the Ancient Order. He was surprised when San Gui Ye took him to the town below the Sect's mountain and then ran off to the brothel. Before leaving, he casually threw the Order into Li Qiye's hand. It was unbelievable that a person like the Old Man would have the Ancient Order.

In the past, when Min Ren bore the Heaven's Will, he gave the three Ancient Orders to Li Qiye. Later, Li Qiye gave them to different people. After a million years, Li Qiye nostalgically stared at the present Order. In the past, he did not need them, but today, he had no choice but to utilize its power.

The Six Elders passed around the Order while they carefully examined it to confirm that it was indeed authentic. The truth was, the Sect had long wanted to recall the Order, but they did not have a way of forcing it from San Gui Ye's hand. He knew that the Order was equal to another life. Thus, he held onto it with his dear life. Who would have predicted that it would fall into the hands of a mortal without any reputation.

-Where is San Gui Ye?

The First Elder asked coldly. He, in reality, harbored no love for San Gui Ye, a person who could only spend money, lie, and play with women. To him, it did not matter if he was the son of the old Sect Master.

-He went to the Tsui Red brothel.

Li Qiye calmly answered.

Shadows loomed over the Six Elders' faces. The thought of someone from the honorable Sect visiting the most famous and popular brothel within a thousand mile radius gave them great shame. And it was not like it was his first time visiting it either; they could only wish that such a notorious player wasn't a part of the Sect.

-What is your demand?

A different Elder loudly asked. They didn't know the method he employed in order to obtain the Order; however, the truth was the truth and the Order in front of them was definitely not a fake.

-I heard that the Prime Disciple position for the Sect is still unoccupied; plus, since San Gui Ye recommends my talents so fervently, I have no choice but to desire this position.

Li Qiye slowly proclaimed.

After hearing his answer, the Six Elders started cursing San Gui Ye. That goddamn bastard, what rights did he have to recommend someone to be the Prime Disciple of the Sect. It was an extremely important position; the Sect had to carefully select the person. Otherwise, the spot would have already been occupied.

-Don't use the Prime Disciple position as a joke!

One Elder spoke with cold intent.

-I know.

Li Qiye calmly and slowly enunciated his words without fear.

-But the person carrying the Order has the right to demand any request; this is the rule established by the Immortal Emperor Min Ren.

-What if you use an underhanded method to obtain this order?

The First Elder interjected with a threatening statement. This position wasn't something that could be joked about or given without any thoughts.

Li Qiye replied in a cavalierly manner.

-I understand, the Elders' fear that I might have used demonic ploys to force the Order from the hands of San Gui Ye. However, if you guys do not trust me, you can send people to the brothel for confirmation.

The Elders cried in pain deep within their hearts every time they heard the word "brothel", but they had no choice but to send disciples to confirm the truth.

A moment later, a disciple did indeed confirm Li Qiye's words.

He tried his best to leave out information regarding San Gui Ye's current joyful and debaucherous disposition with the girls, or the Elders would go crazy.

Unwilling as they might be, the Elders had to follow the rules given by the Patriarch. Even if the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect has fallen, their lineage was still of the Immortal Emperor's. Thus, they will not dishonor the reputation left behind.

-Bring the Truth Mirror.

The Truth Mirror shined on Li Qiye's body. Any mortal wanting to join a Sect for cultivation purposes must be judged by the mirror. It tested the Physique, Life Wheel, and the Fate Palace.

Within the mirror, Li Qiye's reflection appeared. It was but a hazy, unstable shadow that could go out at any time. Behind his head appeared an illusive blood halo while the top had a radiating light. However, both were extremely feeble.

-Physique is of a mortal. The Life Wheel is a mortal's life. The Fate Palace is also a mortal's destiny.

The disciple reported the findings of the Truth Mirror on Li Qiye's innate talents and physical condition.

Every person had a Physique, Life Wheel level, and Fate Palace. The Physique directly affected the physical strength; Life Wheel's level indicated one's longevity; and the Fate Palace showed one's

innate talent for cultivation.

However, Li Qiye, with his mortal Physique, mortal Life Wheel, and mortal Life Palace, had silenced the Elders. He was the most average of men; the Sect could go outside and grab any commoner from the street with the same characteristics.

-I am aware.

Li Qiye didn't want to think too much and casually spoke.

-But I still want to be the prime disciple.

-You...

After hearing those words, the Elders were extremely aggravated.

-You are not qualified to be a normal disciple, let alone the Prime Disciple. This is the most unreasonable of requests.

-I trust that the descendants of the Immortal Emperor will not relinquish their words or violate the ancestral rule, bringing shame to the Sect and the lineage.

Li Qiye played around with the Order in his hand and slowly spoke.

-If this Order were to fall into another's hands, the result would be unimaginable.

The First Elder gazed at him and coldly retorted:

-Anyone who wants to be the Prime Disciple of our Sect has to be tested on all aspects; this ranges from his origin to his background as well as his innate talents. Otherwise, the Sect would not allow an unqualified candidate.

-That is your problem.

Li Qiye stared at the Six Elders and said:

-If you think a different Sect sent me to steal your Immortal Emperor's heritage, I would not need to become the Prime Disciple. By the order of virtue, I can just ask for them. You should know this better than me! If I wanted to harm the Sect, with the power of this Order, it would not be a difficult feat.

-He is not exactly without reason.

One of the Six Elders slowly responded:

-If the Order keeps on wandering around outside, wouldn't that be a hidden danger to us? We cannot refuse anyone with the Order. We might as well accept his request.

-From the past until now, the Prime Disciple has always been the head disciple under the Sect Master. We must ask the Sect Master's opinion regarding this decision, then make a choice later.

Another Elder mused the statement.

-So be it, we have no other choice. Ultimately, if we could recover the Order, then we would have done a great service to the Sect.

Chapter 3 : Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect (1)

-Three days later, after honoring the ancestor, you will formally become the Prime Disciple of our sect.

The First Elder, while very discontent, still managed to grunt out a response.

Li Qiye was still sitting casually, without a trace of surprise. He only chuckled out loud.

-Me becoming the Prime Disciple should warrant a weapon or two for my personal safety, right?

Seeing his comfortable state under heavy pressure, all of the Six Elders were surprised. In the end, the boy was only thirteen years old, but his calm demeanor resembled a tyrant that dominated one sphere, having everything under his control. How could a mortal like him have such a courageous spirit.

The First Elder shook his head at Li Qiye and told him:

-Although we accepted you as the Prime Disciple, we can only give you a normal weapon. If you desire a formidable treasure or an Immortal Emperor Merit Law, you would have to contribute enough merits to the sect.

Li Qiye smiled; his goal was certainly not an Immortal Emperor Merit Law or a peerless technique. His true aim was the black wooden stick lying on the pedestal. Averting his gaze to the stick, Li Qiye continued:

-Fine, I want that wooden stick.

-That wooden stick?

The Six Elders' bodies staggered in surprise.

The stick was only used for gathering the ashes after a ceremonial burning to honor the ancestors. It had always been there and no one had any interest in it. The Elders thought Li Qiye would ask for treasures, but this request was outside of their expectation.

Li Qiye said with ease.

-Since I am the Prime Disciple, my position is worthy of respect. The stick belongs to the Grand Chamber, and this is the Ancestral Grand Chamber of all of the Sect. Its symbolism is worthy relative to my current position.

After hearing Li Qiye's logic, the Six Elders looked around themselves with their eyes wide open. They thought to themselves, this idiotic brat and that goddamn playboy San Gui Ye definitely belong together. [Just like how an ox seeks another ox, a horse would find another horse.](#)

-So be it, we shall bestow this stick upon you.

The First Elder was happy to give this worthless stick to Li Qiye if it meant that he doesn't have to hear his incessant blabbering anymore.

-Many thanks to the honorable Elders.

Li Qiye was eagerly waiting for those words. Before his words finished coming out of his mouth, his hands were already holding the stick. This action in the eyes of the Six Elders was seen as being very naive.

-Huai Ren, take him to his resting quarter.

Finally, an Elder became impatient and told a nearby disciple to send Li Qiye away.

Today's events had greatly stressed the Six Elders. Even if the Sect had long gone passed its glory days, it was not destitute enough to accept a waste of a human being as the Prime Disciple.

Led by the disciple, Li Qiye approached a solitary single peak. It was not small; on top of it laid a small villa the size of 36,000 square meters.

The villa had been abandoned for a long time, surrounded by

weeds and wild plants. Although it is far away from everything, it is still a part of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

Opening the door, the disciple immediately said:

-Junior disci-, no; senior disciple, this place will be your home from now on.

He only spoke two words, but quickly realized his mistakes.

Based on the time Li Qiye joined the sect, Li Qiye was his junior disciple; however, because he was the Prime Disciple, anyone within the third generation – no matter how young or old – would have to call him senior disciple.

The truth was, according to the rules of the Sect, the Prime Disciple has the right to live in a peak closest to the center. However, all Six Elders are unhappy with Li Qiye. Thus, he was exiled to this faraway place. The peaks located near the center contained thicker world essence than the collateral mountains and inferior peaks.

-This place will be just fine.

Li Qiye naturally proclaimed. He was not a petty man regarding such trivial matters.

-I have brought all the daily necessities to senior disciple earlier.

This junior disciple thoroughly handled matters with ease. Before leaving, he politely said:

-If you need anything else, just come to the outer area to find me.

-What is your name?

Before the disciple departs, Li Qiye casually asked.

The disciple was surprised by the sudden question. He does not think highly of Li Qiye. His talents were lacking to the point that he would not be accepted as a regular disciple here. However, Li Qiye's calm and collected demeanor in the Grand Chamber has left an impression on him.

-Senior disciple, this junior disciple's name is Nan Huai Ren. I am a caretaker of the outside court.

-My name is Li Qiye.

Li Qiye gently nodded.

In the last million years, the ones who knew his true origin and name could be counted on the fingers of one's hands.

After Nan Huai Ren's departure, Li Qiye did not sit idly by. He began to clean up the yard and tidied up the whole mountain. After

completing the task to an acceptable standard, the deserted mountain resembled more of a home.

Li Qiye did everything in a systematic and neat manner, slow but steady. If any accidental bypassers were to witness his cleaning actions, they would not believe that he is only thirteen years old.

After the tedious labor, the sky slowly darkened. Li Qiye felt tired and hungry; he slowly sat down in front of the villa. Taking in a deep breath, he took out the wooden stick placed by his waist and carefully observed it. His memories slowly came back to him, causing him to have a bitter smile.

The world believes that if an Immortal Emperor succeeds in carrying the Heaven's Will, they will truly become immortal. However, if that was the case, then where are Immortal Emperor Min Ren, Immortal Emperor Lunar Devourer, and all the peerless cultivators from each era? Where was their end?

Li Qiye slowly regained his composure; he removed the dust and ash from the stick. The stick eventually revealed its real form. This is a stick spanning one meter; after being doused in fire for thousands of years, it still retained its original form without faults. In the eyes of other people however, this was only a regular wooden stick without any magical elements. Li Qiye whispered:

– Serpent Punishing Stick.

That day, when Min Ren was without the Heaven's Will; Li Qiye, as the master of this future Immortal Emperor, had taught a group

of children that would be the loyal support for Min Ren. Since he wanted to groom them well, he specifically took the Serpent Punishing Stick from the Demon Forest.

Those teenagers that would stomp the Nine Worlds under their feets were all victims of this stick. After concluding their training, he left the stick there in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; and there it has remained until now.

Gripping the stick tightly, Li Qiye immersed himself even deeper within his memories. Escaping the Heaven Demonic Grotto was successful, but time was not merciful. Everyone who used to be his friends and families such as the Medicine God, Immortal Emperor Sanguine, Immortal Emperor Min Ren... even the illustrious Black Dragon God that survived three eras have all left this world.

At the beginning of the Desolate Era, he was only a young shepherd. Imprisoned by the Heaven Demon Grotto, he was forced to follow the trajectory envisioned by his master in his crow body. Unable to resist, he flew without rest across the Forbidden Burials, travelling across the Nine Lands, across the Nine Worlds... and in the end, he still had no choice but to return to the Heaven Demon Grotto.

However, because of this, he had experienced the countless dangers and mysteries of the world. He had trodden through lands that even an unbeatable Virtuous Paragon would stray from. His willpower, basked by hardships throughout the eras, became unshakable.

From then on, he was unwilling to become an immortal slave to

the Heaven Demon Grotto. He formulated a grand plan in order to cut off all the immortal spirit seals and formations within his soul.

For his own freedom, to regain his body, he continuously led all the geniuses on the road of cultivation. The best of these young ones were able to fight on the peerless road, under the sky, to obtain the Heaven's Will.

But now, everything was gone. His unshakable spirit was moved by human emotions. Taking his last, deep breath to forget his pain, he has once again strengthened his resolve to destroy all obstacles and penetrate the souls of those in the Heaven Demon Grotto.

[\(TL: Stupid people come together would be the meaning here, it doesn't translate as poetically in English; however, I don't know if we want to keep it in to keep the translation loyal\)](#)

[\(TL: Grammar here is weird, but I do like the repetition here, makes it more dramatic\)](#)

Chapter 4 : Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect (2)

The news of the new Prime Disciple had spread across the sect. The upper echelons were unhappy, but they could not do anything regarding this matter due to the Order. A useless person like Li Qiye was only lucky, that's all.

However, the third generation was extremely riled up. The Prime Disciple would have originally come from one of them. He would have to be the one with the highest contributions, as well as passing all of the tests given by the Elders.

Not only that, he would also be blessed with the Sect Master's teachings while he has exposure to emperor level techniques. Ultimately, he will most likely become the Sect Master in the future as well.

The ones that rebelled the most were the most gifted disciples with the highest aptitudes and origins; they felt cheated by Li Qiye. Thus, the commotion in the sect was chaotic.

-A mortal with a mortal Physique, mortal Life Wheel and mortal Fate Palace has no right to be the Prime Disciple.

A few geniuses angrily declared.

-He is the biggest disgrace to our sect.

-Who can blame him for obtaining the Cleansing Incense Ancient Order; even the Elders have accepted it.

A few of the older geniuses lamented, but they could only accept the situation.

-Hmmp, he is only the Prime Disciple for now; one without talents and strengths cannot compete for the Sect Master's seat. Who is to say that the Prime Disciple will be the next Sect Master for certain.

The most arrogant and confident disciple spoke out.

Three days later, the sect received an invitation from the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

-What! The Nine Saint Demon Gate wants to test Li Qiye?

After receiving the news, the Six Elders were shocked.

One of the Elders became increasingly paranoid, lamentably:

-They've heard the news so quickly. He only became the Prime Disciple recently and they already want to test him. It seems like they want to escape the promise of the past. A trash like Li Qiye will never pass the test. That is why they want to force and expedite the issue.

-We no longer have a choice.

The First Elder reluctantly spoke out.

-Right now, the Nine Saint Demon Gate rules an entire country. We cannot compare to them and thus, we cannot negotiate anything differently.

His words caused everyone to fall into silence. In the beginning of the Emperor Era, their sect was invincible; their reputation intoxicated the Nine Worlds; their strength ruled an Ancient Kingdom; all sects submitted to their might. No existence in the entire world could have been a threat to the position of the old Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

However, as time passed, old glories were now gone. They no longer have the power to control a regular country, let alone an Ancient Kingdom. They lost the privilege of granting titles to their followers such as [Named Hero or Royal Noble](#).

-What do we do now?

All of the Elders knew that a mortal like Li Qiye had no chance of passing the examination.

-We have no choice; we have to try our best. If he somehow succeeds, then we would be in-laws with the Nine Saint Demon Gate. If this was the case, then Heavenly God Sect and Heavenly

Jewel Kingdom would not dare to look down upon us.

Li Qiye was waiting in his villa until the Ancestor's Ceremony, but Nan Huai Ren was approaching.

-Senior disciple, the Elders call for you in the Grand Chamber.

He quickly approached Li Qiye.

-Something major happened?

-I will not lie to you, honorable brother. The Nine Saint Demon Gate sent us an invitation.

He paused for a second and glanced at Li Qiye, then continued on:

-I heard your fiancé wants to test your abilities.

-Nine Saint Demon Gate!

Li Qiye suddenly remembered an old memory when he heard this name.

Nam Haoi Ren thought he did not know of this sect so he quickly explained.

-Nine Saint Demon Gate is one of the biggest sects in the Grand Middle Territory. They rule over Gu Niujiang Country, having the right to grant titles. Our two sects used to have an amicable and close relationship together. The original Patriarch of Nine Saint used to be named Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon. He was the number one general under our Immortal Emperor Min Ren. When we were ruling over an Ancient Kingdom, even the Nine Saint Demon Gate had to pay tribute to us.

-I have heard of the sect.

Li Qiye smiled gently. Of course he knew about the sect, and he had met the Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon as well. Because of Min Ren, Li Qiye spent so much time and energy in order to entrap this demonic monster named Nine Saint; forcing him to be Min Ren's fate protector.

-Where did this fiancé come from?

Nan Huai Ren answered.

-From the legends, when our Patriarch accepted the Heaven's Will and became the Immortal Emperor; Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon had a pact with us. If their Prime Descendant was a female while ours is a male, then we would become in-laws.

Pausing for a moment, he sighed dejectedly:

-At that time, they were climbing high.

-I think in the past, the Old Chicken had a female disciple.

After listening, Li Qiye quietly mumbled once again while remembering his past. However, he had forgotten about it after falling into his deep sleep. It was not a matter of great importance.

-What did you say, great brother?

Nan Huai Ren inquired.

-Nothing. So their Prime Descendant right now is a woman?

-It is known that between the two of our sects, there has not existed any in-law relationships for a long time. In this era, their Prime Descendant is indeed a woman.

He paused for a second to look at Li Qiye's expression:

-I also hear that their descendant, Li Shuangyan, has an Innate Emperor Body.

-That makes things a little more interesting.

Li Qiye slightly chuckled.

-Has Nan Huai Ren informed you of the current situation?

The First Elder asked.

-Honorable Elder, I understand completely.

Li Qiye lightly nodded his head.

-Good! As long as you can pass the tribulation, we will handsomely reward you.

The First Elder said with a cold voice, as if to mock Li Qiye's calm demeanor.

Li Qiye elegantly smiled and politely said:

-I am very willing to go to the trial, but I have three conditions.

-Impudent!

One of the Elders yelled out.

-You dare to negotiate in front of the Elders?

[\(TL: These are titles granted to honor someone achieving a particular cultivation level, just](#)

[like Immortal Emperor or Virtuous Paragon\)](#)

Chapter 5 : The Fiancé (1)

Any other disciple would be afraid of facing the Elders' wrath, but Li Qiye lightly scoffed:

-Elders, don't be angry. If I were to actually pass the trials, it would be a great contribution to the sect. The hardworking should be rewarded, no? It should be a given that I would have certain conditions given the dangerous task.

-Then wait until you have passed the trial, then we can discuss them!

This Elder was extremely unhappy before Li Qiye's attitude, so he roared his response.

-So be it!

First Elder nods his head, then continued:

-Don't you worry. As long as you pass the trial, you are free to select any cultivation methods with the exception of Heavenly Destiny secret techniques and Immortal Emperor Merit Laws. I don't think the other Elders would have any objections.

The Six Elders glanced at each other and contemplated the notion. If he indeed passes the trial, then the Elder's suggestion is completely reasonable.

-The other conditions can wait until after the trial.

Li Qiye finally smiled.

-However, there is one condition that I must state beforehand, so that there will be ample time for preparation. Once I reach the Yun body level, I require a Medicinal Paste of the Emperor Grade.

After hearing Li Qiye's request, the faces of all Six Elders became sour; they collectively yelled out at the same time:

-How greedy can you be?

Li Qiye pretends to not hear their loud yell and continued to slowly enunciate each word:

-Elders, the marriage between our two sects is a great matter as well as an enormous contribution. Emperor Grade Medicinal Paste might be precious, but I feel like it is a fair trade.

-Hmmp, you think Medicinal Paste of the Emperor Grade is that easily obtainable, that it just grows on the street? Right now, we cannot accommodate you because we lack certain integral efficacious medicines for the recipe.

The First Elder dejectedly announced.

Looking at the Elder's body language, Li Qiye secretly sighed in disappointment. He was thinking too highly of Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. In the past, its treasure trove was unlimited. It even contained Immortal Grade Paste; Emperor Paste was trivial in comparison.

-Fine, I will take one step back; I want the Highest Grade of King Paste!

-That I can accept.

The First Elder concedes.

-I also heard that we have a technique named "Invisible Dual Blade" that can be learned in a hurry. I want this technique as well as a pair of blades to accompany with it. Would that be acceptable?

The Elders rolled their eyes from surprise. They originally thought that this greedy boy would ask for Emperor Grade techniques, but he wants such a normal technique.

-Invisible Dual Blade eh?

The First Elder stroked his beard.

Another Elder quickly responded:

-First Elder, that is only a martial technique; it is insufficient. In

the world of cultivation, even the simplest Merit Law would outperform any martial arts.

-That is not a problem! Nan Huai Ren, bring “Invisible Dual Blade” to his peak, and give him the best pair of dual blades.

The First Elder was happy with this simple request. His opinion of Li Qiye decreased from Li Qiye’s unwise decision. One would think that the sect would want to give all the assistance they could afford to help Li Qiye, but deep down inside, all the Elders knew that no matter what techniques and weapons they give to him, completing the trial would still be impossible. They only aimed to minimize the loss of the sect.

-Go back and prepare, you shall depart in three days. After your return, you can complete the ancestral ceremony to ascend to your position.

Of course, if he could come back alive that is. The Elders had great doubts.

The technique and blades were brought to Li Qiye’s peak immediately, afterward. He was satisfied with the dual Crescent Moon Blades. The blades’ curves occasionally shone with sharpness. However, these were merely Mortal grade and not fit for cultivators. No matter how sharp the edges are, it cannot compare to magical armaments.

Li Qiye slowly read the “Invisible Dual Blade” technique. Every word and every phrase spoken by him would be replicated in his

mind. There was nothing but darkness within the truth of the techniques shining brightly in the empty space that was the mind. It is a special state of enlightenment that allowed one to understand the virtues of this world.

He had read many Immortal Emperor Merit Laws as well as Heaven rank methods during his years as the Dark Crow. However, not wanting to hand over his knowledge to the Heaven Demon Grotto, he purposely erased his memories before every deep slumber that would span for thousands of years. However, the Medicine God and Immortal Emperor Sanguine came up with a mysterious method that allowed Li Qiye to quickly understand the truths of these sovereign techniques the moment he sees them again.

Right now, everything that was pertinent to mastering the “Invisible Dual Blade” had been recalled. Taking a deep breath and comparing the manual in his head against the written version, he found that the technique was lacking a certain something; this worried him greatly.

Focusing his mind once again, Li Qiye finally understood the hidden truths behind the technique; he softly smiled.

Even though his Physique, Life Wheel, and Fate Palace were all Mortal grades, his knowledge and willpower were above what all geniuses were capable of.

He gently patted the manual; his attempt at mastering the technique had awakened his memory of the past; a secret that no disciple knows in the current era. That year, the young Min Ren

used to practice the “Invisible Dual Blade” technique. Later, when he became an Immortal Emperor that ruled over the Nine Worlds, he reminisced about this technique. He once again cultivated with it, slowly perfecting the normal martial technique.

Of course, this normal technique was not comparable to the Emperor Merit Laws that he had created as well, let alone the Heaven’s Will Merit Laws. Min Ren himself did not want his descendants to practice this technique, either. Thus, the technique had lied dormant in the library of the sect for millenniums. No one has understood the real illustrious truths behind the technique, moulded by an Immortal Emperor post ascension.

When Li Qiye saw Min Ren perfecting the technique; he teased him greatly. Even if this martial technique was cultivated to its apex and capable of slaying Noble Royals, no one would want to use it. Normal cultivators can only see the external qualities, thus this martial technique resided in the darkness.

Li Qiye was right in his prediction. It was ironic that he was now training with the technique. Emptying his mind of unnecessary thoughts, he picked up the dual blades and started to practice. He was extremely strict with himself; he slowly swung each stroke within the manual; each swing required perfection before moving on.

Chapter 6 : The Fiancé (2)

Although he understood the truths behind the technique, his body could not keep up with his orders. He demanded perfection, yet it was hard to reach.

As the night got longer, his body became more and more stagnant; the swings slowed down. However, speed wasn't the only integral part behind the strength of a move. He found improvements in what he thought was impossible due to his knowledge from the past.

He understood that if he wanted to completely decimate the Heaven Demon Grotto, he must increase his efforts by ten fold, no, hundreds of folds in order to achieve his goal. No one understood the Heaven Demon Grotto better than him in the current era.

Three days later, Li Qiye still had not left his villa; he imprisoned himself in the inner sanctum to perfect his blades. There were too many uncertainties in life and he must be in top shape in order to combat any disasters.

The journey to the Nine Saint Demon Gate has begun. Only Nan Huai Ren and a Sect Protector, with the last name of Mo, were coming along.

The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect has a total of six Elders,

twelve Protectors, and thirty six Sectional Leaders. Today, to visit a Grand Sect such as the Nine Saint Demon Gate with only three people, the highest being a mere Protector; there were no words to describe it.

-Only us three?

Before the departure, Li Qiye looked at the shameful members and asked.

Protector Mo was very frugal with his words; he was also the master of Nan Huai Ren. After he heard the question, he only glanced at Li Qiye without answering him.

Opposite of his master, Nan Huai Ren was a playful fellow; he coughed once in shame and opened his mouth.

-Big brother, all of the Elders are in secluded cultivation; they could not make the trip.

Li Qiye perked his lips and coldly declared:

-Secluded cultivation? They are only afraid of losing face. In the end, they believe I have no chance of passing the trial. My not passing is a small matter to them, but them being there and losing face would be the big deal, right?

Nan Huai Ren couldn't say anything back and shamefully smiled. How could a mortal expect to pass the trial of an Emperor Level

sect. The Elders thought the same; that was why they refused to go since it would only have one result.

-Don't worry, honorable brother.

Nan Huai Ren kept up his positive attitude.

-The Nine Saint Demon Gate has kept its distance from us in recent times; that is why the Elders didn't want to go and create unnecessary conflict.

-Hmmp, it is only the Nine Saint Demon Gate; [can't reach the apex](#). In that era, even if Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon was still alive, they would still have to bow down to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

Protector Mo could only ignore Li Qiye's arrogance, not bothering to throw out a response.

Nan Huai Ren was afraid that Li Qiye will say even more outrageous things, so he interrupted.

-Older brother, this is my master, a Protector of the sect.

-Please take care of me on this trip.

Li Qiye bowed his head with just the right amount of courtesy and respect. Not too forced, yet not too weak.

Protector Mo glanced at him once again and said:

-Let us go, now.

Protector Mo was one of the older Protectors; his cultivation level was above the average. However, he does not know how to interact socially with others. Thus, his position in the sect was quite low relative to the other Protectors. Otherwise, he would not be a part of this great expedition.

The upper echelons of the sect knew that this trip would become a comedic play and Li Qiye was the main character. If the audience was not happy, death might be inevitable, and that is another reason why everyone hid away from the trip.

Protector Mo also thought that there would be no positive results coming out of this trip, and that was why his mood has been even more sour than normal.

The long trip was filled with silence until they reached the Grand Temple of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. The Grand Temple was huge, and it could contain ten thousand people. Looking through all of the Grand Middle Territory, it would be difficult to find a comparable temple.

The jade colored temple was extremely ancient; it was built by heavenly stones and crystals. Above were calligraphy carved by Immortal Emperor Min Ren. The words exuded a courageous aura, deep beyond fathom; each word and each phrase felt as if it could

erase existence itself. From this Grand Temple, one could appreciate the old power of the dying sect.

This temple was the starting point for all of the conquests made by the Great Emperor. Min Ren conducted ceremonies here before conducting his expeditions that would span the whole Nine Worlds. Only an Immortal Emperor Sect could possess this temple.

-Bang...

As the entrance was opened, a gateway could be seen standing inside. Colored and tempered by God crystals, the hulk was covered by empty holes and Immortal Emperor carvings. The empty holes were there to be filled with Meteoric Crystals.

Meteoric Crystals are formed by the natural spiritual power of Heaven and Earth; the very essence of what makes cultivation possible. Its main purpose was to operate gateways in order to traverse far distances. The warping distance was predicated by the quantity and quality of the Meteoric Crystals.

Unfortunately, the current gateway only has a few Meteoric Crystals inside. Once again, Li Qiye was saddened by how far the sect had fallen. In the past, this gateway, with an abundance of crystals, had brought many armies to far away places in the Nine Worlds.

They entered the gateway, and in the blink of an eye, they warped to a different location.

The Grand Middle Territory was huge, spanning billions of miles. There were countless sects spanning across fifteen countries. However, there were gigantic monsters like Kingdoms and Ancient Kingdoms that spanned billions of miles by themselves.

If one wanted to cross a country by flying, unless he is an Enlightened Being or a Saint Emperor, it would take many years. Any Named Hero or Royal Noble would be wise enough to not attempt this feat. Plus, the Grand Middle Territory was only one part of the Mortal Emperor World.

The Mortal Emperor World was also known as the Emperor Boundary or Emperor Country, and consisted of five different parts. In the north lies the Limitless Land; the south has the Chained Earth; the east forms the Hundred Cities; the west contains the Desolate Wasteland; and the middle was the Grand Territory.

-Bang...

Li Qiye and his companions arrived at the gateway of the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

As they stepped out, they felt that the natural spirit essence was denser than any place before. As far as the eyes could see, this was truly a Heavenly Sect.

The location of the Nine Saint Monster Sect spanned for millions of miles; it was filled with mountains and rivers, with majestic

waterfalls and Heavenly Saint trees that could pierce the heavens, and with marble palaces floating and hiding in the clouds as far as the eyes could see. At the deepest part, you could see penetrating auras that shone radiantly across the land. One would believe that the origin of those aura lies a shocking Heavenly Treasure.

This was the picture of a powerful sect. With this atmosphere and location, no wonder it could rule over a country. In comparison, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was akin to a destitute old man at the end of his life.

-I see that it is older brother Mo, long time no see.

When the three of them left the gateway, there was an older man leading his disciples for the welcoming party.

The man was a regional leader of their sect. His last name was Fu; he was the owner of a cold and stoic face. His eyes contained a powerful gaze, and his body radiated a shining aura; his natural disposition was one that could cause fear in weaker souls.

Even though he was only a regional leader, he possessed the strength of a Named Hero, evident by the aura exuded from his body. In the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, only an Elder would be eligible for the Named Hero qualification.

-Is this your Prime Disciple?

-That is correct, Li Qiye is the Prime Disciple of my sect.

Protector Mo smiles bitterly. The body and talent of Li Qiye was nothing to be proud of.

-The trial, it is but a friendly competition. Brother Mo does not have to worry about it.

Leader Fu showed a gentle smile.

-[Only a trial, can't reach the peak.](#)

Li Qiye smiled back at Leader Fu and elegantly expressed his feelings.

Leader Fu ignored Li Qiye's sly remark and conversed with Protector Mo instead.

-Brother Mo, please follow me.

In his mind, a Named Hero arguing with a junior like Li Qiye would be unbecoming for a man of his status.

Protector Mo, on the other hand, glared angrily at Li Qiye.

(TL: [This is a saying Li Qiye and other people in this novel love to say, I think the meaning is literal enough to keep](#))

(TL: He uses it again here to imply that a trial is nothing to him)

Chapter 7 : Nine Saint Demon Gate (1)

Leader Fu led the three into a medium-sized meeting chamber. Such a room was only used for entertaining guests without great importance. For an event as influential as the marriage proposal between the two sects, the Nine Saint Demon Gate was letting a leader class to do the negotiation. Not only that, they used the courtesy procedure befitting to greet normal guests which showed that they did not place heavy emphasis on the event.

After settling the guests into their resting area, Leader Fu used flowery language without sincerity and quickly left. Protector Mo was mentally ready for the lack of hospitality so he was not angry, merely solemn.

Leader Fu headed straight into the inner sanctuary of his sect. Approaching an ancient temple, he met an Elder. The Elder was floating in the air; a heavenly halo surrounded his head while rotating non-stop; each strand of the world's truths in physical form was visible to the eyes and covered his body; nothing was comparable to his pressure. A god was seemingly amongst us.

-How is the Prime Disciple of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect?

The thunderous voice of this Elder struck the surrounding, but this voice that instilled fear into the heart could only be heard within the temple.

Leader Fu, when outside, was extremely arrogant with his title of

Named Noble. However, right now, he could only quiver in fear. He got down on his knees and spoke:

-Dear Elder, it is but an ant; merely a mortal, an ignorant young brat that is not worthy of a discussion.

-I see, take your leave.

The thunderous voice rung again.

Leader Fu politely bowed one more time, and carefully left the temple. His body was sweaty after leaving. He was only a Leader; he did not have the qualification nor status to meet an Elder. Even a Royal Noble would need to be summoned before they can have the honor.

-Picking a mortal with a mortal body, mortal fate wheel, and mortal Fate Palace to be the Prime Disciple; there is no saving the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

After Leader Fu left, the Elder started to speak with someone else in the empty temple.

-It is truly a shame for the emperor techniques of Immortal Emperor Min Ren; there is a good chance that they still reside in that sect.

A mysterious and noble voice rang through the air.

The Elder continued.

-Your Majesty, as long as the techniques remain there, it is only a matter of time until we can obtain them. That mortal is not worthy of our Prime Disciple.

The mysterious voice remained silent; same with the Elder. If there were spectators, they would be shocked at the appearance of the Demon Emperor. One has to know that the Demon Emperor was an extremely dangerous character.

Legend has it that his origin and true form were extremely formidable. The sect led by him became increasingly radiant; nothing could shake his tyrannical rule. Within the Old Ox Country, no one dared to oppose his heavenly grasp.

Protector Mo was still sitting there silently. Nan Huai Ren has wittingly escaped the torturous room with the uncomfortable atmosphere.

Li Qiye had left for his own room. He started to practice the "Invisible Dual Blade" technique instantly, not wasting a second. He wanted the techniques ingrained into his body and mind.

Over the years, Li Qiye had learned that it is one thing to understand the illustrious truths behind a technique, but reaching

the apex when actually utilizing them is another. Even a peerless genius' true knowledge of Immortal Emperor Merit Laws cannot perform them without torturous practice.

-Whoosh, whoosh, wooooshh...

The two blades left Li Qiye's hands and gracefully traversed the air like a pair of butterfly's wings. They intersected each other multiple times and ultimately returned to Li Qiye's hands. He had practiced this particular move so many times, but it still contained flaws.

-What impeccable blade plays; senior disciple is so diligent. I feel ashamed comparing myself to your great efforts.

At this second, Nan Huai Ren came into the room; there was another teen next to his side.

Nan Huai Ren can't help but sigh in regret. He truly respected Li Qiye's earnest effort. It is truly unfortunate that his innate talents are so underwhelming.

-To reach the apex, one must never stop self-improvement.

Li Qiye sheathed his blades. Although sweaty and tired, his posture and expression remain at ease.

Nan Huai Ren respectfully smiled.

-I will remember these words and will strive to improve myself as well.

Then he started to introduce the young man standing next to him.

-This is big brother Zhang, a good friend of mine.

Nan Huai Ren had good talents, but could not be considered a genius. However, he is different from his master. His social capability made his network wide and he has friends everywhere.

This disciple Zhang was very similar, but in his eyes, a mortal like Li Qiye was not worthy of respect. He nods his head toward Li Qiye because of his relationship with Nan Huai Ren. To him, whatever martial techniques practiced by Li Qiye were meaningless.

-This is the first time senior disciple visits the Nine Saint Demon Gate, how about we walk around so that you can be accustomed to the scenery?

Li Qiye suddenly remembered an event, so he smiled and responds.

-Sure.

Nan Huai Ren turned around to the disciple named Zhang.

-Brother Zhang, this time we have to impose upon you.

-Brother Nan, you are too reserved!

Disciple Zhang had no choice but to nod his head. Unwilling as he may be, he did not want to strain their friendship. He had no desire of taking the scenic route with Li Qiye.

In reality, the Nine Saint Demon Gate was the host; it should be taking Li Qiye around in order to positively promote their relationship. However, since they do not consider Li Qiye to be worthy, all courtesy and rules were set aside.

Fellow Zhang led them around the premise while only making conversation with Nan Huai Ren. He treated Li Qiye like an invisible man. Their presence caused a lot of whispers amongst the disciples.

-Isn't that the Prime Disciple of that old sect?

In the distance, a disciple frowned from seeing that Li Qiye was only a mortal.

Another disciple in the sect, with scorn in his expression, laughed.

-Heh, Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect is only a second rate establishment, even a mortal can be the Prime Disciple. This position has become worthless.

-A mortal wanting to marry Senior Li? [Rotten chopsticks wanting a gold bowl](#); why not look into the mirror to see how lowly you are.

Li Shuangyan is the Prime Descendant of the Nine Saint Demon Gate. Not only was she gifted in her talents, she was also extremely beautiful. Countless young talents in the sect have her as their secret desire; the numerous geniuses from other places that seek to court her could form a line from one edge of the nation to the other. One thing they all have common was wanting to spit onto Li Qiye's face for being so shameless.

Fellow Zhang was even more embarrassed; he could see the hostile eyes from his fellow disciples. He started to walk faster to maintain a distance from Li Qiye, eventually leaving him behind. However, Li Qiye seemed to pay no mind to it. He continued with his own pace in a calm and carefree manner as he absorbed the heavenly scenery of the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

-Senior disciple, you have to be careful. Many people are courting your fiancé and they will not hesitate to cause trouble for you.

Nan Huai Ren earnestly reminded Li Qiye.

-It is only a girl, there is no need for such commotion.

Li Qiye calmly answered. He has seen many [country-destroying beauties](#). Thus, he does not truly keep his potential fiancé in mind; it is only a minor matter in his head.

Unknowingly, they reached the training ground of the sect. This was a place where all of the disciples could enter. Once one was inside, they truly felt tiny compared to the gigantic battle stage; like an ant in the middle of a boundless ground.

[\(TL: The former sentence is a Chinese proverb, similar to how a frog wants to eat the swan\)](#)

[\(TL: Country-destroying is a phrase in Chinese to describe beautiful women that are so alluring that countries fall trying to win their favors, it might sound out of place but I think it keeps some of the original flavor of the author\)](#)

Chapter 8 : Nine Saint Demon Gate (2)

The battle stage consisted of huge meteoric stones. Each stone was encrypted with the words of many Virtuous Paragons; mysterious and powerful energy was exerted from them continuously. It was this energy that protected the battle stage, rendering it impervious to any damage by the contestants.

-A battle stage of Virtuous Paragon ranking!

Even though this was not his first time witnessing it, the battle stage still shook Nan Huai Ren's feelings with awe.

Fellow Zhang was even more proud and started to brag.

-This battle stage was created by our Great Elder; it can even stand against destructive power from multiple Virtuous Paragons.

-In the past, our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect also had a battle stage...

Nan Huai Ren couldn't help but mumble in a low volume.

The truth was, the Cleaning Incense Ancient Sect also had a battle stage, but it was not of Virtuous Paragon ranking. Some say that it was nearly Immortal Emperor ranking; additionally, it could withstand a fight between Heavenly Emperors as well as Immortal Emperors. It was found by Emperor Min Ren in the

depths of unknown space.

It was unfortunate that no one knew why this battle stage was sealed completely. From then on, no one was able to enter the arena.

-Great Four Stone Golems!

Li Qiye was there, but he missed the conversation completely. His eyes were focused on the four gigantic statues located at the four ends of the arena.

Each of them towered over one hundred yards. All of them have different expressions; yet they were all very realistic. Carved from the hands of a renowned expert with a blade technique that was very natural and perfect.

This is the thing he wanted to see the most. After the death of Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon, he had never visited this sect. It was surprising to see the four statues after all these years.

When Nan Huai Ren and fellow Zhang were chatting, no one noticed Li Qiye. A moment later, fellow Zhang finally saw Li Qiye's current action; he raised his eyebrows and asked:

-What is this idiot doing?

Nan Huai Ren saw that Li Qiye was trying to climb on top of the eastern statue; however, because of his weak cultivation level, he

couldn't make it to the top.

Right now there were many students surrounding the battle stage; they watched him struggle like a village boy that visited the capital for the first time. Laughter erupt and jeers filled the arena.

Nan Huai Ren was so embarrassed that he wanted to dig a hole and hide in it forever. He could not see what was special about these four statues that was driving Li Qiye's action.

Li Qiye signaled for Nan Huai Ren to come over. He cannot say no to the Prime Disciple, especially when the person is being singled out by an entire sect. He dejectedly walked over to Li Qiye under the scrutinizing gazes of all the disciples.

-This statue is too high, take me up there.

Li Qiye calmly commanded.

-Ah!

Nan Huai Ren shouted then became silent. He was silently questioning whether Li Qiye had become insane. Climbing up the statue, in front of all the Nine Saint Demon Gate disciples, was a great slap to their faces.

-Are you going to take me up or do you want to continue watching my monkey show?

Li Qiye nonchalantly commented, it was as if all of this had nothing to do with him.

Without any other options, Nan Huai Ren grabbed Li Qiye and jumped, in one swoop, to the top of the statue.

Li Qiye sat on the shoulder of the statue; he stared into the far distance leisurely and absorbed the heavens in front of his eyes.

Nan Huai Ren wasn't quite as thick as Li Qiye. He immediately jumped down then waited at the bottom of the statue. He stood there, waiting, in case something did happen; he simply couldn't just abandon his fellow disciple.

Fellow Zhang, however, did not want to stand there for a second longer; he immediately left without a departing salutation.

-Does he think that he is a big shot; sitting on top of the statue?

-This country bumpkin is way too rude!

Ignoring the comments spewed by the disciples of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, Li Qiye remained sitting on the statue's shoulder; he whispered to it as if he was having a conversation with it.

The crazy, nonsensical actions of Li Qiye caused the spectators to question his, and their own, sanity. This was truly an idiot without

fear. No one attempted to stop him, however; they felt that it was below them to interfere with a mad man's muse.

Eventually, Li Qiye seemed to have become bored of sitting. He once again waved his hands to signal Nan Huai Ren. Like a boulder that had been lifted off his shoulder, Nan Huai Ren was so relieved that this madness had come to an end and he brought Li Qiye down to the floor.

-Dear senior, the sun has set. Shall we go back and rest?

Nan Huai Ren was praying with all of his heart that this Prime Disciple could spare him from further embarrassment. Who knew what other things he would do if the trip was to be continued.

Seeing the poor facial expression of Nan Huai Ren that was like a dead puppy, Li Qiye chuckled and nodded his head in agreement.

-Your mother!

A disciple couldn't help but yell out after seeing Li Qiye's devilish grin.

-Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect is a third rate sect. A toad wants to eat the meat of a swan? [I spit!](#) A black, dumb turtle has the nerves to court our senior.

Seeing that someone was challenging him directly, Li Qiye slowly turned around and said:

-Court your senior? Don't think too highly of yourselves. Even if either a Heavenly Angel or Godly Fairies wanted to marry me, they would have to pray for my acceptance. Your senior? It is a long line until it is her turn.

-Your mother, you are tiring of living...

All of the male disciples were having an uproar after hearing those shameless words.

-Calm down, calm down, everyone should value peace and prosperity!

The current situation chilled Nan Huai Ren down to his spine; he immediately took Li Qiye and left. He could not leave this crazy guy outside for a second longer.

After reaching their guest house safely, Nan Huai Ren cried:

-Honorable senior, please! This isn't a place where we can say and do whatever we wish. Take a step back and appreciate the high sky and deep sea. Please keep yourself under control.

-Hold back?

Li Qiye nonchalantly proclaimed:

-A general shall stop an incoming army; [A dam will deter the incoming current!](#)

Nan Huai Ren froze; taking care of someone like Li Qiye was akin to finding trouble for oneself. He was truly regretting taking this mission to go to the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

After the events at the battle stage, many of the Nine Heaven Demon Gate disciples were outraged. Du Yuan Guang was one of those who truly wanted to kill Li Qiye. He was an outer disciple, but his innate talents were above average; thus, many referred to him as the “Little Genius”. He had only joined the sect for five years, but he already reached the pinnacle stage of Provisional Palace. As long as he could successfully pass this year’s examination, he could become an inner disciple.

Du Yuan Guang had a strong crush for Li Shuangyan. During his entrance examination to the sect, she was one of the main organizers. When he saw her for the first time, he was smitten. He also thought that she recognized his skills and talents since she accepted him.

He had great confidence in his ability and wished for her to become his Dao partner. Li Qiye being there, naturally, became a thorn in his eyes.

-This mortal does not know his own limits. If I don’t teach him a

little lesson, he would continue to think he is above the Heaven and Earth.

Du Yuan Guang's eyes revealed his killing intent as he screamed out loud.

[\(TL: I spit is an expression where the doer simulates the sound of spitting without actually spitting. It is to show contempt\)](#)

[\(TL: This is another Chinese proverb. It tells someone to not worry, almost like que sera sera. It sounds really good in Chinese since it only consists of 8 words; 4 for each prose with the same tonal structure. They also rhyme as well as having the same parallel meanings for each of the words' counterparts\)](#)

Chapter 9 : Brutal (1)

The next day, Li Qiye woke up and immediately asked if Nan Huai Ren wanted to go on another sight-seeing trip. He wanted to see if there was anything left from his Era that were still around.

Nan Huai Ren did not want to go at all. It didn't matter whether Li Qiye was crazy or stupid. His intuition told him that Li Qiye would definitely cause trouble; going with him was simply masochistic.

Unfortunately, Li Qiye already turned around and started to go on his trip. Nan Huai Ren had no choice but to follow him. The most important task during this trip was the marriage trial. If something actually happened to Li Qiye, he wouldn't be able to escape unscathed.

However, not long after their departure, they were surrounded by Du Yuan Guang and his outer disciple friends. These disciples didn't see eye-to-eye with Li Qiye. With Du Yuan Guang leading the mantle, it was a wondrous opportunity to teach this arrogant bastard a lesson.

-Ah, it is brother Du, I have heard of your great reputation for a long time now.

Nan Huai Ren knew that trouble was coming, but he still kept his calm and friendliness.

Du Yuan Guang only gave Nan Huai Ren a short glance and said:

-Nan Huai Ren, you don't have any business here. Move to the side, or we'll deal with you as well.

Nan Huai Ren's expression darkened, but he knew that the strong eats the weak. Thus, he bowed slightly and asked.

-Brother Du, what is the meaning of this?

Du Yuan Guang completely ignored Nan Huai Ren this time around. He sent an icy cold glare toward Li Qiye that was filled with killing intent.

Li Qiye, elegant and poised as always, stepped up toward Du Yuan Guang and said:

-A smart dog does not block the road; if you don't want to be a dog. then get out of the way.

After he heard this, Nan Huai Ren knew that everything was ruined. Especially when he saw the thirst for blood in Du Yuan Guang's eyes, he knew this would not end without incident.

An angry disciple yelled out.

-Do you not want to live? The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect no longer has the qualifications to be considered an Immortal

Emperor lineage. You dare to jump around like a clown in front of us? A mere ant dares to be disrespectful?

Li Qiye was ready to retort but Nan Huai Ren quickly stopped him and whispered:

-Forget about it, senior brother. Don't worry about them. Du Yuan Guang is an outer disciple that is getting a lot of attention. He is also the last disciple of protector Hua. If he passes the yearly examination, he would immediately become an inner disciple.

Nan Huai Ren's intention was to remind Li Qiye that they could not afford to antagonize someone like Du Yuan Guang. He has the support of a Protector from the Nine Saint Demon Gate. A Protector position in this sect has a higher standing than an Elder position in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

Du Yuan Guang did not make a move, he only coldly said:

-We, the Nine Saint Demon Gate, rule over the Old Ox country. Even if you are from a small sect, you are still a guest; we would still like to treat you with the required courtesy befitting of our status. However, recently, one of my brothers has lost a treasure; this is not a common occurrence in our honorable sect.

Nan Huai Ren's complexion became gray. He panicked.

-Brother Du, what is the meaning of your words?

Du Yuan Guang glanced over to Li Qiye and said:

-In the last two days, there were no other guests beside the people from your sect.

Du Yuan Guang clearly implied that the thief was from the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. This matter did not only affect one person because it also greatly influences the reputation of an entire sect. Even someone as wily as Nan Huai Ren couldn't help but show an ugly expression.

-Brother Du, please watch what you say!

Nan Huai Ren wanted to treat this matter diplomatically, but it now concerned the reputation of his own sect. He would not stand for such an insult.

-Watch what I say? Your sect is desolate and poor like a beggar; who could guarantee that a thief has not infiltrated your sect? Your Prime Disciple is just a piece of trash; to say that your sect recruited thieves would not be unreasonable.

Nan Huai Ren's face became red with anger. As a person who truly cared for his sect, he could not stand for this mockery.

-Brother Du, we want to meet with Leader Fu of your sect. No matter what happens, we demand an answer from your sect regarding this baseless accusation.

Du Yuan Guang exploded in laughter for ten seconds then confidently replied.

-Meet Leader Fu? Nan Huai Ren, it is not like I don't want to reserve some dignity for you, but you and this trash, alone, do not have the qualification to invoke a meeting with Leader Fu. Our leaders are capable enough to obtain the title of Named Hero. It is unknown whether your Elders are capable of the same task. Maybe your Elders are qualified to meet with Leader Fu, but you and that trash? Don't even think about it.

After he finished his speech, Du Yuan Guang stared coldly at Li Qiye. The other disciples clapped in agreement and started to once again taunt Li Qiye with nasty words.

Nan Huai Ren was shaking with rage, but Li Qiye still maintained his composure and carefully retorted.

-Whether this whole incident is your planning, the leader, or even your Protector, it does not matter to me. Little Du, simply put, it is because you are smitten with your senior; I think her name is Li Shuangyan? Even though I have never seen her before, you guys are too petty. Your Prime Disciple, Li Shuangyan, and her engagement with me is merely a one-sided affair. Because I respect your sect's current status, I would consider having her as a maid.

-And as for you?

Li Qiye continued.

-You are so naive. If your goddess has such talents, she wouldn't have you in her eyes. I already don't care for her, why would you try to compete with me for her like a fool? Get out of the way; you should find a place with a nice spot of shade and take a break to cool off your hot head.

-You bastard! If you want to die so much, then I'll show you to your death!

Du Yuan Guang, enraged by those words, summoned his sword as well as his aura.

-Du Yuan Guang, if you want to fight, I will reciprocate.

Having witnessed Li Qiye's bravery, Nan Huai Ren, who was burning with rage, felt a lot better. However, he knew that Li Qiye had never cultivated before, so he immediately stood guard in front of him.

-Fine, I will take care of you first, then i'll kill the bastard!

Fiery anger exploded from his eyes. To him, Li Shuangyan, was an untouchable goddess, yet Li Qiye dared to insult her.

Li Qiye slowly pushed Nan Huai Ren back, he calmly said:

-Hey Huai Ren, if someone wants to take my life, then I'll be the one to put an end to him. You should stand back and watch.

-Good! Good! Excellent!

Du Yuan Guang was no longer angry but bursting out in laughter.

-This is the funniest thing I have ever heard. A piece of trash like you wants to kill someone who is at the Provisional Palace stage, like me? So be it, I will give you a chance to fight!

Knowing that he was a mortal, they knew he could not use any Merit Laws; the other disciples pitied Li Qiye.

-Martial techniques versus Merit Laws? You don't even know the basics, yet your arrogance is through the sky. It is such a pity.

Li Qiye could not be bothered by those comments. He exclaimed:

-That is fine, everyone can witness this battle.

He walked toward the battle stage.

-You can't!

Nan Huai Ren was filled with fear, he grabbed Li Qiye and said:

-Senior! This is impossible! Du Yuan Guang has reached the pinnacle of the Provisional Palace stage. You cannot be his match.

-It is fine. He is only Provisional Palace and not a Royal Noble! However, if a Royal Noble in the Nine Saint Demon Gate dares to mess with me; depending on my mood I would mince him into tiny pieces too.

Li Qiye smirked lightly, then pushed Nan Huai Ren away.

Nan Huai Ren's head started to hurt. His first thought was that his senior had become senile. Li Qiye had only joined the sect for a few days; he has not begun to practice even the most basic of cultivation techniques. He only had access to the "Invisible Dual Blade" martial technique.

A person who only practiced martial arts could not fight against a cultivator. Martial techniques, when compared to a Merit Law, was like heaven and earth; not to mention Du Yuan Guang was also an expert in the Provisional Palace stage.

Nan Huai Ren regained his reasoning and he immediately went to find his master, Protector Mo. He knew; if this fight happened, only death would be the result.

Chapter 10 : Brutal (2)

The news about Li Qiye and Du Yuan Guang's fight was intentionally spread by the disciples of the Nine Saint Demon Gate; word of this quickly traveled through the whole sect.

Du Yuan Guang possessed considerable influence and popularity within the sect for reaching Provision Palace stage in five years after he was admitted. Here, he is considered a genius; at the current Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, he would be a genius amongst geniuses.

Even the seniors who heard about this challenge were surprised.

-Challenging Du Yuan Guang?

-He is the inheriting disciple of Protector Hua. Even though his Golden Wolf body has only reached Houtian, it is still a formidable type. What is the current cultivation level of the Prime Disciple of Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect?

Some of the disciples who had never heard of Li Qiye were quite intrigued.

-Ha, Senior Sheng worries too much! That sect is average at best and without any experts. Their Prime Disciple is a piece of trash. Mortal Physique, mortal Life Wheel, and mortal Fate Palace. He had only joined the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect for two days. He had only practiced martial techniques; even the most

elementary Merit Laws eluded him.

A disciple mockingly answered.

After hearing this news, the seniors who didn't know Li Qiye before became even more perplexed. A martial artist challenging a cultivator? He must be tired of living!

-This is just like [the young deer that's not scared of a tiger](#), how sad!

A lot of the seniors lost their interest because they believed the fight would end after a single move.

Du Yuan Guang only needed one swing and everything would be finished.

This news also reached the ears of a few Sectional Leaders and Protectors. They shook their heads while they contemplated about the implications.

One of the Protectors spoke up in an aloof and cold manner.

-Maybe this is a blessing in disguise. Killing one trash isn't something to be proud about, however, if the idiotic Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect juniors wish to challenge us, let this be a lesson.

This comment caused some Protectors and Leaders to knit their eyebrows. It was still an Immortal Emperor sect after all. Currently, it still had Emperor Grade cultivation methods and, more importantly, the inheritance of the Immortal Emperor Min Ren. Everyone has been watching that sect like a hungry tiger, waiting for the right moment to strike.

Realistically, the Nine Saint Demon Gate only had to mobilize their Protectors in order to rob the emperor techniques, but the current Demon Emperor had never revealed his thoughts about the topic. This caused the upper echelons to remain silent as well. If only the Demon Emperor would give the order, someone would immediately travel and destroy the sect right away, with zero hesitation.

While the upper echelons were still pondering, Li Qiye was standing on top of the battle stage. There was quite a crowd gathered for this event. They just wanted to see what kind of torture methods would be employed by Du Yuan Guang.

When Du Yuan Guang stepped onto the battle stage, a disciple loudly yelled:

-Senior Du, use one sword swing to chop off his head!

Another chimed in:

-One sword strike is too merciful towards him. He dared to insult Senior Li and our sect; you have to flay him piece by piece.

A senior opened his mouth:

-Death is the only result for insulting our sect. Junior Du, do not rush. Slice off his hands and feet but do not kill him. Wait for the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect to come and apologize for him. Let the whole Grand Middle Territory, no, even the whole Mortal Emperor World know the consequences of opposing us.

On the battle stage, Li Qiye stared at Du Yuan Guang and teased:

-The Nine Saint Demon Gate disciples can only use words? You guys are indeed experts at using your mouths.

-Idiotic animal, I only need one sword strike to remove your head from your body.

Cold as ice, Du Yuan Guang lifted his chin and looked down on his opponent.

-If you want to fight then fight, so much time wasted!

Li Qiye casually responded. His left hand gripped his blade tightly. He lifted it horizontally and pointed the edge towards Du Yuan Guang and proclaimed:

-Make your move.

-Die!

Infuriated by Li Qiye's fearless attitude, Du Yuan Guang made his move. A sword strike that felt like it could destroy the surrounding space lashed out; it was as fast as lightning. The energy aura sharply leapt towards the heart of Li Qiye, which was accompanied by the endless anger of Du Yuan Guang.

Li Qiye did not take a step back; he instead moved forward. With each step he took, the blade in his left hand and moved like a heavenly serpent. It quickly deflected the sword technique to the side.

A sharp noise, indicating successful contact with the flesh, filled the arena; Du Yuan Guang's sword – although it did not hit Li Qiye's heart – has pierced his left shoulder.

-Insect...

Du Yuan Guang smirked until he saw that, as his sword was still in Li Qiye's left shoulder, his opponent's right hand started moving. In the blink of an eye, even Du Yuan Guang did not see the movement of Li Qiye's blade.

-Good...

The blade strike was too swift; it invoked mysterious truths that nothing else could compare to. No one saw the trajectory of the move. The Nine Saint Demon Gate's disciples were cheering loudly

when they saw Du Yuan Guang's sword connect.

However...

The same second, when the sword met the left shoulder, Nan Huai Ren and Protector Mo finally arrived. Protector Mo saw the sword's connection and yelled out:

-Please lower your sword and spare him!

One second later, blood dripped down from the throat of Du Yuan Guang. Then all of a sudden, it splurged out as his body slowly fell to the ground. Mercilessly, Li Qiye had thrown both of his blades using the "Invisible Dual Blade" technique.

-Phap... Phap...

Du Yuan Guang's body was crossed by the path of the two blades as they magically intersected each other; dividing his body into five pieces before it hit the ground completely. Blood filled the arena.

Du Yuan Guang's eyes flashed hints of bewilderment and regrets. He did not understand how he had fallen. How would he know that the technique of Li Qiye was honed by Immortal Emperor Min Ren himself. Although it could not compare to Emperor Level Merit Laws, a martial technique sharpened by an Immortal Emperor could not be underestimated.

The more frightening fact was that Li Qiye grasped the mysterious truths of this technique. From the ancient era until now; only the Emperor and Li Qiye have fully understood the principles behind the move. At this level, this technique could even slay a Royal Noble.

Du Yuan Guang went into the match while underestimating his opponent; he did not have any defense ready. There was no way he could dodge the peerless strike. Li Qiye traded his left shoulder in order to execute this move.

Right now, the whole battle stage was completely silent. The laughs and jeers disappeared. It seemed like time had froze.

Nan Huai Ren's jaws dropped to the floor. He hurried here in order to save Li Qiye, but he couldn't imagine that Li Qiye only needed one slash to have dismembered his opponent's body.

Li Qiye was slowly removing the magical sword from his shoulder. The noise of the sword cutting against his bone shrieked softly, but Li Qiye showed no emotion or pain. He had experienced much worse pains in the past. He threw the sword away and stepped outside of the ring. He looked around and saw the crowd. Showing a dejected and regretful expression, he said:

-It seems like my blade technique is still missing something; I had to trade a strike, and ,now, I am hurt.

Remembering what had just occurred, Nan Huai Ren's jaws were still hugging the floor. It wouldn't be surprising for it to be

dislocated after staying agape for so long. One blade to kill a cultivator and he was pretending to be sad? This fella was shameless!

As for the Nine Saint Demon Gate disciples, their souls had not yet returned to their bodies. Du Yuan Guang was a genius amongst his peers, but he was instantly mutilated by his opponent!

Protector Mo was the first to regain his composure. He immediately covered Li Qiye's wound to stop the blood flow and gravely said:

-Go, now.

He carried Li Qiye and left the arena while Nan Huai Ren followed right behind them.

After settling Li Qiye down, Protector Mo just sat there aimlessly. Right now, he doesn't have the time to think about how Li Qiye killed Du Yuan Guang. He was devastated about the consequences of killing a disciple from the Nine Saint Demon Gate. This was a huge disaster.

Nan Huai Ren, on the other hand, was treating the wound of Li Qiye with a special silver paste. Then, he applied bandages around the shoulder. His mind still wondered about what happened.

-How is it possible for a martial technique to kill a Provision Palace expert?

He had seen Li Qiye practice the move before. Although it was admirable, he didn't truly care for it since it was only a martial technique.

-That is only because you do not understand the truth.

Comfortably relaxing in his chair, Li Qiye was pleased with Nan Huai Ren's confused expression.

[\(TL: Another proverb, meaning that a person is too naive to recognize danger.\)](#)

Chapter 11 : Arrogance (1)

Although Nan Huai Ren was not a genius, he was not without skill, either. Otherwise, he would not be a hall master amongst the disciples. He had read the “Invisible Dual Blades” manual before. In his eyes, it was only a normal martial technique; but, in Li Qiye’s hands, it had a fearful offensive power.

He looked at Li Qiye carefully. As a wily person, he was capable of discerning characteristics and emotions from a person at a glance. However, the thirteen year old Li Qiye in front of him; he could not see through. Thirteen years of age was the age when a person first joined a sect; it was still a young age that was emotionally provokable. However, Li Qiye possessed a calm aura that was as deep as the ocean; it was hard to describe it with words.

His mortal Physique, mortal Life Wheel, and mortal Fate Palace made the Elders and Nan Huai Ren doubt him. In reality, Nan Huai Ren thought Li Qiye had a mental illness during their first contact; A mental illness that made one act arrogant and carefree under all conditions. However, after these last few days, he was starting to understand that arrogance and calmness were naturally a part of who Li Qiye was.

-Big disaster!!!

Protector Mo panicked since he was without a solution and quickly said:

-The trial is over! We have to return to our sect!

Staying here right now was the same as being in a lion's den or a dragon's cave. The only thought in his mind right now was to flee.

-It is only a small matter, why do we have to run?

As the culprit, Li Qiye was lying down lazily on his chair. Slowly, he spoke:

-To me, there is no place safer than the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

Protector Mo glared angrily at Li Qiye; he really wanted to slap him a few times. However, he then remembered that a disaster was coming, and he lost all desire to teach this brat a physical lesson.

-What do you know!

Someone who was normally reserved and quiet like Protector Mo couldn't help but reprimand:

-Do you think you are peerless under the heavens after you got lucky in killing Du Yuan Guang? You don't know the strength of the Nine Saint Demon Gate. Not to mention the Demon Emperor, even an Elder alone is enough to deal with our Six Elders. The Nine Saint Demon Gate destroying us is akin to killing an ant.

Those words were humble but realistic. In reality, the Six Elders,

if officially, were to be given titles, would just be Named Heroes; they would be equivalent to Nine Saint Demon Gate Protectors. The Elders in the Nine Saint Demon Gate were all Royal Nobles at the very least, and the Demon Emperor was one that had created countless miracles and legends in the last thirty thousand years. His strength was deep without a ceiling.

-My dear Protector Mo, do not worry yourself.

Li Qiye aloofly said.

-If this was outside, I would be a bit troubled. However, it is the opposite now; we will see who will kill who. Named Heroes, Royal Nobles, those fools can't reach the apex!

Protector Mo was at a loss for words. This little kid just said that Named Heroes and Royal Nobles couldn't reach the apex when our Elders were only Named Heroes.

-You...

At that moment, something sounded outside. Nan Huai Ren's expression instantly became sour. He quickly went out to check, but ran back inside immediately and screamed in terror.

-Not good! There is a blockade outside the building!

A crowd entered the building, led by Leader Fu. His expression, right now, was very ugly.

-Brother Fu, this is only a little misunderstanding.

Seeing Fu's expression, Protector Mo knew that [one could not hide from the sun forever](#). He took a deep breath and went to greet him.

-Misunderstanding? Then you can explain it to our junior, Xu Hui!

Leader Fu stood to the side and a young man walked next to him.

This young man wore a golden robe. His body was surrounded by a bloody aura and, above his head, a translucent golden light was situated. He was only twenty but his aura was formidable.

When he saw the young man, Protector Mo couldn't help but shiver. The man in front of him had most likely reached the stage of Heaven's Mandate. It was quite unbelievable; it took him fifty years to reach Heaven's Mandate.

-This is Xu Hui, the first disciple of Protector Hua. Du Yuan Guang was about to be Protector Hua's disciple, but he is now dead; Xu Hui junior wants reparations.

Protector Fu coldly said.

Xu Hui stepped forward; his eyes radiated a golden light, like a sword that had been unsheathed. He possessed a tyrannical aura, an aura that felt as if it wanted to devour others.

Xu Hui was, of course, a lot stronger than Du Yuan Guang. Even if he was not the ultimate genius, he was considered to be well established within the sect and many responsibilities were given to him.

-Killing must be punished by death; a blood feud has to be paid by blood. There is nothing else to say.

Xu Hui's eyes pierced toward Li Qiye like an animal, wanting to separate him into many pieces.

Protector Mo quickly mediated.

-Junior Xu, this is a misunderstanding. My sect's disciple didn't want to kill him; it was only an accident.

Xu Hui gravely said:

-There is no room for discussion. Hand over the criminal right now; do not commit another mistake. Otherwise, you guys are seeking death. Be careful that this might bring about the end of your sect.

-No wonder...

Li Qiye slowly rose from his chair and gracefully walked forward while glaring at Xu Hui.

-It is no wonder the atmosphere of the Nine Saint Demon Gate was so grim, it is because of idiots like you.

Nan Huai Ren and Protector Mo's throats gulped in amazement. Nan Huai Ren screamed inside:

-Oh my god, my great ancestor, speaking one or two less sentences wouldn't kill you now, would it? You calling him an idiot to his face is akin to pouring oil into the fire.

-With those words alone, it is enough to kill you a thousand times over!

Xu Hui's killing intent amplified as he was filled with rage; he made a move towards Li Qiye.

Protector Mo interfered. He grabbed Xu Hui's hand to stop him from rampaging.

-Protector Mo, don't make another mistake!

Leader Fu channeled his energy; his body started to radiate golden light. He took a step forward and his aura alone made it hard for Protector Mo to breathe.

Protector Mo was surprised by the difference in strength between him and Fu. Fu was a Named Hero; unless an Elder was here to combat him, there was no one here who could stop him.

-Leader Fu, is this how you treat your guests at the Nine Saint Demon Gate?

Leader Fu showed no emotions and proclaimed:

-If you hand over the criminal, you will still be an esteemed guest at our sect. However, if you think your sect has the strength to be our enemy and continue to harbor the criminal, then not only will your life be forfeited but your entire sect will meet its demise!

-Sect's demise?

Li Qiye, who was protected by Protector Mo, lightly chuckled and said:

-The Nine Saint Demon Gate has become too arrogant. If there was a danger of a sect's demise, it would be your sect!

[\(TL: Another Chinese proverb\)](#)

Chapter 12 : Arrogance (2)

Li Qiye no longer wanted to look at Leader Fu and Xu Hui. He stepped outside; it was as if he was taking a stroll on an empty street, and said:

-I don't care who the current master of the Nine Saint Demon Gate is. Demon Emperor or Virtuous Paragon, whatever. If you want to follow the courtesy guidelines, fine. If not, then don't do it; I will gladly reciprocate the treatment. Today, right here, I will massacre all of the Nine Saint Demon Gate; I will send all of you down to meet the old chicken head.

-Great! Great! How courageous. I will pull out your ligaments, then flay your skin! Then we will see how you are going to destroy our sect.

Xu Hui was at a loss for words. This was the most comedic event he had ever witnessed. This was the first time he had seen such an arrogant and ignorant person.

Right now, Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren wanted to dig a hole and hide themselves in it. A mortal proclaiming to destroy the Nine Saint Demon Gate? This was a sect that was extremely strong even within the whole of the Grand Middle Territory; it ruled over a whole nation. Who could actually massacre them?

Li Qiye ignored Xu Hui and kept on walking gracefully outside.

-Bastard! Die!

Xu Hui floated into the air and rotated his sword's energy towards Li Qiye.

-Stand down!

A voice, akin to thunder in the sky, rang across the whole sect; no one could resist the authority contained within it. It pierced straight to the soul.

Due to this voice, even Xu Hui and Leader Fu couldn't help but shiver; their limbs went limp.

-First Elder.

Leader Fu recognized the voice; with fear still spread through his body, he found himself unable to believe that such a small matter was causing the presence of the First Elder.

-It was a fair competition; when killed, one can only blame oneself for not being as skilled.

His voice continued to roar through the sky.

Legend has it that the First Elder was an Enlightened Being. This was a character whose strength was only below the Demon Emperor. His presence today made everyone think that there was

more to the mortal than meets the eye.

-Our marriage alliance between the Nine Saint Demon Gate and the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect is our sect's tradition.

The First Elder, ignoring the death of Du Yuan Guang, let his thunderous voice strike again.

-However, marriage is not a small matter. If the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect wants to marry our prime inheritor, he has to prove that he is worthy.

After hearing the words of the First Elder, Li Qiye returned to his tranquil manner and said:

-Finally, the Nine Saint Demon Gate has someone who will take responsibility. If you want to follow the tradition, I shall do the same. You want to test me? So be it; I accept. Picking a day is not as good as meeting the day; we shall conduct the test right now. To marry your descendant is my choice; however, if anyone dares to disrespect me, I will teach them a lesson.

Finished with his words, he walked right outside.

-It will be today.

After finishing his final command, the sky finally returned to its serene state.

Everyone started to scatter since no one dared to disrespect the First Elder's command. However, the consensus here was that Li Qiye did not know that the sky was high and the earth was wide. His arrogance seemed to know no bounds.

Protector Mo no longer cared for his image. He grabbed Li Qiye and carried him back to the room.

-You fool. If you want to die, please don't bring our sect down with you.

-Protector Mo, do you have to be so scared?

Li Qiye, unwilling to be carried back to the room, pushed Protector Mo's hands away.

-You... You... You...

Protector Mo couldn't help himself anymore and started to hyperventilate.

Nan Huai Ren, like a mistreated bride, cried:

-Senior, do you know how strong the Nine Saint Demon Gate is right now? Let alone their Elders and the Demon Emperor, all of their Protectors have the qualification to be Royal Nobles. Demon Emperor Lun Ri, using a single hand, would be enough to bring

disaster to our sect. Before, when their First Elder was disarming the conflict, you should have taken the chance to nullify the problem.

-Is that how it is? It is too late now. Plus, I prefer to talk with my fists.

Li Qiye coldly said.

Of course, Li Qiye could not reveal his secrets. If the Nine Saint Demon Gate wanted to cause trouble, he would use this opportunity to test the integrity of the sect. Although, that year, he promised the Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon to take care of his descendants; if they don't know their place, Li Qiye would be happy to cure them of their corruption. Additionally, it would justify him taking the treasures of Nine Saint Demon Gate.

Nan Huai Ren gave up, no longer wanting to speak or look at Li Qiye. He felt like he was conducting music, but [only an ox was listening](#). It was a waste of his energy.

Protector Mo finally regained control of his voice; he could only scornfully say:

-You better follow the rules and attend the trial. If you keep causing trouble, you don't have to worry about going back to the sect. No one can save you then.

The trial was taking place in an ancient pavilion. There were two Protectors acting as the mediators. One of them was Protector Hua, the master of Xu Hui. The other was Grand Protector Yu He, the strongest Protector in the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

Circular, visible auras surrounded the body of Protector Hua. It was as if his body was made out of golden metal. As for the Grand Protector, his aura was much more intimidating. His Royal Noble strength seeped out in a sanguine color instead of a golden one.

Many disciples surrounded the pavilion; cultivating could be lonely and mundane. They all loved an opportunity for something entertaining to happen. There were so many here that even a fly could not get through the sea of people.

The group that opposed this marriage the most consisted of the male disciples. They all hoped for Li Qiye to fail his trial because they believed that he does not qualify to be the husband of their goddess.

[\(TL: Basically, an ox can't hear or appreciate the music, just like a dumb person can't be appealed with reasoning\)](#)

Chapter 13 : Chaotic Heart Forest (1)

The disciples also did not like his attitude during the two days that he had been here. Of course, this was understandable since he did threaten to destroy the Nine Saint Demon Gate. The fire and hatred in their eyes could kill Li Qiye a hundred times over.

They started to converse amongst themselves.

-Let us kill him as well as the whole Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

-No, we have to cut off his arms and feet, then use his head as a candle holder.

-A candle holder? That is too humane. This ant wants to marry our princess? We have to imprison him on top of Hawk Cliff. Let the hawks peck at him for a hundred years while we keep him alive with medicinal techniques.

The conversations quickly became yellings; the crowd fueled itself on anger and hatred towards Li Qiye. Both Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren were shaking in fear; their teeth couldn't stop grinding.

Li Qiye removed himself from the surroundings, and he calmly walked around the pavilion with an arrogant flair. Anyone else would have fainted from being surrounded by so many people that want to eat them alive.

-Hmm...

At this moment, Grand Protector Yu He coughed. This seemingly quiet cough overpowered the crowd. No matter how loud the surrounding was, everyone heard it and immediately stopped talking. The aura of a Royal Noble once again dominated the air.

At this time, Protector Hua began to talk:

-If you can successfully compete the trial, then our two sects will be in-laws just like the ancient tradition. If you can't pass it or die during the test, then it is only a shame that you are not skillful enough.

Li Qiye sat down on a chair, then slowly turned towards Protector Hua. He slowly shook his head and smiled.

-One can only say, the Nine Saint Demon Gate is not as eminent as it once was. In that era, why did Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon make that promise? In that era, why did the two sects become in-laws and allies? In that era, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was worshipped by the heavens and ruled the Nine Worlds. Simply put, the Nine Saint Demon Gate only wanted the protection of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; to have a backing in order to grow.

Li Qiye did not know all of the stories in the past because his condition was not fully stable at that time. The marriage tradition between the two was not proposed by Immortal Emperor Ming Ren and Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon; it was proposed by their

descendants.

Li Qiye continued.

-Now, the era has changed, and you guys want to relinquish the promise after having benefitted from it. Your current generation is incomparable to your ancestors.

Protector Hua interjected.

-Hmmpf, it is as you said, eras change. If you want to say that the current generation is worse than the past, this statement applies to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, not us. Now, we rule the country, the Emperor Lineages who want to be our in-laws number more than just one or two, and you think someone like you is worthy of our princess?

-Just let the past go, you can't change anything by competing in a quarrel.

Grand Protector Yu He started to speak.

-We are giving you a chance to honor the promise that year. If you are afraid, you can leave now. We will not stop or bother you; the promise that year will end here.

-If I am here, then I must take the challenge. What is the trial?

Li Qiye preferred Yu He's attitude a lot more.

-Since your cultivation level is not ideal, our Highness has decided to give you a better chance. The first will not be combat oriented; however, the second will be.

Yu He continued after a short pause:

-The first is very simple. You will have to go into the Chaotic Heart Forest with one of our disciples; the one that travels farther will win. The second is even simpler; it will be a solo fight to determine the victor. There is also a third test, you only need to win two to pass the trial. The third test consists of...

-No need to continue, two tests will suffice.

Li Qiye cut off the Protector.

-How arrogant!

Protector Hua yelled at him for being so arrogant. He started to exert pressure towards Li Qiye.

-The test hasn't even started and you want to fight already?

Li Qiye narrowed his eyes, he found great joy in aggravating people he did not like.

Grand Protector Yu He coughed once again. The cough cuts off the pressure that Protector Hua was exerting. This made Protector Hua angry; he could kill Li Qiye just by lifting his finger. There has never been an insect that has dared to talk to him like this before.

-Alright, let us start this test.

Li Qiye rose from his seat.

-Both tests are fine, I want to see the abilities of your princess.

Xu Hui contemptuously laughed:

-You don't have the qualification for Senior Li to participate herself. I will be the one that you are up against.

Yu He nodded in agreement.

-I heard you have only recently joined the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. We will not cheat you. If the princess personally delivered the test, then you would have zero chance. Here, when it comes to inner talents and potential, the princess is number one. When it comes to current strength, junior Leng is the best. If one of them comes to test you, then after losing, you would claim that it was unfair. Junior Xu Hui has average talents amongst our inner disciples; using him to test the Prime Disciple of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Act should not be too demeaning to your status.

By not sending out their best disciples, the Nine Saint Demon

Gate was giving Li Qiye a sliver of hope. If the strongest disciple or Li Shuangyan participated, then even the Six Elders would have problems.

Li Qiye didn't bother to look at Xu Hui. He stared at Yu He and formally said:

-If this is the case, then at least your Nine Saint Demon Gate still has some hope after all. Although you went back on the original promise, you still manage to save a little bit of face and dignity. Fine, since you are allowing me to walk an extra step, I will spare you a yard; just so that in the future, you can't say that I have bullied the sect.

(TL: A chinese proverb again)

A character like Yu He had spent many years experiencing everything life had to offer; however, when he was staring at Li Qiye, it still puzzled him that there could be someone who was so arrogant and confusing. Does he not know of our strength? Does he has zero concept of cultivation levels? Yu He broke his stoic demeanor with a small laugh.

-Go to the Chaotic Heart Forest. The one that can go the farthest will win.

Seeing that the test had finally begun, people started going towards the Chaotic Heart Forest. In a second, the forest was already surrounded.

Chapter 14 : Chaotic Heart Forest (2)

-Hmmp, entering the Chaotic Heart Forest? What can that trash hope to do?

In the outskirts of the forest, jeering conversations began again.

Another disciple voices another thought:

-In the last examination, senior Xu made it to level five of the forest. Now that he has reached the Heaven's Mandate stage and started getting ready to start to cultivate in the Warrior Canopy stage, his cultivation strength and willpower are much stronger than before; I predict that he could get to the seventh level.

(TL: The cultivation methods are based on Chinese divination, Canopy or Cassiopeia is one of the stars)

The stages for cultivators are as follows, from low to high: Palace Foundation, Palace Expansion, Yun Physique, Provision Palace, Inner Longevity, Heaven's Mandate, Warrior Canopy, Purified Rebirth, Heaven's Primal, and True Deity.

Once one has reached the unbeatable stage and received the Heaven's Will, one will be named Immortal Emperor.

There were no immortals in the world, so a person might ask,

why was there an emperor for immortals? Why does this title exist? It is because there is a saying: “My fate is mine alone; not up to the heavens.”

The Heaven’s Will serves as a shackle; it encompasses and traps all living beings. Once a cultivator reaches the pinnacle, their goal is to control the Heaven’s Will so that they will finally be free from the prison.

This was why one will be called Immortal Emperor once they have obtained the Heaven’s Will. However, no one truly knows if true immortality was possible; this remained a mystery.

Each era only has one Heaven’s Will; each era can only have one person becoming an Immortal Emperor.

The Chaotic Heart Forest was where the Nine Saint Demon Gate judges a disciple’s innate talents, cultivation affinity, and willpower. At this place, the most important quality was one’s willpower.

It consists of fourteen levels. From an outside view, there were no drastic visual differences between it and a normal forest. However, this seemingly normal place was created by the Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon.

Intruders would be shown realistic illusions. Even the ones that

possessed mystic eyes could not see through the technique unless they were stronger than the Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon. Otherwise, the technique would be reality for all who stepped inside.

For example, one could find himself trapped in a sea of fire. The body would feel as if it was actually entrapped; the mind would clearly feel the pain. The higher the level, the stronger the illusion would be.

Of course, you could still use cultivation techniques to mitigate the pain as well as Merit Laws to prevent the fire from reaching your body. The only thing was that you could not escape the forest using any distance traversing techniques.

-Idiotic little boy, hurry up and enter!

Outside of the forest, Xu Hui smirked contemptuously towards Li Qiye. He believed that with his current abilities, it would be no problem to enter the eighth level.

Li Qiye looked at the forest, and grinned slightly. That year, the old chicken created the Chaotic Heart Forest himself; it was indeed a good location to test willpower.

-Me?

Li Qiye spoke clearly:

-Traversing the Chaotic Heart Forest holds no meaning to me. If I were to enter, then you wouldn't even have the chance to show your worth. You go first, so that later on you can't say I didn't give you a chance.

Li Qiye, again, spouted arrogant comments, making everyone else shiver in contempt. Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren wanted to lock up his mouth forever. Would you die if you said a few less sentences!? Lying all the time.

-Idiot!

Protector Hua proclaimed.

-You are just a piece of trash that doesn't know what cultivational willpower is, yet still runs his mouth without shame.

Xu Hui couldn't believe a mere mortal was looking down on him. He frowned:

-Good, good, such strong words! I have to see how many levels you can make it through.

-How many levels? How meaningless; going through fourteen isn't a big deal at all.

Li Qiye continued:

-That is why I'm letting you go first, so you wouldn't be so shocked!

-Do all people of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect lie like you without any hesitation?

Another disciple couldn't stand it anymore and yelled out.

Everyone knows that going through level seven of the Chaotic Heart Forest was considered a wondrous task for the younger generation. To complete level seven, one would have to have a tenacious willpower or a high level of cultivation.

Even the calm Grand Protector Yu He couldn't help but shake his head; why is he the Prime Disciple of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect? Going through fourteen levels? Was it that easy? Even Yu He cannot go through the fourteen levels at his current level.

-Fourteen levels?

Xu Hui exploded in laughter.

-If you can go through all fourteen levels, I will call you father!

-I wouldn't have an unfilial son like you!

Li Qiye retorted.

-Good, if you are that confident with your mouth, do you dare to make a bet?

-Bet, eh? What will we bet?

Li Qiye smiled happily and asked.

-If you can penetrate all fourteen levels, I will voluntarily concede! If you can't do it, then you have to crawl under my crotch.

(Nahct: This is an extremely shameful punishment. Can be found today; crawling under a table after losing in a card game)

This bet caused the expressions of Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren to instantly darken. This wasn't a test, it was a facade to shame Li Qiye and the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. But, they could only dejectedly shake their heads; Li Qiye brought this upon himself.

-Would you do the same if I make it through the fourteenth level? You will crawl under my crotch, right?

Li Qiye asked.

-If you can make it through the fourteenth level, he will do it and vice versa!

Protector Hua interjected. Due to the killing of Du Yuan Guang, Protector Hua wanted to kill Li Qiye with his bare hands. Since the opportunity wasn't right, the best he could do was to shame Li Qiye.

Li Qiye looked back at Protector Hu, then formally nodded his head and said:

-Fine, if this is your betting condition, I shall accept!

The disciples of the Nine Saint Demon Gate all yelled loudly:

-Senior Xu, destroy him; accept the bet!

Xu Hui coldly replied:

-I'll wait for you to crawl beneath me.

He then turned and left towards the Chaotic Heart Forest.

-This time, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect will lose all face; their Prime Disciple will have to perform such an act! Haha!

One disciple creepily laughed.

Xu Hui took his first step into the forest; the surroundings

immediately darkened. He found himself in a demonic world; it was an area spanning ten thousand miles. Demonic energy filled the air; countless skeletons and the sounds of bones colliding with each other could be heard even before the bodies began to emancipate themselves from the ground.

Xu Hui inhaled and calmed himself. He channeled his energy, and strengthened himself with his cultivation and steeled his willpower. He ignored the demons and passed through them with ease.

-First level!

Everyone outside watched carefully without blinking an eye. Without any hindrance, Xu Hui successfully passed through the first level.

-Second level, third level...

Xu Hui was definitely not average; his cultivation level and willpower were both excellent. His speed at breaking through the first three levels was, indeed, very swift.

At the fourth level, however, his speed began to slow down. Fierce Silver Skeleton Kings began to attack him. In the beginning, he chose to evade and parry them; but, after his hands were broken, making him cry out in pain, his body started to destroy them instead as a defense mechanism. He possessed a silver body that warded off invaders on its own. However, this took a lot of energy.

Once he reached level five, he was completely surrounded by the skeletons. He roared loudly and summoned his defensive artifact. His magical sword flew straight into the sky; its blade spewed out true energy. This form of energy consisted of the Dao of Truths, and it conquered the four spheres.

(TL: Four spheres is another way of saying the surrounding area. There are different types of energy as well, he is using true energy here, and it is not an adjective in this case)

His Life Wheel appeared behind his head; it was a crimson red that encompasses the sky. It performed with unparalleled laws of power that destroyed everything in the surrounding area.

Cultivation techniques that allowed for one to use his Life Wheel as an offensive tool were often stronger than certain Physique forming techniques. This Life Wheel technique specialized in destruction, left behind by the Virtuous Paragon. It was not of paragon level, but it was still quite formidable nevertheless.

(TL: Physique forming techniques are another cultivation method; it specializes in strengthening the body. This is why his arms were broken multiple times because his body is not as strong. His Life Wheel makes up for it)

Li Qiye slightly shook his head when he saw Xu Hui killing his way through level five. Chaotic Heart Forest; if your heart was chaotic, then killing only increased the uncertainty and exacerbate the illusions. Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon's goal was to train the willpower of the students, not their physical or combat strength.

-Level seven.

Xu Hui annihilated his way to the seventh level; this put the spectators in awe.

Even Protector Hua felt satisfied. Xu Hui was his disciple and his pride. Although Xu Hui's aptitude could not compare to Li Shuangyan's and his strength was lacking against first disciple Leng Shi Zi, his progress today had pleased his master.

-Bang!

Xu Hui had only made it to level seven, but his strength had been expended; he couldn't handle the pressure of the Chaotic Heart Forest any longer and was promptly removed.

-Just a little bit more...

After the forceful ejection, it took Xu Hui a moment to regain his consciousness. He couldn't help but yell out his regret. He thought that he could have at least made it to level eight, but he had still underestimated the difficulty of the Chaotic Heart Forest.

Chapter 15 : Miracle (1)

-You did well, there is no need to force what isn't meant to be.

Protector Hua gently consoled his disciple.

Yu He approvingly nodded his head.

-To be able to enter the seventh level at this age, it is very commendable within the younger generation.

Xu Hui gathered his wits, took a deep breath, and coldly stared at Li Qiye.

-Your turn!

-It is not too late to give up.

Xu Hui widen his legs, and shadily smiled.

-If you do it now, I won't make things harder for you later. If you wait until after you have failed the test, it would be harder to predict what your fate will be.

Li Qiye ignored the salty taunts and entered the Chaotic Heart Forest, step by step.

In front of him was a sea of fire. It was a world filled with lava, fire crackles surrounded the four spheres. Inside this illusion, his feet were burnt to a crisp; no one could even begin to imagine this pain, but Li Qiye just strutted on without a single groan.

Li Qiye did not mind the Chaotic Heart Forest. During the Desolace Era, he spent his time being tortured; his soul severed from his body. He had suffered from the hands of heavenly demons, trapped by the Ancient Ming. He spent what felt like an eternity without sunlight and underwent many torturous ordeals. Although the body of the dark crow was immortal; the pain did was still there.

One million years had passed, he traversed through all of the Forbidden Burials, spent time in the Heavenly Land, and fallen into the Forbidden Ghost City, the most dangerous place in this world. Compared to those places, the Chaotic Heart Forest was nothing more than a short stroll. It couldn't break his willpower.

In the blink of an eye, he had passed the first level. In the illusion, the sea of fire disappeared; Li Qiye was now in a frozen world, surrounded by the icy cold auras of a tundra.

Outside of the forest, countless disciples were waiting for Li Qiye to be kicked out. Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren were still turning their gazes away, unwilling to see Li Qiye's being humiliated. But, as the moments passed, the silence encroached the surroundings. You could hear the drop of a needle from a mile away. Surprised by the lack of jeers and cheers for his failure, the two turned their heads around and what met their eyes was an inexplicable sight.

-Level... Level... Level eight...

A disciple softly whimpered in shock.

-Level nine, ten, eleven...

Li Qiye paraded through the levels as if he was walking on an empty street; his speed remained as swift as it was during the first level.

-Level... Level... Fourteen...

In the end, Li Qiye went straight through the Chaotic Heart Forest with full confidence, and he leisurely stepped out of the last level.

Everyone was now frozen. Passing through the fourteen levels of Chaotic Heart Forest; this was an impossible feat. From the ancient past until now, none of the younger generation of the Nine Saint Demon Gate had ever accomplished it. Even Li Shuangyan, who had the highest aptitude and willpower, couldn't do the same.

-This is impossible... impossible! This cannot be!!!

Xu Hui fell deep into confusion, but this was the reality that laid before his eyes.

Protector Hua has his mouth wide open as well. He couldn't close it due to his bewilderment.

Even the sect master could not pass through the fourteenth level of the Chaotic Heart Forest. What kind of willpower was this?

-Eh, this is only the appetizer.

Li Qiye came back and casually spoke. It was as if he had just taken a walk in the comfort of his own garden.

-Okay, kneel down and start crawling!

Li Qiye glanced at Xu Hui, and declared.

-No... No, this cannot be happening!

Xu Hui loudly howled. Not only him, but everyone else also found themselves in disbelief.

-Was there something wrong with the Chaotic Heart Forest?

Protector Hua wondered.

-Surely, surely that is the case. Maybe the prohibiting spells of the forest have lost their power.

It was as if Xu Hui was trying to find a tree branch when he was drowning; he quickly added:

-It doesn't count this time, the Chaotic Heart Forest has lost its effect.

-There is no chance.

A while later, Grand Protector Yu He gathered his thoughts, shook his head, and continued:

-From the creation of the sect, the forest has never been ineffective. I will go and check.

Finishing his words, he personally entered the Chaotic Heart Forest.

Yu He was indeed formidable, befitting of his Grand Protector status. His willpower was substantial, and he easily made it through the first nine levels. Reaching level ten, his speed decreased.

A loud noise roared through the air; Yu He could not go through the entire forest. He was kicked out before reaching the eleventh level.

-The Chaotic Heart Forest did not lose its power.

Yu He stated this with complete confidence. He stared at Li Qiye with curious eyes, not understanding the event that had transpired.

Li Qiye, who is only thirteen years old, was capable of finishing the Chaotic Heart Forest? Unless there was a mysterious force at work here. Otherwise, his cultivation willpower was immutable. However, a mere thirteen year old boy could not have this level of willpower. It required centuries and millenniums to have such a mind. Although he has a mortal body and low innate talents; with his willpower alone, it was only a matter of time before he became a Virtuous Paragon.

-You, are you carrying a sacred treasure?

Protector Hua inquired.

-That has to be the case.

Xu Hui raises his voice.

-The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect is an Immortal Emperor level sect; maybe he is hiding an Immortal Emperor's sacred treasure.

This was indeed the most logical explanation. Right now, everyone was thinking that this was the case. Ultimately, even though the sect was weak now, it was not unreasonable to think that there were one or two Immortal Emperor's sacred treasures

left behind. If he used just one of them, then he could indeed pass through the Chaotic Heart Forest unharmed.

-Using a sacred treasure to cheat, this bet does not count!

Protector Hua boldly proclaimed. He was sure that Li Qiye had committed foul play.

-Protector Hua, that is unfair.

Protector Mo had no time to think about how Li Qiye passed the trial. He gravely said:

-This is a test designed by your sect. You cannot lose and then relinquish the test.

-Using a treasure to cheat; of course, it cannot be counted.

Protector Hua replied.

Taking Li Qiye's side, Protector Mo continued:

-It does not matter whether he used external tools or not. Your sect did not declare that he could not use treasures to pass the test. Our disciple has went through the forest, this round is ours.

Protector Mo did not want to waste time, he turned to Yu he and

asked:

-Protector Yu, did the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect win this round or not?

-About this matter...

Yu He was undecided. He did not believe that Li Qiye had actually passed the forest without external help. However, the Nine Saint Demon Gate also did not add the rule that one couldn't use sacred treasures.

-I walk my route straight, sits tall; my heart has no shameful secrets to the heaven.

(TL: Proverb meaning nothing to hide)

-Unlike the people of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, betting and losing, yet unable to accept the loss. If you think I am hiding a treasure, then try and find it. If you can find it, then I will give it to you.

Yu He contemplated for a moment, lifted his head, and then spoke to Li Qiye:

-If you want to prove your innocence, we have a solution. The great ancestor left behind a treasure named the Immortal Bone Mirror; it can see through all hidden objects. If you are willing to let us use it, then we can tell whether you bear a treasure or not.

-I agree to the usage of the Immortal Bone Mirror.

Protector Hua was the first to speak:

-If the mirror cannot find anything, it means that he did not carry a hidden treasure.

The disciples banded together and roared:

-Yes! If you don't want to do it, then it means that you cheated.

-I pity you guys.

Li Qiye stared at them and agreed:

-I will allow the mirror test. Bring it out.

Yu He sent people to grab the mirror. This mirror had a deep history; it was said that its heritage dated back to the Desolate Era, and that it had been honed by an Immortal Emperor. The Immortal Bone Mirror was much stronger than the mirror that was used by the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect's to test new disciples.

Chapter 16 : Miracle (2)

The Immortal Bone Mirror revealed itself; the shiny glass had immortal flow patterns, exuding an aura like a living creature. Even Yu He was in fear from its power.

The Immortal Bone Mirror flashed on the body of Li Qiye, forcing his Life Wheel and fate palace to appear. His Life Wheel slowly turned, lacking any pressure, while his fate palace had not been opened.

Yu He concluded:

-He has a mortal Physique, mortal Life Wheel, and a mortal Fate Palace that has not been opened; he has not started cultivating. Also, there are no hidden treasures on his body.

The lowest level of cultivation is the Palace Foundation level. Once one started to cultivate, even the lowest of talents could open the Fate Palace in one day if fast, ten days if slow.

Under the gaze of the Immortal Bone Mirror, Li Qiye could not hide anything; all that he is was revealed to the eyes of the spectators.

-Protetor Hua, Protector Yu, are you guys satisfied now?

Protector Mo solemnly questioned. Being subjected to the

Immortal Bone Mirror was shameful to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

-Our apologies.

Yu He was a man of character. He nodded his head and politely said:

-Li Qiye did not cheat.

After hearing the confirmation from Yu He, the crowd had no comments to make. They still couldn't believe that a mortal with the worst of characteristics was able to pass through the forest.

Xu Hui was the most devastated of them all.

-But how can this be true!

Li Qiye leered at him and spoke:

-It seems like you are not convinced, but that is quite alright. I will make it so that you will crawl without hesitation. It is only the Chaotic Heart Forest; only an idiot like you would only reach level seven. Open your eyes to see your grandpa go once again.

After his taunt, Li Qiye reentered the forest.

All eyes were focused intensely on the forest, not wanting to miss a single detail. They wanted to reach a conclusion that their minds could comprehend within the realm of logic. If Li Qiye succeeds again, then they'll have no choice but to change their view on the world. But, if he failed, then all was good with the world.

-Level fourteen!

Nan Huai Ren was keeping count as Li Qiye went through the levels. Even though this was the second time, he was just as shocked as the first.

Yu He truly understood now. Although Li Qiye's cultivation aptitude and physique could not reach the apex, he possessed an unfaltering willpower. A thirteen year old had a stronger mind than he did after a thousand years of cultivation.

-Start crawling.

Li Qiye came back and mischievously spread his legs in front of Xu Hui.

-You!

Xu Hui trampled the ground in shame, his expression turned white. If he had to crawl beneath Li Qiye before all of these spectators, then he would lose all face in the future.

-Our Nine Saint Demon Gate has our honor. If you lose a bet, you

have to bear the consequence.

Yu He nodded.

-Xu Hui, you were the one who wanted this bet in the first place. Now carry out your end of the bargain.

Xi Hui almost fainted on the spot. If Protector Yu had spoken, then even his master could not save him. He grinded his teeth and unwillingly knelt before Li Qiye. His body froze for a minute; this was the most shameful event of his life.

Eventually, he started to crawl through Li Qiye's legs. Li Qiye looked down and spoke:

-When people show me an ounce of respect, I will treat them well. But, if anyone dares to cross me, then I will repay them ten folds. A genius disciple of the Nine Saint Demon Gate is nothing in my eyes!

Finished speaking, Li Qiye turned around and walked away.

-Ugh!

Xu Hui fell down to the ground; he puked out blood from anger and became unconscious.

(TL: For unfamiliar readers, anger can lead to bloody coughs in these novels)

-Hui Er!

Protector Hua quickly grabbed Xu Hui and massaged his meridians.

(TL: Er is an affectionate expression to refer to someone)

Returning to the pavilion, Protector Hua and Yu He found their seats. Li Qiye was already sitting there arrogantly like a king; it made the other disciples feel the urge to beat him up.

Protector Hua leered at Li Qiye, and a great hatred shone in his eyes. When a disciple was shamed, as the master, they shared the same enemy. Shaming his disciple was the same as slapping him on the face.

Li Qiye playfully knocked on the table and said:

-The first test has been completed, let us get started on the second.

Before, Yu He thought that Li Qiye was ignorantly arrogant; however, after having thought about it again, maybe he had some secret tricks.

A mortal without the basics of cultivation; what was his backing

that allowed for him to challenge the Nine Saint Demon Gate? Could It be that the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect still had hidden secrets not yet revealed?

Yu He quickly dismissed his last thought. As the Grand Protector, he was fully aware of the current position of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. If it had any secrets left, then it would not be submitting to the Heavenly Bao Kingdom.

The second piece of information was that Li Qiye had only joined the sect for a few days, and he forcefully used the Cleansing Incense Ancient Order to become the Prime Disciple; even the six elders there did not welcome him.

Yu He had no idea what hidden mysteries this person could have without any support.

Returning to the matter at hand, Yu He clearly said:

-Right now, Xu Hui is not in his best condition; if you want to perform the test, then we will have to change your opponent.

-Honorable Protector, I am fine.

Xu Hui, all of a sudden, stood up straight. Despite his pale complexion, he violently leered at Li Qiye, and killing intent was seen in his eyes. He swore to himself that he would be the one to kill Li Qiye, using his blood to wash away his shame.

He used his proud standing posture to maintain and announce his confidence; he lifted his head high and proclaimed:

-Protector, I can still fight!

Yu He slightly frowned; he knew exactly what Xu Hui was thinking. He gently spoke:

-Junior Xu, your current condition is not fit for combat.

This matter was very important within the Nine Saint Demon Gate, and Li Qiye had already won the first match.

-Senior Yu, this kid has a strong will, a setback will not deter him. Please give him another chance.

Protector Hua tried to support his disciple's wish.

Xu Hui grinded his teeth, and said with extreme determination:

-Protector, if I make a single mistake, I will pay for it with my life.

Yu He contemplated for a moment. Within the younger disciples, Xu Hui had obtained Heaven's Mandate and was close to the Warrior Canopy stage. It would be difficult to find another who was as strong. Plus, his cultivation included the Life Wheel technique "Fierce Slaughter Sword."

Yu He understood the strength of this technique; it was crafted by a Virtuous Paragon in the sect. If Xu Hui used his Life Wheel without any hesitation, then none of his peers would be able to defeat him in a life or death contest, barring the strongest ones. If Xu Hui didn't fight, then the safe choices would be Li Shuangyan or Leng Shi Zhi; however, those two weren't an option.

Yu He was no longer underestimating Li Qiye, but he couldn't think of a way for a mortal to defeat a Heaven's Mandate cultivator with a Virtuous Paragon technique.

-Good, you will fight then!

After careful consideration, he agreed with the choice of Xu Hui.

Chapter 17 : Demon Emperor Lun Ri (1)

On the battle stage, surrounded by spectators, Xu Hui was hell-bent on destroying Li Qiye. He wanted to pull out his muscles, flay his skin, and smash his body into a thousand pieces.

(TL: Common Chinese saying of wanting to really really kill someone; four words total in the Chinese version)

Nan Huai Ren and Protector Mo wanted to believe in Li Qiye. Although the chance of him winning was slim, he had continuously performed miracles in the past.

-Hey, can he really beat Senior Xu?

Every since Li Qiye went through the Chaotic Heart Forest in one go, the disciples of the Nine Saint Demon Gate considered him as a real opponent.

An older senior shook his head:

-The difference between them is too great. It is a mortal versus a Heaven's Mandate cultivator. Li Qiye wouldn't be able to win unless he was somehow given an Immortal Emperor's true energy; but, even that isn't realistic. Even with it, he wouldn't have enough blood force to activate the energy.

-That is true, a mortal cannot activate a single usage of an Immortal Emperor's true energy. The "Fierce Slaughter Sword"

technique of junior Xu is overly powerful from its mysterious truths. A life or death battle with that technique would not bode well for his opponent.

A disciple that had previously sparred with Xu Hui offered his opinion.

-Don't forget about his Silver Eagle Physique as well. Although it is only a Houtian rank physique, it has considerable speed. If you combine both his speed and power, you can say that his offensive power is nearly unmatched in our generation.

(TL: Houtian and Xiantian are very common terms for Xian xia so I chose to leave it as source)

Cultivators valued physiques very highly. They ranked from weakest to strongest as the following:

Mortal Physique, Houtian Physique, Xiantian Physique, Emperor Physique, Saint Physique, and lastly, Immortal Physique.

The majority of the world have the Mortal Physique, including Li Qiye. It is the weakest both in terms of physical strength and blood force.

Xu Hui roared; sword energies rotated around his bodied in an upward manner. They became a giant, impenetrable fortress of visible, radiant swords, all pointing towards Li Qiye. The technique served as a defensive measure as he was channeling his energy.

-Open!

A heavenly sword came out from Xu Hui's mouth; it split into eight different heavenly swords. These swords were gigantic, towering at two hundred meters each. A single strike could split the earth itself.

-Fierce Slaughter Sword, Heavenly Sword Yan Jin!

A disciple couldn't help but exclaim their jealousy and envy.

-Xu Hui's true energy is formed by Yan Jin's Heavenly Jade with a complete magical pattern. Heavenly Sword Yan Jin is for offense and Fierce Slaughter Sword for defense. Within our generation, he is nearly unbeatable.

Witnessing the scene, Protector Mo was humbled. Xu Hui proved to be more powerful than expected, especially when he has the possession of the Yan Jin sword. Protector Mo himself wouldn't be able to pierce through Xu Hui's defenses. After his failed attack, the Yan Jing sword formation would immediate counter attack at the time when he is the most vulnerable.

Xu Hui maneuvered his swords at Li Qiye, and maniacally yelled:

-Come here, you bastard. Today, I will slice you into a thousand pieces!

-Phoo, phoo!

Li Qiye spat into his palms and then rubbed them together; this rather crude gesture was completely different from his normally elegant demeanor.

-A thousand pieces?

Li Qiye retorted.

-You, alone, is not enough. Let me beat you into a pig's head; even your parents will not recognize who you are after I am done.

Li Qiye slowly took out the Serpent Punishing Stick.

Nan Huai Ren almost went unconscious from the scene; wasn't that the fireplace stick in the Grand Chamber of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect? He was expecting Li Qiye to use the "Invisible Dual Blade" technique; maybe its miraculous power would help him tie the fight.

However, Li Qiye wasn't using the blades, but a wooden stick instead... The Yan Jin sword would cut that thing in half in a second.

Protector Mo's only thought at this moment was to save Li Qiye's life the moment it was in danger, no matter the cost.

-Using a wooden stick to fight against the Yan Jin sword? Could it be an Immortal Emperor grade weapon?

Yu He squinted his eyes and opened his heavenly vision technique in order to see through the wooden stick. He was, indeed, worried that the stick was a treasure made by an Immortal Emperor.

However, despite his numerous techniques and concentration, the wooden stick was just a wooden stick. There were no magical enchantments, nor cultivation techniques to utilize. A wooden stick versus a Heaven's Mandate level sword; Yu He was at a loss for words.

Protector Hua was not as skeptical as Yu He; he only wanted to witness Li Qiye's death.

Li Qiye pointed his Serpent Punishing Stick at Xu Hui like a ruffian, and said:

-Little boy, come here; let this grandpa shatter your butt!

-I'll kill you!

Xu Hui screamed as the eight heavenly swords became one sword. Straight from the sky, the Yin Jan sword, surrounded by a gigantic energy, swung down towards Li Qiye. Its path burned with fire; the battle stage now bathed in a sea of flames.

-This is the end!

Nan Huai Ren turned around, not wanting to see the result of this monstrous strike. It seemed like Xu Hui wanted to finish this in one move, and he used his most powerful technique.

-Good!

Li Qiye paid no mind. He screamed in a strange manner and jumped forward with a random motion, swinging his stick.

The scene that everyone was expecting did not happen.

The Serpent Punishing Stick met the weakest part of the Yin Jan sword during its trajectory. The sword's energy dissipated, and the physical sword plunged to the ground; it was as if it was bitten by a poisonous snake, unable to obey Xu Hui's command.

-Little boy, I will beat you into a pig's head!

Xu Hui hadn't regained his composure, but Li Qiye was already in front of him. The stick passed through his sword fortress and rained blows directly onto his body.

-Die!

Xu Hui did not retreat; he once again gathered his sword energy and surrounded Li Qiye with it.

-Gather!

However, to no avail, his Virtuous Paragon sword technique had no effect. The Serpent Punishing Stick continuously struck at the formation's weakest points, and he successfully negated the incoming blows. Finally, it struck Xu Hui's face, and that one blow made Xu Hui redden with blood. He became disoriented; stars in his eyes and thunder in his ears.

(TL: Common poetic description for a blow to the head or disorientation)

-Bam, Bam, Bam!

In the blink of an eye, Li Qiye had pummeled Xu Hui ten times, all of them hitting the meridians and his weakest spots. Xu Hui was like a snake without its skeletal body; unable to stand up. His blood force was in disarray, and his cultivation techniques were unusable. He fell to the ground with a busted face.

The Serpent Punishing Stick was not a heavenly treasure; it was only a regular wooden stick. Hitting a snake required one to aim for its head; this was true for the blows struck by Li Qiye as well. They have to hit the weak points and defensive holes of the opponents. Unless the opponent had reached the Heaven's Primal stage, he could not escape the blows for he had not perfected his own understanding of the defensive mysterious truths. One of the requirements for Heaven's Primal is a rebirth of one's body and the understanding of techniques as well as a body protection aura, rendering the Serpent Punishing Stick useless. However, since Xu Hui was far away from Heaven's Primal, the wooden stick was his

prime nemesis.

Keep in mind that even Immortal Emperor Min Ren was beaten by the stick, repeatedly; the same applied for all of his strongest generals, including the Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon.

The Serpent Punishing Stick was a regular branch grown from a small tree in the Demon Forest, basked by demonic aura throughout the ages. However, this made it anything but ordinary; the Demon Forest was one of the few Ancient Forbidden Dangers.

The stick also had another property that made it appealing to Li Qiye. No matter how many times a person is struck by it, they would not die from the blows. It was a stick specifically meant for punishment and teaching; this made it very appropriate for Li Qiye when dealing with the powerful geniuses under his tutelage.

-Bang, Bang, Bang!

After Xu Hui had fallen unconscious, to the ground, Li Qiye did not show any mercy. He kept on striking the body of Xu Hui. His body was now filled with wounds, no one could tell if he was dead or alive.

This scene jolted the spectators. Yu He, once again, activated his mysterious eyes to look at the Serpent Punishing Stick, but he still couldn't find anything special about it.

Chapter 18 : Demon Emperor Lun Ri (2)

It was natural that Yu He could not see through an object like the Serpent Punishing Stick. Since ancient times, the amount of people that have seen it with their own eyes were few. Without his knowledge from traversing the Forbidden Dangers, he too, would not have known the secret and magical properties of the Serpent Punishing Stick.

If one could not discern its characteristics, then it was only a wooden stick in their eyes.

-I'll kill you!

Although his body was tattered with wounds, his Silver Eagle Physique activated automatically. Below Xu Hui's ribs, two sharp claws came out and went for the heart of Li Qiye.

Xu Hui had the Silver Eagle Physique because his father was a Silver Eagle that became a human from having an accomplished cultivation level. The pair of claws were always hiding inside his body incase he ever needed to suddenly surprise his enemies.

-Phanh!

The wooden stick easily stopped the Silver Eagle claws, forcing them back into Xu Hui's body.

-You seek your own death!

Li Qiye coldly proclaimed.

-Whoosh whoosh.

Two blades immediately pierce through Xu Hui's shoulders and pinched him into the ground, immobilizing his body.

-Do you think it is that easy to kill me? Today, I'm going to hit you without mercy.

Li Qiye continued to hit him with the wooden stick; he felt cheated by the event that had just transpired.

-That is enough!

At this moment, Protector Hua could no longer keep watching. He jumped into the battle stage and yelled.

Li Qiye glanced at him and said:

-What now? If the child can't win, the old man wants to join in as well?

-Young one, don't be so delusional!

His eyes contained anger and hatred, he gravely said:

-Let him go, or I will personally kill you today.

-I was going to spare him, but...

After finishing, Li Qiye sliced the two blades across Xu Hui's body, severing him into multiple pieces. The blades that struck through to the floor created a rain of blood and sparks.

-Hui Er! You little bastard, accept your death!

Protector Hua lost all restraint and his blood force punctured through the sky. A magical sword, towering twenty thousand meters, flew towards Li Qiye.

Protector Mo couldn't react in time; his mind was full of panic.

-BANG!

As the sky piercing sword appeared, suddenly, a gigantic foot from the heavens stomped down with an unstoppable force. No one could stop this blow; not a Named Hero, nor a Royal Noble. Not even an Enlightened Being or a Heavenly Emperor would have been able to; all living beings were just ants compared to the might of that foot.

-Nooooo!

Protector Hua only managed to let out a pitiful scream. His body, under the giant foot, became meat paste; he could not be more dead.

Everyone was shocked because the foot did not belong to Li Qiye; it was from one of the four gigantic statues situated at the four corners of this battle stage. It was unbelievable that a Royal Noble like Protector Hua was killed in one stomp.

-You can't...

Everything happened too fast, Grand Protector Yu He had ignited his blood force and flung it towards the foot in order to save Protector Hua.

However, that foot did not take any damage; it performed another stomp.

-Bang!

Yu He was smashed away straight into the main mountain; his blood wouldn't stop flowing.

-Don't you dare!

A thunderous cry roared up in the sky; it was as if it was encompassing all of the mysterious truths of the heaven and earth;

heavenly auras illuminated the whole sky. A person suddenly appeared in the distance, floating in the air. Behind his head was a heavenly blinding aura that could burn the world.

-First Elder!

All of the Nine Saint Demon Gate disciples yelled out in bewilderment. The First Elder raised his palm and immediately flipped it towards the statue. This palm technique, that carried incomparable might, flew towards the statue.

-Bang!

Another deafening sound blasted into the air. This time, the statue used its hand to meet the palm strike. It annihilated the technique; the First Elder's blood painted the sky's color. Even someone as formidable as he could not handle a single strike from the statue.

Everyone was at a loss for words. The statues at the battle stage suddenly made a move, killing Protector Hua, kicking Yu He away, and used one punch to defeat the First Elder.

Afterwards, the statue remained still like nothing had happened.

Li Qiye, in the middle of the arena, casually opened his mouth.

-Like I said, if the Nine Saint Demon Gate does not follow the rules; I would have no qualms in flipping your sect upside down.

-Hmmmph...

The First Elder, although wounded, had his blood force that was still going strong. He immediately flew to the sky, wanting to use all of his might against the statues. He was afraid inside because he did not know why their own statues would rebel against the sect.

-Elder, don't make any more moves. These four statues are the Heavenly Guardians of the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

Right now, a commanding voice, that was filled with nobility, rang from the deepest part of the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

-Sect Master!

Hearing this voice, everyone from the Nine Saint Demon Gate knew who it belonged to. This was the Sect Master Demon Emperor Lun Ri, the leader of a whole generation of geniuses in the Grand Middle Territory.

The First Elder stopped immediately; he kept staring at the four statues while he pondered many questions.

All of the disciples were surprised as well. They have never heard anyone talk about the sect having Heavenly Guardians, let alone Heavenly Guardians that could harm their own sect.

-Elder, Protector Yu He, please invite young master Li into the Sky Chamber to talk. Would that be alright?

After hearing the invitation, Li Qiye smirked and answered:

-Finally, someone who can see with their eyes; a little talk will not hurt.

Grand Protector Yu He quickly came to Li Qiye and respectfully gestured him toward the Sky Chamber. The more he stared at Li Qiye, the more afraid he became. This thirteen years old was too frightening.

The Sky Chamber was an important location in the Nine Saint Demon Gate. All major decisions were discussed and made there, and only Elders had the qualifications to enter.

Of course, Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren could not enter as well. Since the Sky Chamber was situated in the deepest part of the sect and Li Qiye could not fly, a grand Royal Noble like Yu He had to bend down to fly him over on his back.

Right now, all of the Elders were present in the chamber. Heavenly auras exuded from all of their bodies; their Life Wheels bounced up and down; mysterious patterns of Law that resembled the creation of a new world crossed their entire bodies. They had all reached the stage of Enlightened Beings, definitely not Royal

Nobles.

One Royal Noble could destroy the entirety of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, imagine how strong an Enlightened Being was. The hidden strength of the Nine Saint Demon Gate was truly staggering when seen; no wonder they were the rulers of the Old Ox country.

Despite all of this, Li Qiye was not surprised one bit and he sat down gracefully in the Sky Chamber.

-Since the ancient times, no one had ever connected with our Heavenly Guardians.

The Demon Emperor's voice appeared, but no one could see him.

Li Qiye shook his head and said:

-I don't like talking to people who hide their face behind a veil.

The Elders were not pleased with his words. Demon Emperor Lun Ri was a monstrous man, and all of the Elders here deeply respected and feared him. However, this Li Qiye was not minding his words toward the Emperor at all.

-It is not as if I don't want to see young master Li, but right now, I am still in the middle of closed cultivation; I can't personally meet you.

Demon Emperor Lun Ri patiently explained.

Li Qiye nodded his head and smiled.

-Fine, I won't make it hard for you; at the very least, I am a very reasonable man.

Lun Ri politely inquired:

-I want to hear how you were able to connect with our Heavenly Guardians.

All the Elders were surprised as well; they never knew that their sect had Heavenly Guardians.

At this moment, Lun Ri started to explain:

-The Nine Saint Demon Gate has four Heavenly Guardians which are the four statues in the battle stage. They were invited by the patriarch to protect our sect. Not only that, they also guard the Heaven's Vein and Earth's Vein between the battle stage, which is the bloodline of our sect. But, until today, they have never made a move.

His voice became graver as he went on during his explanation. Once finished, all the Elders' eyes were on Li Qiye. They did not understand why the forever immobilized Heavenly Guardians

helped Li Qiye today.

Chapter 19 : Always Arrogant No Matter The Occasion (1)

The Nine Saint Demon Gate Elders, the more they stared at Li Qiye, the more annoyed they became. Why was it that a person with a mortal Physique, mortal Life Wheel, and mortal Fate Palace like Li Qiye, was capable of communicating with their Heavenly Guardians. The gods were so unfair!

If he was a disciple of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, then it would be borderline acceptable. However, he was from a different sect. Why would our Heavenly Guardian be protecting an outsider and harming our own sect?

Demon Emperor Lun Ri started to speak once again after the dramatic pause:

-After knowing the background, could you please tell us about your technique to control the Heavenly Guardians?

Li Qiye hesitantly smiled.

-Communication technique? I don't have any technique; these are your Heavenly Guardians, you should know more about them more than I do.

Li Qiye naturally could not tell them the secrets behind the event. As a dark crow during the Desolate Era, he paid in blood in

order to formulate a successful plan to escape the Heaven Demon Grotto. After the million years, he finally understood this particular logic: if you want to control your own destiny, you must personally possess formidable power.

Although, as the dark crow, he possessed considerable power, it was not his own power. Luckily, after entering places that no one else dared to venture, he had found out many mysterious and magical secrets. From then on, he already formulated a plan for his own personal cultivation if he ever returned to his body.

The four Heavenly Guardians of the Nine Saint Demon Gate were one of his secret preparations in the past for self-preservation. That year, he obtained them from the Land of the Old Bloods. They protected him for countless years in the past.

Later on, the Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon always wanted the four statues. He followed and begged Li Qiye for them nonstop. Since Nine Saint made many considerable contributions as Min Ren's fate protector, often at the risk of his own life, Li Qiye let him borrow them for his later generations.

After successfully guilting Li Qiye out of them, Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon immediately positioned them to protect the heaven and earth veins of the Nine Saint Demon Gate as well as allowing them to use the natural energy here to further strengthen themselves.

However, the two had an agreement. Unless the Nine Saint Demon Gate met the disaster of a sect's demise, the statues would never take action. They are not slaves or servants of the Nine Saint

Demon Gate, and they will not be the fate protectors of any descendants from the sect.

Since the Nine Saint Demon Gate also had a monster like the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect as its backing, it grew in power without much hindrance. Later on, during the decline of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, the Nine Saint Demon Gate was an independent existence and thus, it did not suffer together. Due to this, the Nine Saint Demon Gate had never faced a sect's demise level of disaster; the statues had never mobilized.

The statues were personally taken by Li Qiye from the Land of the Old Bloods, of course he knew how to communicate with them. That was why when he took the time to get on the shoulder of one of them, he also conversed with the statues.

-If young master Li is willing to part with the technique, the Nine Saint Demon Gate will definitely not mistreat you for the deal. Anything young master Li wants, just say a word, and we will do it to the utmost of our abilities.

Demon Emperor Lun Ri had not given up; he knew the real value of the Heavenly Guardians. The sect would become extremely powerful if the guardians could be controlled.

All of the Elders eagerly awaited for Li Qiye's answer. If one statue was able able to defeat the First Elder, then what would be the combined power of all four?

-You know, there really isn't a technique. I was simply gossiping

with the statues; just stuff about home and life, that's all.

Li Qiye playfully answered with a coyish expression, acting like an innocent child.

Of course, the Demon Emperor and the Elders did not believe Li Qiye's answer, but they could not do anything about it. They especially could not force Li Qiye into giving them the technique, otherwise they'll receive an unprecedented disaster.

-However, I do need to say one thing. I need to perform a blood rite with the four statues.

Seeing the Emperor's quiet contemplation, Li Qiye coldly responded, changing from his previous demeanor.

Both the Emperor and the Elders were shocked. This had a completely different meaning; to perform a blood rite with their Heavenly Guardians was comparable to a linking technique.

Demon Emperor Lun Ri frankly responded:

-The four statues are our Heavenly Guardians.

Li Qiye aloofly played with his sleeves while he answered:

-They can still be your Heavenly Guardians. The only thing is, I might need to borrow them for certain things in the future; for just

a little bit.

-The four statues belong to our sect. Unless it is someone of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, no one else has the rights to use them.

An Elder couldn't help but exclaim. There was no such thing as letting someone borrow your Heavenly Guardians. It was too unreasonable.

Li Qiye glared at the Elder and said:

-This is not up to you. If you have a problem with it, then go cry to your guardians.

Due to the promise that year, Li Qiye had to be patient when dealing with the Nine Saint Demon Gate. Otherwise, he would just have taken the statues and left.

Demon Emperor Lun Ri suddenly interjected to calm the Elder and Li Qiye down.

-Since young master Li can communicate with the guardians, having them wake up and put into action isn't a bad thing.

In reality, everyone here knew that the Nine Saint Demon Gate did not have a choice in this negotiation. Although the Nine Saint Demon Gate was powerful, it was still a bit lacking when compared to the four statues. Remember, when four parts are working together within a formation, the power increase was not simply

additive, but multiplicative instead.

If it was only one statue, it would be a difficult, but not undoable, task to defeat it. However, with the four of them combined, especially situated on top of the heaven and earth's veins of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, the risk was too high.

-This is something a smart person would say.

Li Qiye smiled and said.

-Don't think that I would immediately cause trouble for the Nine Saint Demon Gate after I perform the rite with your Heavenly Guardians. If I wanted to do that, then all of you would not have the opportunity to sit here. If I wanted to trample through the Nine Saint Demon Gate, then unless your patriarch rises from his grave, no one could stop my footstep.

The Elders were not happy with Li Qiye's attitude, but they couldn't say anything. The juxtaposition between the Elders' raging faces versus Li Qiye's nonchalantly attitude was quite amusing.

-If that is the case, then young master Li can drop the blood.

Lun Ri agreed with Li Qiye. Although he doesn't know why a mortal like Li Qiye could control the four statues, this was his only option.

-If your sect follows the rules, I will also do the same. The four statues will remain as your Heavenly Guardians.

Li Qiye responded.

-Young master Li!

Lun Ri started speaking again after a moment of contemplation.

-Our Nine Saint Demon Gate also has a sacred ground; no one has been able to open it, however. Would you be interested in giving it a look?

-Your Highness, this can't happen!

An Elder immediately tried to stop the Emperor.

-If it fine for young master Li to check it out.

Lun Ri quickly stopped the words of this Elder; his commanding voice did not allow for negotiation.

Li Qiye's eyes became bright, and asked:

-You are talking about the Saint Cavern that your patriarch, Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon, left behind?

He suddenly remembered an event from the old times.

That year, the old chicken head had once mentioned this cave to Li Qiye, but this was after Immortal Min Ren had received the Heaven's Will; Li Qiye's disposition was unstable at the time as well, wanting to go into deep slumber. After hearing the wily old chicken head's story, he didn't really listen carefully.

-That is correct!

Li Qiye's knowledge of this fact rattled Lun Ri's spirit; he quickly suggested:

-If young master Li can open the Saint Cavern, we will give you considerable thanks.

(TL: The thanks Lun RI uses here implies a great favor/treasure, not just courtesy)

Li Qiye attempted to remember what the old chicken head once told him in the past, and then he asserted:

-I can try to open the Saint Cavern once. If I am successful, I want to take one thing from it, the rest can belong to your sect.

-This...

After hearing Li Qiye's words, Lun Ri required some time to think. An Elder spoke up:

-Your Highness, this requires more careful discussion.

Chapter 20 : Always Arrogant No Matter The Occasion (2)

-There is no need for discussion!

Demon Emperor Lun Ri commandingly asserted:

-Young master Li can take any one thing from it, provided that you can open the Saint Cavern.

-Lun Ri, you are a smart person. Find me when you are ready; I will be taking my leave.

Li Qiye turned around and left the Sky Chamber. Yu He had to, once again, unwillingly carry him on his back.

After Li Qiye's departure, an Elder couldn't help express:

-Your Highness, this decision regarding the Saint Cavern felt a bit rushed.

-Not necessarily.

The voice of Lun Ri started again:

-Since our inception, the Saint Cavern had always been isolated.

No one had successfully opened the cave. This was a good opportunity for us, and it was in line with the patriarch's will.

-Your Highness, what about the Heavenly Guardians? How come we have never heard of them before? What are they; Heavenly Beast or Eternal Demon?

An Elder curiously inquired.

-I'm not quite sure myself.

Demon Emperor Lun Ri stated.

-Our knowledge and writings regarding the Heavenly Guardians are quite lacking. Only the ancient scroll of the patriarch mentioned something about them. Unless we are at the brink of destruction, they will not activate by themselves. Only the Sect Masters are allowed to see this scroll.

-But they activated their power today.

Another Elder conveyed.

-I do not understand it either, but if they have chosen him, they must have their own reasons for doing so.

Lun Ri replied.

-This kid, he is too scary.

The First Elder opened his mouth:

-According to Yu He, he went through the Chaotic Heart Forest twice, easily. This is truly unthinkable! Now the Heavenly Guardians have chosen him as well, this world really is not fair.

-This is indeed an alarming fact. From our start to finish, we have always focused on cultivating the younger talents. Junior Leng is our strongest in terms of strength, and the princess is the first in terms of raw aptitude, but the Heavenly Guardians did not choose them; instead, they chose a mortal boy with a mortal Physique, mortal Life Wheel, and mortal Fate Palace.

Another Elder lamented.

-Of the numerous things in this world, we cannot understand all of them.

In the end, although Lun Ri felt cheated as well, he could only be acquiesced.

-Your Highness, if he can actually open the Saint Cavern, are we really giving him anything he wants?

One Elder inquired.

-That's right, it was rumored that, in the Saint Cavern, there is a big chance of an Immortal Emperor's Life Treasure hiding in there.

An unwilling Elder exclaimed.

-If he can actually open it, then it is the heaven's will.

(Nahct: This 'heaven's will' is most likely not the 'Heaven's Will' that allows one to become an Immortal Emperor; hence, left in lower case)

Lun Ri responded:

-According to Elder Sword, none of us, in this generation, would be able to open the Saint Cavern. Li Qiye had done many unthinkable deeds while he is here; maybe he can open the cave.

After hearing the words "Elder Sword", no one else dared to open their mouth; because no one within the sect has more power and influence than Elder Sword, including the Sect Master.

-Order that, if any disciples were to reveal what happened today, they would be heavily punished. This is an iron law!

In the end, the Emperor declared.

They do not want outsiders to know too much regarding the

Heavenly Guardians.

After Li Qiye's return, they had been moved to a different guest location. It was a place meant for the visiting rulers of Kingdoms and Emperors of Ancient Kingdoms; the highest level of hospitality and respect.

This treatment made Nan Huai Ren and Protector Mo afraid of receiving too much love. They understood it was because of Li Qiye that they were able to receive such a warm reception.

They had many questions to ask Li Qiye, but they didn't know where to start. They were afraid of his ability and mystery. They kept staring at him like he was an ancient monster; one that was never seen before. One thing Nan Huai Ren did figure out was that the day when Li Qiye went up the statue's shoulder, it was in preparation for today.

-Say whatever you want to say.

Seeing the master and disciple combo being so uncomfortable and confused, Li Qiye was very much amused, sitting in his chair.

Protector Mo opened his mouth like he had something say, but he didn't know where to start. He was a quiet person anyway, so he gave up and just sat down.

Compared to Protector Mo, Nan Huai Ren was just waiting for the opportunity to ask. He gathered up his courage and stuttered:

-That, that thing, was it successful?

-What thing?

It's was Li Qiye's turn to be confused; he had no idea what Nan Huai Ren was implying.

-You, you know. The thing about the marriage proposal, marrying princess Li.

-Oh, you are talking about Li Shuang Yuan.

Li Qiye chuckled, shook his head and said:

-I did not inquire about this; I did not care about it. She is only a woman, can't reach the apex.

Li Qiye opened his big mouth, and again, Nan Huai Ren was at a loss for words. Remember that Li Shuang Yuan was the prime descendant of the Nine Saint Demon Gate. Not only was she beautiful, she also carried an Emperor Physique, Emperor Life Wheel, and most importantly, a Fate Palace of the Saint level. Within the Grand Middle Territory, there were countless young geniuses that wanted to propose to Li Shuang Yuan. However, in the end, Nan Huai Ren realized that he should not question Li Qiye's words.

His eyes turned to the Serpent Punishing Stick instead. This regular wooden stick had beaten a Heaven's Mandate expert into the ground; it left a deep impression ingrained in Nan Huan Ren's mind.

-Here, if you want to look at it, go ahead.

Li Qiye noticed the peculiar gaze, and generously threw the stick to him.

Nan Huai Ren caught it, held it carefully in his hands, and carefully observed. Even Protector Mo couldn't contain himself anymore and joined in on the fun. The two analyzed it together.

However, no matter what they did, the only result they could arrive at was that it was only a regular stick.

-This really is the wooden stick from the Grand Chamber, right?

Nan Huai Ren queried.

-Correct.

Li Qiye nodded his head.

Nan Huai Ren swallowed and daringly asked Li Qiye:

-Senior, can I play around with it?

-Look at your silly self, do whatever you want to do.

Li Qiye bursted out laughing.

Nan Huai Ren immediately lifted the stick to the sky and started swinging it around. However, it did not carry the same force and grace like it did in the hand of Li Qiye.

-Senior, why is there such a difference between our stick plays?

Nan Huai Ren did not understand how such a regular stick was so magical when it was used by Li Qiye.

Li Qiye glanced at him and sincerely answered:

-Truly believe and it will happen.

He stopped there; he couldn't easily explain the mystical truths behind the Serpent Punishing techniques to other people.

Chapter 21 : Saint Cavern (1)

The next day, after preparations were completed, the Elders invited Li Qiye. Yu He personally became Li Qiye's chaperone to take him to the deepest place of the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

With Yu He's strength and cultivation level, even in the entirety of Old Ox country, he would be an influential person. However, he was now the chaperone for Li Qiye; no one would believe this even if rumors were to be spread.

At the end of the Nine Saint Demon Gate was a lone mountain, and under the mountain was a sealed cave. It was unknown how long the cave had been sealed for; it was covered by wild grass and mushrooms, and the front of the cave was worn by the test of time with hallowed erosions.

This was the forbidden zone of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, only Elders and above could enter.

Legend has it that although Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon left behind his cultivation lineage for the sect, there were still certain treasures left behind in the cave. It goes on to say that, because he feared his future generations would be weak and vain, he created the Saint Cavern so there would always be a chance for revival should the actual sect be destroyed.

One thing all the Sect Masters and Elders were sure of though, was that there existed at least one Immortal Emperor Life

Treasure.

When Immortal Emperor Min Ren received the Heaven's Will, it was told that he gave Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon an Immortal Emperor Life Treasure for his accomplishments as Min Ren's fate protector. However, the descendants of Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon did not have it in their possession. This was why everyone believed that the treasure – was indeed – located in the Saint Cavern.

The Immortal Emperor Life Treasure was a weapon that Min Ren personally created during his conquest in the Nine Worlds. This Life Treasure was many times stronger than even a Virtuous Paragon True Treasure.

Although this was not an Immortal Emperor's True Treasure, a Life Treasure was enough to inspire greed from everyone.

(TL Note: This wasn't made explicitly clear before, but there are two types of treasures: True and Life. True is a much stronger version than Life because it is imbued with true energy from its master as well)

There are calligraphies ingrained to the side of the cave; radiant and alive in contrast to the surrounding scene.

“Only Demon under the Heavens”

These words exerted a powerful and majestic atmosphere. Each

vivid word, vibrant with their own spirit, was highlighted with the impeccable penmanship. It was as if these heavenly words were ready to pierce the heavens at any moment; like a flying dragon or dancing phoenix. Tested by the vigor of time, for many moons, the aura of the Virtuous Paragon still remained.

These four words were left behind by Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon himself. The descendants of the Nine Saint Demon Gate all believed that this was the key to opening the Saint Cavern.

To the left side was “Only Demon under the Heavens” but the right side was left empty. That was why the descendants believed that if they could correctly match the wordplays to the right side, the cavern would be opened.

However, there were others who thought that the four words “Only Demon under the Heavens” was the real key. It hid untouchable mysterious truths; each stroke possessed supreme Merit Laws. As long as one could understand its meanings, he could open the cave himself.

Both of these predictions were tested by the disciples throughout the ages. There was one disciple with the highest innate aptitude in the Nine Saint Demon Gate who cultivated next to these words in order to understand the true meanings. Another time, the Sect Master personally went to the mortal world; he found a peerless literature expert, hoping that this person could write a matching prose to the right.

However, the cavern remained closed despite trying all of these methods throughout the years.

As for Li Qiye, after seeing the cavern and the words written to the left, he immediately knew how to open the cavern. However, because there were Elders watching, he couldn't immediately open it.

He stepped close to the cave, moving side to side. He randomly knocked the walls, bent down to the ground, then dejectedly shook his head as if the answer was not where he thought it was. After a while, he intensely focused on the words "Only Demon under the Heavens".

Seeing Li Qiye's actions, without results, made the Elders restless. However, they didn't dare say anything; they were all just holding their breaths while anxiously watching Li Qiye's every movement.

Eventually, he sat in a meditative pose in front of the cave. Time slowly passed by, from the morning to noon, from noon to the fall of the sun in the west. The sun reddened the sky; Li Qiye still remained motionless.

Li Qiye meditating for a whole day made the Elders lose their patience.

-Will this be a success?

One Elder spoke to himself.

-Is this little devil just pretending?

Seeing that there was no connection between Li Qiye and the cave, their trust in him started to waver. Maybe his miracles with the Chaotic Heart Forest and the four Heavenly Guardians were just that.

-Hmmp, maybe he only got lucky.

This Elder didn't actually trust what he was saying. He knew Li Qiye had secrets; he was only voicing his dissatisfaction of having an outsider in their sacred ground.

-Pen and ink!

When the Elders were rambling amongst themselves, Li Qiye immediately stood up and said. After having sat here for a whole day, his butt was in agonizing pain.

An Elder brought him a calligraphy pen and ink; Li Qiye acted mysteriously. He shook his head and lamented:

-That's how it is, that's how it is! Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon is indeed unfathomable.

He then carefully dipped the pen into the ink while holding his sleeve gracefully and started writing to the right of the cave.

“Mere Chicken above the Earth”

He was not an expert calligrapher; he hastily wrote these four words. They contained zero aura, let alone, when compared to the words of the Virtuous Paragon.

(Nahct: Although in English it's five, in Chinese, they are 2 groups of four characters each.)

“Only Demon under the Heavens, Mere Chicken above the Earth”

The two lines have such opposite meanings, and did not mesh well together.

(TL: This is a historical chinese poetry play; each word has to either match or have opposite meanings for their corresponding counterparts in the same order, and the two lines also need to have the same meanings or opposite as well.)

After Li Qiye was finished, the Elders' faces went black because these words simply dishonored their patriarch. They were not worthy to match with the phrase “Only Demon under the Heavens.”

-How bold, to shame our Nine Saint Demon Gate!

An Elder deafeningly roared.

Li Qiye glared at him, and retorted:

-You are an ordinary martial artist, what would you know about the enigmatic meanings behind literature? You don't even know the thoughtfulness of your ancestor, yet you dare to stand there and scream?

-You...

After hearing Li Qiye's response, the red faced Elder was ready to explode.

"Creak... creak..."

A heavy sound rang, and the Saint Cavern started to open.

The Elders rolled their eyes; they couldn't believe what they were seeing! How could the words "Mere Chicken above the Earth" open the cave?

-How is this possible?

Li Qiye perched his lips, and thought:

"Because your patriarch was a chicken that reached the apex to become a demon, that is why I wrote those words."

He naturally didn't tell them the real secret. Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon didn't used to have this name. He used to be known as Nine Saint Heavenly Demon, a name with great arrogance. When

the Dark Crow Li Qiye asked him to become the fate protector for Min Ren, he immediately refused. He praised himself as the “Only Demon under the Heaven” which was why he chose not to be under anyone.

Since he dared to rudely say no to Li Qiye’s invitation, it made Li Qiye angry; he beat up the Virtuous Paragon. He also forced him back to his original form and plucked all of his feathers out of anger, then he laughed:

-Haha, “Mere Chicken above the Earth.”

Chapter 22 : Saint Cavern (2)

Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon was not only a forest chicken successfully cultivated, but he was also of the strongest Virtuous Paragons in his era. At one point, he had gloriously swept through the Nine Worlds; his illustrious and arrogant name spread to the four corners. However, in the end, he had still lost to Li Qiye, and he had no choice but to become the fate protector of Immortal Emperor Min Ren.

“Only Demon under the Heavens” was the slogan of the Virtuous Paragon, while “Mere Chicken above the Earth” was Li Qiye’s line to tease him.

Many generations of Sect Masters and geniuses of the Nine Saint Demon Gate tried to complete the second sentence, but they had always failed. No one would have guessed that it was such a silly line.

Li Qiye calling their patriarch an old chicken was very rude. However, if one really thinks about it, it was simply the truth.

-Let us see if your ancestor left behind anything good.

Li Qiye happily smiled and went into the cave, not caring about the Elders.

The Elders regained their wits and they quickly followed.

Within the holy cave, there was only one compartment. Inside, dazzling lights brilliantly shined from all of the treasures. There were Life Treasures, Immortal Irons, and Heavenly Jewels in the central area. To the right were priceless cultivation manuals and ancient scrolls. The whole room, ornamented with powerful treasures, blinded the Elders.

-The old chicken head's treasures are quite plentiful.

Li Qiye's eyes glanced through and murmured. Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon's reputation was well deserved; his lifelong treasures were terrifying.

-What did you say?

An Elder nearby heard him whispering, and asked.

Li Qiye shook his head and replied:

-Nothing, I was just talking to myself.

This answer made all the Elders suspiciously stare at Li Qiye; even the Grand Elder thought the little boy was too mysterious.

-Violet Dragon Dual Sword!

An Elder witnessed many Life Treasures floating in the air, he

couldn't help but clamor:

-Demon Extinguishing Pagoda, Nine Galaxy Spoon, Heavenly Wooden Vessel. These are all treasures that have been written in an ancient scroll from the sect.

(TL note: The vessel here means a boat/ship. It is the same type of treasure as the boat in Spirit Vessel)

-This is the Qing Mu Ancient Tablet...

One Elder was looking at the cultivation manuals and found a startling ancient technique.

At this moment, the Elders of the Nine Saint Demon Gate were dazzled; it seemed that their patriarch only left half of his treasures with the actual sect when he passed away.

-Immortal... Immortal Emperor Life Treasure!

The First Elder's eyes moved towards a jade table in the middle of the room. There lied an ancient sealed box, but its Immortal Emperor aura was still permeating to the outside.

Even though it only revealed a strand of the power, it could be compared to the might of the high heaven; it was as if one was pressured by all the nine skies. The Heaven's Will aura flowed up and down, all around it; all worldly creatures must bow down to this remnant of an Immortal Emperor's breath.

-Immortal Emperor Life Treasure!

The rest of the Elders that finally saw the item were shaken with anticipation. This was an Immortal Emperor Life Treasure left behind by an authentic Immortal Emperor; created by Min Ren himself.

-Don't forget, I have the right to pick the first item.

As the Elders were drowning in their excitement, Li Qiye opened his mouth. These words were like a bucket of cold water thrown over the faces of everyone.

Burning red eyes were staring at Li Qiye; if he was to take this treasure, then wouldn't their dreams be instantly shattered?

Despite the numerous death stares, Li Qiye still casually stood there. He wasn't afraid of them changing their mind; even if all the Elders were present, he would still act the same.

In the end, the First Elder took a deep breath and exclaimed:

-Our Nine Saint Demon Gate will do what we say; if the Emperor has made an agreement with you, we would definitely not eat our words!

After he was done, his mouth was bitter with regrets. It was an

Immortal Emperor Life Treasure, but he couldn't go back on his Sect Master's decision.

-Seems like you guys are still quite honorable.

Li Qiye was as calm as a tranquil well, and he slowly spoke:

-I actually do appreciate your Emperor, Lun Ri.

(TL: The word appreciate here has the connotation of an older/more powerful person praising a junior in Chinese)

These arrogant words made the Elders speechless. Their Emperor was a peerless hero; his whole life was filled with numerous achievements; not only in the Grand Middle Territory, but the whole Mortal Emperor World as well.

However, today, there was a thirteen year old running his mouth, and he dared to say that he "appreciated" Demon Emperor Lun Ri. If outsiders were to hear this, they would laugh until their teeth fell off. However, this wasn't the first time the Elders heard Li Qiye say something outrageous, so what could they do outside of staying silent?

-Clap, clap, clap.

Li Qiye clapped his hands three times and a mysterious ancient box immediately flew into his hand. He glared at the Elders and placed the box inside his shirt, then said:

-It is only an Immortal Emperor Life Treasure; there is no need to be so alarmed.

The elders of the Nine Saint Demon Gate were shocked, due to two reasons. The first was because Li Qiye only clapped his hands three times, then the ancient box immediately flew in this hands, this event was too strange. It also happened way too quickly, they couldn't do anything but to watch and be curious about what was inside the box. Second, in the mouth of Li Qiye, an Immortal Emperor Life Treasure became something unimportant. This was an Immortal Emperor Life Treasure, everyone knew what this represented, but in the words of Li Qiye, it was like the clouds in the sky, causing others to be shocked.

As the Elders were still adjusting to the event, Li Qiye had already left the cave. The Elders immediately accounted for all the treasures and began preparing them to be stored in the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

It took three days for them to accomplish the task. Yu He, once again, had to carry Li Qiye on his back. However, this time, he was no longer ashamed or angry; he knew the importance of Li Qiye to the sect.

In the Sky Chamber, all the Elders were present; only Demon Emperor Lun Ri was not there in person. When Li Qiye sat in his chair, Lun Ri's voice appeared in the chamber.

-I am still in the midst of my isolated meditation; it is unfortunate that I cannot meet you.

Although powerful and influential, Demon Emperor Lun Ri, was very courteous towards this thirteen year old boy.

-We still have a lot of time, there is no need to rush.

Li Qiye calmly answered.

Demon Emperor Lun Ri was silent for a moment, and then he requested:

-Young master Li, would you be willing to stay at the Nine Saint Demon Gate? Whatever the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect can offer you, we can also do the same!

The Elders were not surprised by the Emperor words; it was as if they had already discussed this situation.

This proposition made Li Qiye contemplate for a little while. The Nine Saint Demon Gate definitely had a big advantage over the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; many times over, even. Any cultivators, especially younger ones, would pick the Nine Saint Demon Gate without a doubt.

-Thank you for your kind intention. However, I feel a fateful connection to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; if I currently am the Prime Disciple, then I will forever be a disciple of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

Li Qiye had too many emotional attachments to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; even if he did not like all the Sect Masters, especially Min Ren's first disciple. This was why, after Immortal Emperor Min Ren passed away, he never returned to the sect.

The key component for his decision was that he wanted to rebuild the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. If he did not choose the Heaven Protector Palace, then it was even more unlikely that he would choose the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

(TL: Heaven Protector Palace was in chapter 1; it is the city of the Black Dragon King.)

-Hmmp, it is only the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; how can it compare to the Nine Saint Demon Gate?!

An Elder was unhappy with the response, and he coldly exclaimed.

Many people wanted to join the Nine Saint Demon Gate since it was the most powerful sect in the Old Ox country. However, today, with the Demon Emperor's personal invitation, it was rejected by Li Qiye. He was not giving them any face.

Li Qiye smirkingly responded:

-A true peerless master will not care whether a sect is strong or weak; true apex does not care whether one came from a peasant house or the royal palace!

This answer made the Elder bite his tongue because it was such a natural response with simple words; yet, it exuded confidence and strength.

Everyone stared at this thirteen year old boy who just spoke a line that contained the wisdom and willpower needed for one to reach the apex.

Chapter 23 : Nine Saint Princess (1)

Seeing that the Elders were still contemplating about his words, Li Qiye softly spoke:

-If the business here is concluded, then let your prime descendant come out and meet me. No matter how heaven defying a genius is, they have nothing to brag about in front of me!

This thirteen year old boy kept saying outrageous things; however, it seemed natural when it was he who was the one speaking – like it was a matter of fact.

Demon Emperor Lun Ri gave his heavenly order:

-Shuang'er, come out and meet young master Li.

When prime descendant Li Shuangyan appeared in the Sky Chamber, her beauty brightened the place; a peerless beauty in this generation that people could not stop offering praises to.

This was a girl around the age of eighteen. Her features resembled a masterpiece painting; her thinly plucked eyebrows were arched perfectly around her shining crescent eyes. Her charming little crimson lips accentuated her alluring face. However, her expression was as cold as ice and arrogance could be contrived from the aura between her eyebrows and her pure white robe.

Li Shuangyan was the prime descendant of the Nine Saint Demon Gate as well as the number one beauty in Old Ox country. Not only that, her aptitude and cultivation level match her peerless looks as well.

Such a child blessed by the heavens, it would be natural for her not wanting to be wed to a person that only had a mortal Physique, mortal Life Wheel, and mortal Fate Palace. Plus, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had already gone downhill, his position as the Prime Disciple was meaningless.

Li Qiye wasn't overly surprised by the peerless beauty and pride-worthy talents of Li Shuangyan. As he floated through the endless currents of time, he had seen many beauties. When it came to talents and beauty, how many women could compare to Immortal Emperor Xiu Shu and Immortal Emperor Bing Yu?

After taking a close look at Li Shuangyan, Li Qiye nodded his head.

-Not too bad.

Li Shuangyan had a favorable opinion of Li Qiye after his first sentence, but the second enraged her. Li Qiye continued his thought:

-She is still a bit lacking to be my wife. Saint Fate Palace is also moderately acceptable. I am currently lacking a sword maid; you can be my sword maid then.

-You!

Not only Li Shuangyan, but the Elders were enraged as well. Li Shuangyan was not only the prime descendant, but she was also their pride. The whole Nine Saint Demon Gate put their hopes onto her. However, today, Li Qiye dared to arrogantly announce that he wanted her to be his sword slave; this was a complete slap to the face for them.

Not waiting for their retorts, Li Qiye slowly continued:

-I don't like to force anyone. Think over it carefully; if you agree, then you can find me at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

He stopped and stared at Li Shuangyan.

After hearing his words, she was shakingly maddened. Everywhere she went, she was the moon surrounded by the stars. Young geniuses that wanted to marry her could form a waiting line from the east to the west of Old Ox country.

However, right now, a boy that had not grown hair dared to presumptuously ask her to be his sword maid? The boy looks very cute on the outside but in Li Shuangyan's eyes, he was extremely unlikable.

-You are being too arrogant!

The Elders exclaimed. A descendant of the Nine Saint Demon Gate was only worthy of being a sword maid? The boy was clearly trying to humiliate the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

-It is up to you to take a chance. I have given you the opportunity; whether you can grasp it or not will depend on your fate.

Li Qiye ignored the Elders, took one last glance at Li Shuangyan, and then left.

Li Shuangyan's icy expression was overtaken by red anger, and her milky breasts bounced from heavy breathing. She had met many arrogant people, but someone like Li Qiye was the first. The worst thing was that he was only thirteen. She was five years older than him, yet he dared to act that way in front of her. People say children are cute, but Li Qiye was anything but cute in Li Shuangyan's eyes.

-Your highness, he dared to disrespect us like this; we can't easily forgive him!

An Elder raged indignantly.

Demon Emperor Lun Ri quietly answered:

-A true dragon will fly to the nine heavens; a godly phoenix will sweep the nine worlds. A dragon or a phoenix, my eyes are eager to see!

After coming back to his guest house, Nan Huai Ren quickly ran over and asked:

-Senior, how is your marriage with princess Li?

Protector Mo was also curious. He also knew that the Nine Saint Demon Gate highly valued Li Qiye; there was a high chance that this arranged marriage would be successful.

Today, when the Nine Saint Demon Gate formally invited Li Qiye, he thought chances were that they wanted to talk about the marriage.

-What marriage?

Li Qiye stared at Nan Huai Ren and said:

-I never said I was going to marry her. If she was willing, I would take her in as a maid.

-Mai... Mai... Mai... Maid!

Nan Huai Ren started stuttering; Li Qiye's words had shocked him.

-You were truly confused!

If this was before, he would be reprimanding Li Qiye. However, now, when he was standing in front of him, he felt that his position was naturally lower. Protector Mo didn't dare to scold him from the perspective of a senior.

-She is only a girl, no need to be so terrified.

Li Qiye essentially didn't mind. Li Shuangyan was indeed worthy of his tutelage; however, when compared to Immortal Emperor Bing Yu, she was quite lacking.

Afterwards, Li Qiye had finally completed his blood rite with the four statues. With this done, this trip had been a complete success, so he wanted to return to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

During this time, the Elders did not show their face; same for Li Shuangyan. Li Qiye did not really care for what they were planning.

-If we return, what do we report on this?

Before the departure, Protector Mo hesitantly asked Li Qiye.

Li Qiye glanced back and smiled:

-This depends on your choice; do you want to be on my side or

the Elders'?

These were simple words, but they scared Protector Mo. He was not a dumb person; to become a Protector, he had to surpass many difficulties and encounters.

Nan Huai Ren couldn't help but stare at his master. He was even more wily than Protector Mo and he knew how to pick the opportunity and read people's intentions.

Their positions in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect couldn't be considered low. One was a hall master, and the other was one of the twelve Protectors. Protector Mo was only below the Elders and the Sect Master. If he was to join a new disciple, anyone would say that was an unwise decision.

Protector Mo hadn't responded yet, but Nan Huai Ren saw the light in this moment. He saw a new door opening right in front of him.

-Master!

Nan Huai Ren took a deep breath and reminded Protector Mo.

Protector Mo's heart was swaying. As his master, how could he not know what his disciple's thoughts were? However, this was such an unbelievable story; he, as a Protector, having to be under the command of a new disciple? This was crazy!

-Whatever you say, I will immediately do just that!

In the end, Protector Mo, heavily so, made the most important decision of his life at that moment; one that would carry special significance.

Protector Mo thought he was becoming senile; he couldn't believe he had just become an underling to a new disciple. Not only that, he had to hide the many events that had happened, recently.

Chapter 24 : Nine Saint Princess (2)

If this was brought to light, it would be an act of traitorous treason against the sect. Only a crazy person or a fool would do such a thing. Protector Mo felt like he belonged to one of those two groups. However, his intuition told him that in the future, they would have unlimited potential if they were to follow this thirteen year old boy. However, in the end, this was only based on intuition.

Nan Huai Ren's heart was startled as well. This was a very significant life choice, and his master had already chosen his destiny. Nan Huai Ren knew what his answer would be:

-With just one word from senior, and I will jump through any fire and water without hesitation!

Nan Huai Ren said in an utmost and serious manner after heavy inhaling.

Before, when he called Li Qiye "senior", it had a different meaning. It was because it was part of the sect's custom. Now, the word "senior" had a different connotation.

A thirteen year old almost turned the Nine Saint Demon Gate upside down, he dared to underestimate the Elders that were crowned Royal Nobles, and he was able to speak calmly in front of the Demon Emperor! Other people would think Li Qiye was too arrogant, or he did not know his own strength; however, that was

because they did not see him traversing the Chaotic Heart Forest and killing Protector Hua and his disciple. Nan Huai Ren understood that other people's perception of Li Qiye was completely inaccurate.

Li Qiye, as the Prime Disciple of Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, dared to kill a Protector and asked for the Nine Saint Demon Gate's princess to be a maid. He had already planned everything before stepping into the Nine Saint Demon Gate, knowing that he could walk out unscathed.

Nan Huai Ren was very smart, and he thought about it carefully. Even if he tried his hardest his whole life, his peak would be becoming an Elder for the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Maybe Li Qiye's appearance would change his destiny.

Seeing these two join his ranks, Li Qiye nodded his head and boldly announced:

-One day, you two will understand how wise of a decision you have made today.

-What should we report when we return to the sect?

Protector Mo prudently asked. The events linked to the trial and marriage have too much significance; he did not know what was okay to say.

Li Qiye smiled at Protector Mo and answered:

-If Elder Yun wants to speak with you, then in my opinion, you should do the following...

What Li Qiye told him to do made Protector Mo feel uneasy. Before their departure, the First Elder of the Nine Saint Demon Gate had met him and asked that the story regarding the Heavenly Guardians be kept a secret. At that moment, Protector Mo had not agreed to the request.

-I understand.

Protector Mo knew what he should and shouldn't say as long as the chosen rhetoric benefitted him and Li Qiye.

Finally, the three of them left the Nine Saint Demon Gate. Grand Protector Yu He personally went to see them off. In recent times, no one from the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had ever received such an honor.

The gateway was opened, and the portal between the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and Nine Saint Demon Gate activated. Finally, the group of three had returned home. After leaving the temple, they took a deep breath and basked in the heavenly spirits of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; they thought about the events that transpired and felt like they had just woken up from a dream.

Returning to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, as the one who was leading the trip for the trial between the two sects, Protector Mo immediately went to meet the Six Elders to give his report. Li Qiye went back to his mountain peak.

Li Qiye stood quietly on top of his peak, overlooking the entirety of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. He remembered when Immortal Emperor Min Ren was still alive; the area of the sect spanned a million miles, and its refined energy was as expansive as the ocean.

Now, not only had the area governed by the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect decreased, but its refined energy from the surroundings was slowly drying. Anyone standing in this land would feel that the world essence of the sect had become very thin.

Today, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was like a flickering candle in the wind or an elderly man that could meet his end at any moment.

Li Qiye sighed in his heart. He did not pick the Heaven Protector Palace or the War God Temple; not even the Nine Saint Demon Gate. He ultimately chose the ever declining Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

As aforementioned, he did not like the previous Sect Masters of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. That year, he hoped that Min Ren would pick a different disciple to become the next Sect Master, even when this disciple's talents were not as strong as the first

disciple. Li Qiye valued him greatly for his character instead. Unfortunately, after he woke up from his deep slumber, he found that the first disciple had become the new Sect Master and proclaimed his sect to be the traditional orthodox sect.

Li Qiye had never liked the type of people who considered themselves as the only ones who were orthodox, which was why he had never returned to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect or cared about its ups and downs.

However, in this era, where he had regained his true body, it was fateful that the first person he met was San Gui Ye from the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Li Qiye had single-handedly taught Min Ren; in a sense, he was the true creator of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. He was confident that he could reignite its old glory. One day, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, under his command, would sweep through the heavens and earth, reigning over the Nine Worlds.

Li Qiye was so lost in his thoughts that he did not notice Nan Huai Ren's arrival.

-Senior, the Elders wish to see you.

Nan Huai Ren waited until Li Qiye was finished contemplating before he spoke.

Li Qiye slightly nodded his head and followed Nan Huai Ren into the Grand Chamber. The Six Elders had gathered there beforehand, and all of them had their eyes set on Li Qiye.

The atmosphere in the Grand Chamber suddenly became strangely dignified and calm. Everyone had their own thoughts.

The Six Elders previously had heard Protector Mo's report on the events regarding the trials, but Protector Mo did not reveal everything. He concentrated on Li Qiye's passing through the Chaotic Heart Forest, he purposely left the fight with Xu Hui intentionally vague, he did not mention the Serpent Punishing Stick, or Li Qiye's control of the four Heavenly Guardians. In the end, he even concluded that Li Qiye's victory over Xu Hui was pure luck.

-You have successfully passed the trial?

The First Elder formally asked Li Qiye. The truth was, the Six Elders did not have any confidence regarding this arranged marriage, but the impossible had happened. Li Qiye passed the trial, but the more surprising detail was that he could go through the Chaotic Heart Forest.

-Honorable Elder, that is right! It seems like I should be getting the rewards promised to me, yes?

Li Qiye ignored the serious atmosphere in the chamber, and exclaimed:

-Of course there will be rewards, but I need you to explain one thing.

First Elder inquired:

-From what I've heard, Xu Hui was a renown young disciple from the Nine Saint Demon Gate. His cultivation was the same as a sectional leader in our sect. You just joined our sect and had never cultivated before, how did you manage to defeat him?

-Honorable Elder, Merit Laws are complex; martial arts are simple. I practiced the "Invisible Dual Blade" technique in a strange manner; as long as the opponent revealed a weakness in their defense, he will immediately receive a death blow. When it comes to a life and death battle, the brave person will win.

Li Qiye calmly answered.

-Nonsense!

An Elder named Xiong suddenly yelled and coldly continued:

-A mortal proclaiming that he had killed a Heaven's Mandate cultivator through sheer techniques is ridiculous.

This Elder Xiong before had supported Li Qiye; however, today, he spoke coldly, and he was even unhappy; the before and after was like the sky against the depths.

(Nahct: This is another proverb, comparing the two great

extremes.)

Li Qiye looked at Elder Xiong and spoke slowly:

-Dear Elder, I had only spoken the truth. What other people can't do does not mean that I can't as well.

He then looked at the remaining Elders in the room:

-Dear Elders, today, I am a hero from the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. If the Elders truly think that I had cheated in some way, then you guys can question the people who saw it with their own eyes; people like Protector Mo or the people of the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

-All of the Elders know, in your hearts, that this trip to the Nine Saint Demon Gate was dangerously ominous. By going to the Nine Saint Demon Gate, we were essentially going to our own demise. However, because of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect's reputation, even if I were to lose my life, I would have done the same again. Today, I come back as a hero. What is the reasoning behind your suspicions of me? This is how you treat a hero? If this is the reality, then the people's hearts will become cold; who will want to sacrifice themselves for the sect anymore?

Li Qiye paused a moment and then he went on:

-Before our departure, we had an agreement; do you honorable Elders wish to retract your words? If that is the case, then I can

only say my joining of this sect was a mistake. Our Cleansing Incense Ancient Act is of Immortal Emperor lineage for many era; if the elders are not true to their words, then how can we remained trustworthy as a sect?

-Whether our sect is trustworthy or not, it is not up to you to comment.

An Elder loudly yelled.

Li Qiye ignored the reaction of this Elder and kept going on:

-I risked my life going into the Nine Saint Demon Gate and came out with a complete success. If the Elders carried out the promise from that day without accusing me of lying, I would not be criticizing. Otherwise, I will cry 'unfair' because the success of this trip was potentially traded with my life.

Finished speaking, Li Qiye coldly glared at the Six Elders.

-You have said too much!

At this moment, an Elder coughed. His expression contained a little bit of shame.

The First Elder started speaking:

-Qi Ye, it is not that we wanted to berate you; the thing is, this

whole thing is just a little strange. Let's set aside the Xu Hui thing; I want to hear how you successfully passed the Chaotic Heart Forest.

The First Elder's eyes brightened up and stared at Li Qiye as if he wanted to see through the little boy.

Chapter 25 : Heavenly Crow Peak (1)

Right now, not only just the First Elder, but the rest were also trying to read Li Qiye's mind. If killing Xu Hui could be attributed to luck, then it was also due to his arrogance that Li Qiye was able to sneak an attack on him. Fate was unpredictable, and a person could be lucky sometimes.

However, the Chaotic Heart Forest was not like that at all. The Six Elders were aware that during the last one hundred thousand years, no one from the young generation had successfully passed through all of the levels, unless that person was of the Virtuous Paragon level.

Being pressured by the Six Elders' gazes, Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren were sweating in place of Li Qiye.

-Honorable Elders, the Chaotic Heart Forest was meant as a way to test the minds of those who have entered. It can't be consider a cultivation strength test. As long as one's spiritual willpower is enough, then he can cross through the whole forest; it has nothing to do with one's cultivation.

Li Qiye responded to the First Elder's question.

-Hmmmph, your mortal spiritual willpower is stronger than a Royal Noble's?

Elder Xiong unhappily exclaimed.

Li Qiye furrowed his brows, and said:

-Elder, spiritual power has nothing to do with cultivation strength. A high cultivation achievement does not equate to strong willpower. Throughout the ages, plenty of Enlightened Beings and Heavenly Emperors, due to their unstable willpower, have suffered a pitiful death from Qigong Deviation.

(TL: I will use Qigong Deviation here. The literal translation is “bursting into fire and joining the demons”)

-This thing... who doesn't know how high the sky is or the range of the earth? A person like you dares to criticize Enlightened Beings and Heavenly Emperors?

Elder Xiong quietly spoke.

Li Qiye impatiently said:

-I've only spoken the truth. If the Elders want to keep on thinking that I am lying, then you can go to the Nine Saint Demon Gate and verify the truth!

Seeing Li Qiye losing his patience, Elder Xiong rolled his eyes and a storm was about to brew, but the First Elder coughed and interjected:

-We'll let this go as well. How about your marriage with Princess Li?

Even though they weren't content with his explanations regarding Xu Hui and the Chaotic Heart Forest, the most important thing was the marriage. The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and the Nine Saint Demon Gate needed to be in laws! The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect needed a strong backing like Nine Saint Demon Gate.

-This matter you will have to ask the Nine Saint Demon Gate; it is not my decision.

Li Qiye no longer wanted to continue this conversation, and he abruptly answered:

-The discussion concludes here!

The First Elder had no choice but to give up. They couldn't force Li Shuangyan to marry Li Qiye; they lacked the strength to negotiate with the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

The First Elder continued:

-You have done a great deed for the sect. According to our prior agreement, anything that was promised will be given to you...

-Brother Gu...

Elder Xiong wanted to interject, but the First Elder softly

gestured with his sleeves, telling Elder Xiong to be quiet.

The First Elder stared at Li Qiye and continued:

-First, once you have reached the stage of Yun Physique, we will grant you an King Grade medicinal paste. Second, for Physique, Life Wheel, and Fate Palace techniques; you will get to pick one cultivation method for each of the three. Of course, you can also pick different techniques, but you may pick no more than three manuals. Are you satisfied with this?

-That is fine! However, I still have one more request.

Li Qiye nodded his head.

The First Elder responded:

-You may, tell us.

-I still need a weapon, so I want to pick a Life Treasure or a True Treasure!

Li Qiye replied.

The First Elder agreed:

-Fine. From the Life Treasures, True Treasures, and Life Wheel

Treasures below the third floor, you can pick any of them.

-My gratitude, Elder.

Li Qiye respectfully gestured his hands, and then turned around to leave.

-Huai Ren, you go with Qi Ye!

The First Elder commanded Nan Huai Ren after Li Qiye had left.

After Li Qiye's departure, Elder Xiong proclaimed:

-Brother Gu, I'm afraid this boy is problematic. He might be a spy sent from the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

-How can you say that brother Cao Xiong?

A different Elder slowly shook his head and disagreed:

-Personally, I don't think that is the case. The Nine Saint Demon Gate currently is many times stronger than we are. They are reigning over the Old Ox country and are already a gigantic monster; why would they need to have a spy in our sect?

-Brother Sun speaks with reason.

An Elder agreed:

-The Nine Saint Demon Gate has no need to be devious against us.

-That is not for certain; maybe the Nine Saint Demon Gate covets our Emperor Merit Laws or even our Heaven's Will Merit Laws.

Elder Xiong spoke with a grave manner.

After hearing these words, the rest of the five Elders stared at each other.

-I don't think that would be necessary.

Fourth Elder Sun shook his head and said:

-Li Qiye had the Cleansing Incense Ancient Order. If he wanted our Emperor Merit Laws, he only needed to open his mouth and we couldn't say no. Take a step back; if the Nine Saint Demon Gate truly wanted our Emperor Merit Laws, who here could stop Demon Emperor Lun Ri in our sect?

This resonated with the rest of the Elders, and they contemplated silently. If the Nine Saint Demon Gate truly wanted the Emperor Merit Laws, then they could annihilate all of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. If Demon Emperor Lun Ri personally took action, no one in the sect could stop him. In reality, even the Elders of the Nine Saint Demon Gate would have been enough.

-Brother Gu, I feel like we cannot be careless; precautions are necessary.

In the end, Elder Xiong quietly stated:

-This has to be reported to the Sect Master!

The First Elder formally announced; he didn't show his feelings regarding the topic.

-So be it!

Elder Xiong slightly scowled; his voice contained unfavorable opinions regarding the Sect Master.

-The Elders think you are a spy from the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

After leaving the chamber, Nan Huai Ren whispered to Li Qiye. He was a sharp person; his best discipline was predicting the thoughts of other people; of course, he knew what the Six Elders were thinking.

-They can think whatever they want.

Li Qiye only smiled. The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect's weakening was not without reasons. Although the six are Elders, their cultivation couldn't be higher than Royal Nobles. More importantly, they couldn't work independently and make decisive decisions.

Regarding this topic, Li Qiye asked:

-What about Elder Xiong?

That day, when he wanted to be the Prime Disciple, Elder Xiong was supporting him. However, his behavior today was contrasting the past.

-Be careful of Elder Xiong.

Nan Huai Ren looked left and right, then he whispered:

-Second Elder Cao Xiong was competing for the Sect Master position with the current Sect Master, but he failed. Later on, he wanted his disciple, He Jing Jian, to become the Prime Disciple, but he was rejected by the Sect Master. Regarding the Sect Master position, he had always wanted it. Even if he couldn't climb to the position, he would wish for his disciple to become the Sect Master. Plus, Cao Xiong's backing included the guest masters.

-I understand. If I was a piece of trash, then I couldn't become the Sect Master; even if I were the Prime Disciple. If I have relations with Li Shuangyan, then it is another matter.

Li Qiye understood Elder Xiong's contrasting intentions.

Nan Huai Ren nodded his head and added:

-Elder Xiong has always paid attention to the Sect Master; he feared that the Sect Master would take in a genius Prime Disciple. Due to the Prime Disciple seat having always been empty, he had discussed with the Elders numerous times about promoting He Jing Jian. However, the Sect Master has always declined.

-Well, where is the Sect Master?

Li Qiye felt it was strange that after him joining the sect, he had never met the Sect Master, Su Yong Huang.

Nan Huai Ren didn't know the answer:

-Sect Master had never stayed within the sect. She had always cultivated outside; in reality, I've only met her a couple of times.

Nan Huai Ren started whispering because he saw people nearby:

-There is a rumor within the sect. It is that Sect Master was forced to leave by the Elders. No one knew the specifics. In short, when the Sect Master left the sect, she also brought along some Protectors and Leaders as well.

Li Qiye stroke his chin, and conjectured:

-From this, it seems like there are a lot of internal fighting within the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. It appears that the current situation of the sect is a lot more complicated than I first thought.

-Some say there are four factions.

Nan Huai Ren answered:

-There are a number of Protectors and Leaders with the Sect Master. Some Leaders are with Elder Xiong, and they hope that Elder Xiong will become the Sect Master. Another group belongs to the First Elder while the remaining four Elders have always been neutral.

-The First Elder also wants to be the Sect Master?

Li Qiye inquired.

Nan Huai Ren shook his head:

-No one knows what the First Elder is thinking. He had not supported the Sect Master completely, but he also had never competed for the role. However, his influence is great in the sect. He controls the disciplinary squad in the sect and is very strict. Thus, the majority of the disciples are scared of him.

From Nan Huai Ren's words, Li Qiye had a grasp of the current situation of the sect. Thinking about it, Li Qiye lightly chuckled and did not speak on it anymore.

Heavenly Crow Peak was an important location of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Some even said that it was a forbidden ground. Without permission from the Sect Master or the Elders, no disciple could enter the peak.

Also, the Heavenly Crow Peak was the highest mountain in all of the sect. On top of it was a triangular old building. In here lies all the manuals, techniques, life treasures, jewels, metals, and everything valuable of the sect.

The mountain was heavily fortified. There were patrols every three steps as well as a defense post every five; even a mosquito wouldn't be able to get through. The entirety of the peak was also protected by the elite disciples and two rotating Elders of the sect.

To the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, the Heavenly Crow Peak was too important. The most valuable things of the sect were all located on this mountain.

In addition, there was also a legend regarding the Heavenly Crow Peak. It was said that before Immortal Emperor Min Ren's ascension, he was blessed by the will of the heavens. The heavens sent him a godly crow from the sky. It arrived at the top of this peak, and Min Ren was taught by this crow. This was why the

Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was situated around this mountain.

Chapter 26 : Heavenly Crow Peak (2)

Li Qiye brightly smiled after hearing Nan Huai Ren's tale regarding the origin of the Heavenly Crow Peak. The name, simply put, was coined by Min Ren's generals to commemorate him.

The Ancient Triangular School on top of the peak was not too great in size, but the whole building was pure black; it was as if it was crafted with black steel and had a heavy feeling to it. In reality, no one in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect knew what the building was made out of.

Once Li Qiye and Nan Huai Ren had arrived in front of the black building, Li Qiye's heart was shaken. Many years had passed, but this building still stood strong; its secret origin exceeded the imaginations of contemporaries.

During his moments of reminiscing, his eyes were attracted to a big shrine in front of the black building. From his memories, this shrine had not existed here during the time when the black building was established.

In front of the shrine, a man with great stature could be found sitting down in a cultivating position. One couldn't guess his age because of his long, messy hair and untrimmed beard that covered his entire face. There were weeds and grass that had grown around his body; who knows how long the man had been sitting there?

The eyes of the man remained shut; if it wasn't for his regular

and consistent breathing, people would have thought that this was a dried up corpse.

However, the most surprising thing was that his arms and legs were constrained by huge, metal chains. Other people may not know, but Li Qiye recognized that these chains were made from Black Spider Consolidated Steel, an extremely rare metal of immortal grade.

What kind of person would be worthy of having chains made from Black Spider steel? Not only that, it seemed that the man in front of him was willing to be imprisoned instead of being forced.

Seeing Li Qiye's interest towards the man in front of the shrine, Nan Huai Ren softly whispered:

-This is the protector of the triangular building; no one knows his background or origin.

-Why is he chained there?

Li Qiye questioned while staring at the man.

Nan Huai Ren shook his head and responded:

-No one knows; I'm afraid no one in the entire sect knows the answer to that question. It is said that he had been chained there for a long time; my master doesn't even know why. Some say that he was a disciple of the sect; however, he had committed a grave

offense, and that is why he is chained there.

Li Qiye tilted his head and stopped the conversation. He instead, went into the triangular building with Nan Huai Ren.

Once they were in the building, the chained man opened his eyes. The ensuing gaze possessed an extremely fearful atmosphere; it was as if he could see through the infinity and tear open the primordial cosmos. This gaze would make Royal Nobles and Enlightened Beings tremble with fear. However, he then closed his eyes; it was like nothing had happened.

From an outside view, the triangular building appeared to be small. However, once inside, there was a big, open area ranging many hundreds of acres. Three majestic pagodas were built together closely to form this triangular formation. Without a trace of doubt, this building was built and crafted with an unrivaled technique for it to have its own magical space.

-Over here is the Scripture Library, that one is the Weapon Armory, and over there is the Treasure House. These three pagodas of the triangular building are divided into three sections, each for techniques, weapons, and treasures.

After entering the building, Nan Huai Ren explained:

-Each pagoda will have an assigned protector. Any student who wants an item would have to pass through the protector's inspection.

Here, he asked Li Qiye:

-Where does senior want to go first?

-Let us start at the Scripture Library.

Li Qiye quickly glanced over the three pagodas and made his decision.

There were eight inner disciples protecting the Scripture Library alongside a protector. Once Nan Huai Ren and Li Qiye showed them the Elder's order, they were immediately allowed to enter.

Then, came the indescribable feeling that arose from entering the majestic library. Inside, one couldn't see the end of the sections. The incomparable vastness of this library was tantamount to the old glory days of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

There were quite a few disciples present here, that were searching for suitable techniques. Nan Huai Ren was a social person, thus, he went to make conversations with each of the disciples.

Li Qiye was different; he was new, and the disciples here didn't like him in the first place. Even though the sect had fallen, it was still of Immortal Emperor lineage; it was not normal for a mortal to be accepted into the sect, let alone becoming the Prime Disciple.

The more outrageous thing was that he was considered to be a

piece of trash with a Mortal Physique, a Mortal Life Wheel, and a Mortal Fate Palace. The Prime Disciple should be the strongest of all and respected by his peers. This position was coveted by many, who had spent their time and talents contributing to the sect. However, they were not chosen by the Sect Master. This, rightfully infuriated the disciples; to see someone so undeserving to occupy the position.

Even though they didn't dare to question the Elder's decision, they were definitely not going to be courteous to Li Qiye.

-That person is Li Qiye.

A disciple looked at Li Qiye from top to bottom; it was as if he was looking at a monster. In reality, many people wanted to steal the Cleansing Incense Ancient Order, even within the sect, but no one had ever been successful. However, all of a sudden, that old man decided to give such a treasure to Li Qiye; no one could make heads or tails out of this.

-That's him. I heard he invited San Gui Ye to the brothel for ten days and ten nights.

A disciple presumptuously added.

A disciple acted as if he knew more about this situation and shook his head:

-You are incorrect; it wasn't just ten days and ten nights. He

bought the old man a pair of twins who were still virgins that had only recently joined the brothel. He bought them for the next three years to service the old man; this was why that perverted geezer agreed to give him the Order.

Some stories slowly became more and more embellished. One person even said that Li Qiye paid the brothel to service San Gui Ye for the next ten years; which allowed him to do whatever deeds he wanted to do. Although there were minor differences, the main points of the topics all revolved around Li Qiye using an underhanded method to fool San Gui Ye for the sake of obtaining the order.

Chapter 27 : Revolving Crescent Sun

Merit Law (1)

-Hmmp, I can't believe the Elders would let such a shameless piece of trash become the Prime Disciple. This kid is truly a disgrace of our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

A student yelled out.

Another student thought something was strange and inquired:

-Isn't he currently going through the trial at the Nine Saint Demon Gate? Why is he back so early?

-Hah, of course the trial was a failure. How could such a person become the partner of the Nine Saint Demon Gate princess. It is like dreaming during the day; clearly, he is a frog wanting to eat swan's meat.

Another student pompously commented.

The Six Elders haven't announced Li Qiye's success in the trial because they haven't yet understood the Nine Saint Demon Gate's intentions behind the order. Without their agreement, the Elders didn't dare to announce the marriage between Li Qiye and Li Shuangyan. If Li Shuangyan actually didn't agree to the wedding, and they had announced it; it would be a blur on her purity, and such an action could enrage the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

After hearing the comments from the other disciples in the sect, Nan Huai Ren was both embarrassed and indignant, but he couldn't reveal the secrets regarding what had actually occurred at the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

As for the victim of these negative remarks, Li Qiye himself was strolling, unaffected, through the library. He acted as if he didn't hear a single word; he continued on to calmly look through the many manuals on the shelves, one by one.

Tiger's Power law, Heavenly Cocoon Life technique, Revolving Moon law, Iron Ox Emperor Physique... Each of these manuals were placed on the shelves. Some were the original versions while some were copied by hand. Others were restored from ruined manuals, and some were inscribed on stone tablets. There were manuals for all purposes: from physique building techniques to longevity laws to increase blood energy as well as cultivational methods to build the Fate Palace...

-There are many different manuals here, collected by many generations of paragons; some were even created by them. The others were taken from other sects or different inheritances.

Nan Huai Ren spoke to Li Qiye:

-If senior wants an Emperor level manual, senior would have to go up to the third level. The manuals in the first level are the elementary techniques, anyone can learn these. The second level has manuals meant for disciples with contributions to the sect or

the different sectional leaders.

Li Qiye was not in a rush; he continued on skimming the different manuals, but he already had some in mind. He started from the first level all the way to level three. During the way, he saw one or two Emperor level manuals, but they were not formidable ones.

During this process, he found out one thing. The higher up he went, the shelves started to contain less manuals. Some of the shelves were classified, but they did not have any manuals. This meant that there used to be scrolls here, but they were now gone.

-There is no way that these manuals were given or lent away?

Li Qiye looked around on the third level and inquired.

Nan Huai Ren shook his head:

-I heard that we have lost a numerous amount of manuals.

Here, he looked around for a moment, then whispered:

-My master told me, the truth is, our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect does not have that many Emperor manuals left. The most crucial ones are at the end of this building, but there are only around three to five left. If we lose these manuals, then we would be an Immortal Emperor sect only in title.

After Min Ren's ascension, he spent most of his life creating numerous Emperor level techniques and Merit Laws. Some of his manuals had the abilities to connect with the heavens; there were rumors that he even left behind Heaven's Will Forbidden Laws.

-Did other people ransack us?

Li Qiye naturally knew how many Emperor level manuals the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had. It didn't only contain the ones that Min Ren had created, but also those that Li Qiye himself personally stole from other people. Some dated back to the Desolate Era, and some were from the hands of Heavenly Demons, Blood Tribes, Golem Races, High Elves, and Ancient Min... To sum it up, in short, Li Qiye had pillaged many secrets from the inhabitants of the Nine Worlds.

-I don't know the exact details of the ordeal. I heard that fifty thousand years ago, our genius ancestor lost a fight, and we suffered a great disaster. Another sky-shattering accident happened thirty thousand years ago, and we lost many manuals from that as well. Another rumor has it that some of our Emperor manuals were sealed in the last three levels by Grand Elder Mu; however, some said that the Heavenly God Sect took all of our manuals when they defeated us in the last thirty thousand years war.

-You are talking about Young Emperor Mu?

The words of Nan Huai Ren reminded Li Qiye of fifty thousand years ago, there was a great genius in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

-Yes, it was Grand Elder Mu.

When it came to Young Emperor Mu, Nan Huai Ren's blood boiled in pride; he passionately continued:

-From the legends, fifty thousand years ago, Grand Elder Mu had the greatest potential to become an Immortal Emperor in our sect after Immortal Emperor Min Ren. He was the strongest rival of Immortal Emperor Ta Kong. I heard that when Grand Elder Mu was competing with Immortal Emperor Ta Kong to win the Heaven's Will, he won three times and lost three times. Even with his heavenly aptitude, Immortal Emperor Ta Kong still lost three times to Grand Elder Mu. That year, we were at our strongest after the era of Immortal Emperor Min Ren. We were able to dominate all of the Mortal Emperor world, not just the Grand Middle Territory.

Nan Huai Ren couldn't stop speaking regarding Young Emperor Mu because he was the biggest pride of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect after Immortal Emperor Min Ren.

-But in the end, the one that had received the Heaven's Will was still Immortal Emperor Ta Kong.

Opposite of Nan Huai Ren's excitement, Li Qiye simply said.

Li Qiye's words were like a cold water bucket hitting the face of Nan Huai Ren. He suddenly lost his will to speak and dejectedly said:

-It was rumored that they had one last fight, and then Grand Elder Mu never appeared again. Some say that he died during the battle, others said that he met his origin inside the sect.

-What about the three middle levels, do they contain anything?

Li Qiye looked up and asked. He was only given the rights to the first three levels.

-Master said that he had been through there twice, but the amount of manuals there can be counted on one's fingers.

Li Qiye was silent. It seemed like the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was only a name; what kind of Immortal Emperor lineage only had a few Emperor level manuals? This was also part of why it started its decline.

Finally, Li Qiye, at the third level, chose an offensive technique manual, a Life Wheel technique in the second, and a bunch of different scrolls from the first.

Nan Huai Ren saw a total of one hundred and twenty different manuals, and he silently said:

-Senior, these manuals are just martial arts, and they are not worth mentioning. Anyone in the sect can look at them; do you want to change to something else?

-I have my own calculations.

Li Qiye shook his head.

Nan Huai Ren quickly gathered these techniques to check them out. Nan Huai Ren knew that Li Qiye was very methodical, and everything he did had a clear logic behind it.

When Li Qiye and Nan Huai Ren carried the numerous manuals to the front, the other disciples looked at him as if they saw the village fool. Even the disciples responsible for checking out looked at him weirdly.

-Elder said you could only pick three different manuals.

One of the disciples checked the order from Li Qiye again and said.

Li Qiye slowly answered:

-I know. I only picked one cultivation technique and one Life Wheel method, and the third I did not pick. As for these martial arts manuals, Huai Ren said that anyone could look at them. This includes me right?

The disciples looked around and ended their gaze at the protector in command, waiting for his decision.

They counted the different books.

-Total there are forty four specialized martial arts manuals, thirty six hybrid martial arts manuals, and forty body training manuals.

These martial arts, here, had no value even when compared to other martial art manuals. The disciples were surprised at Li Qiye's choices.

From the dust collected on these manuals, it was clear that no one had ever read them before.

The spectating disciples couldn't help but to start laughing at Li Qiye and his choosing more than one hundred martial arts manuals.

-The idiot can't tell what's good and bad. Even if you study all of the martial arts in the world, you will still only become an average person at best.

A student said in a condescending manner.

Another one joined the fray:

-Senior Wang, this is called knowing your own limits. Cultivational Merit Laws aren't meant for those with a Mortal Physique, Mortal Life Wheel, and Mortal Fate Palace. He knew that he wouldn't be able to cultivate to the foundation level in even ten

years, so he took a step back to learn martial arts instead!

Chapter 28 : Revolving Crescent Sun

Merit Law (2)

The Scripture Library had contained these martial arts manuals for a long time. However, it's just that, in the past, not many disciples chose to read these mortal manuals, let alone one hundred and twenty of them.

Li Qiye coldly glared at the laughing spectators. Nan Huai Ren, next to his side, was extremely worried for them. Other people did not know, but it was clear to him that Li Qiye was an executioner that killed people without blinking his eyes. Even Du Yuan Guang and Xu Hui were severed on the spot, these disciples are nothing.

A second generation disciple, with good intentions, politely told him:

-These martial art manuals, only look at them for fun; you shouldn't focus too heavily on them.

Li Qiye respectfully replied to this disciple:

-My first practiced technique was the "Invisible Dual Blade"; it was just a regular martial art, but its power was considerable. Maybe if I practice all of these manuals here, then I would become peerless in this world.

The good intention disciple shook his head, and said in a serious

tone:

-Martial arts is only a side road. If you want to learn, only pick one or two. Picking one hundred is a waste of your energy, and it will slow down your cultivation!

-Young uncle senior, he doesn't want to listen to your good advice. You should just ignore him; don't waste your breath.

(TL: I'm not sure of the english term for the younger brother of your master. I think it is young uncle senior, but I'm not sure.)

In other people's eyes, Li Qiye looked very foolish right now for wanting to practice martial art techniques.

Of course, if Li Qiye purposely wanted to read these manuals, then the good intentioned disciple wouldn't stop him. He continued the procedure for Li Qiye.

When Li Qiye gave him the second manual, this disciple nodded his head and said:

-Now this is right, you chose a decent cultivation manual: "Kun Peng's minor sixth form". "Kun Peng's minor sixth form" is an incomplete law originating from the Emperor law: "Kung Peng's Six Variants". If you successfully cultivate this technique, then maybe in the future, you would have the opportunity to learn the "Kung Pen's Six Variants"; it will mold a great basic foundation.

(TL: Kun Peng is a giant bird/fish from Chinese Daoist mythology, it is known for its power, size, and speed)

After hearing these words, the other disciples were envious and jealous. This was an Emperor law; even if it is only an incomplete version, its effect was still greater than a regular merit law. Even a Virtuous Paragon law couldn't compare to it.

-Why does he get to cultivate an Immortal law?

-Hmmp, he is only a useless person. Such an Immortal law... you shouldn't even dream of successfully completing it during this lifetime.

All of these students clamored, but they quickly shut their mouths seeing the glare of the protector nearby.

Li Qiye had the order of the Six Elders. Unless they wanted to question the Six Elders' decision, otherwise, the only thing they can do was be envious of Li Qiye.

Li Qiye took out the last manual. This manual was extremely ancient. It had survived through many generations, and no one knew what it was made out of to have such good, long lasting quality. It had been read many times without any signs of deterioration.

-Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law!

The disciple performing the check-out saw this manual. He looked at Li Qiye and then the protector.

Even the protector who saw this technique furrowed his brows:

-Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law...

The other disciples could only whisper among themselves now.

-It is another fool who wants to rush things. Cultivation, on this earth, who can rush it?

-Heh, he wants to be a genius after one night though.

-Even if he was to cultivate the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law, he wouldn't be unbeatable after just one night. Geniuses and trash are determined by the heavens, no matter what kind of methods a piece of trash used, he wouldn't be able to become a genius.

A student bitterly said.

-It is better to not cultivate this Merit Law, it will harm you in the end.

The protector shook his head:

-Even though the first stage of this Merit Law can help your cultivation speed, but, based on your Mortal Life Wheel, the best you can do is reach the Inner Longevity Stage. After that, you

cannot use this technique to reach the following level. We had a genius in the past that had a Saint Life Wheel; however, because he chose this technique, he couldn't cultivate past the Heaven's Primal stage; he ruined his dream of becoming an emperor.

Revolving Crescent Sun was notorious in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect because cultivators could quickly improve in its first stage. It used one's blood energy to increase one's cultivation speed; however, once that person had reached a particular stage, he couldn't continue. This is because he sacrificed his blood energy to increase his cultivation strength, so they became imbalanced. It rendered going to the next stage next to impossible.

This was why it was considered the fastest cultivation merit law, but its other name was the disabled merit law; many geniuses had tried it but all had failed.

-Thank you for your guidance, honorable protector. I know when to stop.

Li Qiye smiled.

Seeing that Li Qiye didn't want to listen, the protector closed his eyes. He didn't want to waste more energy on Li Qiye. If Li Qiye was a genius, one with great innate talents, then he would have stopped Li Qiye from choosing it for certain.

In the end, Li Qiye and Nan Huai Ren left the Scripture Library under the jeers of the other disciples back to his peak.

Once they've returned, the sun was already down. Li Qiye said:

-Tomorrow, we'll choose a treasure.

Nan Huai Ren agreed. He didn't know why Li Qiye chose so many techniques, but he didn't want to question Li Qiye's actions. He said:

-With so many manuals, tomorrow, I will ask the outer sector to give you a dimensional pouch; it will be more convenient for you.

Li Qiye nodded. Seeing that Nan Huai Ren was about to leave, he asked:

-What is the name of the second generation disciple at the library?

Nan Huai Ren answered:

-Qu Dao Li, he used to be a third generation disciple just like us. His innate talents are very good, and he was willing to stay at the Scripture Library; thus, he was promoted to a second generation disciple.

Li Qiye smiled without saying anything else, so Nan Huai Ren took his leave.

Li Qiye closed the door. He went to to get some pen and ink, and

he arranged the one hundred and twenty manuals in an order that no one else would understand.

With a serious expression in his face, he opened the first page of each manual and wrote one word from each of them, then he opened the second page...

Li Qiye was meticulous in each step; because, besides him, no one knew the sky shattering secret hidden in these manuals.

When asked what is the strongest cultivation manual in the world, anyone would without a doubt say Heaven's Will Secret Law. Every era, when an Immortal Emperor received the Heaven's Will, they would be able to create their own Heaven's Will Secret Law. It was a technique that communicated with the Heaven's Will. It connected one to the azure heaven, and its power was endless.

In this world, no one would be able to think of a technique that was more powerful than the Heaven's Will Secret Law, unless it was something from an extremely ancient era.

If there was indeed one, then it would be a Heavenly Scripture from the Nine Grand Heavenly Scriptures.

During the Desolate Era, there was a legend: before there were heavens and earth, in its infancy stage, the universe's primordial chaos arrived. From the primordial chaos, the grand beginning spawned. The grand beginning gave birth to the Nine Words, the Nine Words created the Nine Treasures, and from the Nine

Treasures came the Nine Scriptures.

(TL: Chinese's Origin myths and terminologies.)

The Heavenly Scriptures were the Nine Scriptures in the legend, but no one had ever seen the Nine Grand Heavenly Scriptures in the past.

However, Li Qiye had indeed seen the Nine Grand Heavenly Scriptures. In his crow form, he saw one of the Nine Scriptures, the Physique Scripture, during the Desolate Era. After rigorous planning, spilt blood, and one hundred thousand years later, he was able to obtain it.

Because of how powerful the Physique Scripture was, he was threatened and pressured by many powerful beings. Many people chased and tried to kill him; even cultivators of the Immortal Emperor level.

After owning the Physique Scripture, Li Qiye learned the mysterious secrets of the heavens from it. Because of the understanding of these mysterious truths, he was exceedingly powerful even without having to cultivate the scripture in his crow form.

Through this scripture, many Immortal Emperors, such as Tun Ri and Ba Mie, were all related to him. Of course, Min Ren was a given since he was personally groomed by Li Qiye.

Using Min Ren as an example, everyone in later generations thought that his Solar Immortal Physique was innate; his

descendants thought so as well.

(TL: Min means sun and ren means human; it matches his immortal physique)

Chapter 29 : Twelve Immortal Physiques

(1)

Solar Immortal Physique was one of the two Immortal Physiques; no one in this world could be born with an Immortal Physique. Immortal Emperor Min Ren's Solar Immortal Physique was from the Physique Scripture currently within the hands of Li Qiye.

Li Qiye knew that the Physique Scripture was craved by all, so he had it hidden. He was also afraid that he would lose it one day. He had to find a way to preserve it since his memories regarding it would be erased so that the Demon Heaven Grotto wouldn't get it.

In preparation for that day, he hid the mysterious truths of the Physique Scripture in the martial arts manuals that all cultivators look down upon. He separated it into three parts, hid them in three different types of martial arts manuals, spanning one hundred and twenty manuals containing ten thousand different techniques.

Li Qiye used a particular order that only he knew about to hide them in the manuals, so, even if someone knew where it was, they wouldn't be able to piece it together.

At that time, he separated the three types of martial arts into three different eras, so they had no relation with each other.

Within these three eras, he mass produced and separated them everywhere in all of the Nine Worlds, not just the Mortal Emperor World. There were at least a hundred thousand copies in each

world.

With the help of the other Immortal Emperors and the Medicine God, although he erased his memories of the techniques, the order of these martial arts manuals remained. From the past until now, no cultivator had read all one hundred and twenty manuals.

Li Qiye purposely left all one hundred and twenty manuals in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect so, if a disciple was able to discern this secret, he would be able to cultivate an Immortal Physique. Maybe then, the sect would have another Immortal Emperor or at least, a Virtuous Paragon with an Immortal Physique.

Unfortunately, no one would even look at these manuals, let alone taking the time to research them. This was why after Min Ren, there was no second person with an Immortal Physique.

Li Qiye spent the whole night copying the Physique Scripture from the manuals. After reading what he wrote, Li Qiye couldn't help but satisfyingly smile. As he read each word, his lost memories of the Scripture slowly appeared in his mind. Eventually, the entirety of the Scripture had been completed.

After remembering the whole thing, he burned his written copy. He knew the value of the Physique Scripture. If someone knew that he was in possession of it, there would be a calamity to endure. He could only hide it in his head.

The truth was that the original Physique Scripture had been hidden by Li Qiye, and no one else in the world knew where it was.

However, Li Qiye was not in a hurry to get it because the Scriptures were also related to another secret; they weren't just cultivational techniques. Afterward, Li Qiye rested for a little bit before the morning. Nan Huai Ren came early to the peak to meet Li Qiye.

-Senior, I'm afraid I can't go with you to the Weapon Armory today. The Elders told me to go report the events regarding the marriage to the Sect Master; I have to leave the sect.

Nan Huai Ren said.

Nan Huai Ren was valued by the Elders for his intelligence, so he was given an important mission.

-Go; I'm not in a rush for a weapon.

Li Qiye nodded slightly, he wanted to use this time to reorganize the techniques and methods inside his mind.

After Nan Huai Ren left, Li Qiye didn't continue sleeping. He took out the Kun Peng's Minor Sixth Form manual. It was highly regarded by the third generation disciples because it was still part of an Emperor merit law.

Each Immortal Emperor had always created formidable merit laws. Some were longevity cultivation methods that could increase one life's span and blood energy. Others were Fate Palace techniques meant for offensive and defensive potentials. Last were

the different ways to strengthen one's Physique. These three were the general types of merit laws that were crafted by Immortal Emperors; they also included Heaven's Will Secret Laws.

In his life, Min Ren had founded many different Emperor manuals, and Li Qiye was familiar with them; after all, he participated in the formation of these manuals.

During his last hibernation, his memories were erased by the Black Dragon King of Heaven Protector Palace, but he could still regain them.

Kun Peng's Minor Sixth Form was a subsidiary of the Emperor Merit Law "Kun Peng's Six Variants". It was the strongest Fate Palace Merit Law created by Min Ren.

Right now, Li Qiye didn't have access to the high level Emperor merit laws in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, so he didn't know if the Six Variants was still available. However, he could use the minor sixth form to regain his old memories regarding the actual Six Variants.

Slowly reading the minor sixth form, Li Qiye found that the manual only had six simple movements, not enough to be considered a legitimate Emperor merit law. But the Six Variants were derived from these six simple actions.

Li Qiye, in the past, had brought Min Ren to watch a Kun Peng from far away. Min Ren's observation eventually turned into six basic movements, and they were used to create the infamous

Emperor Fate Law – Kun Peng’s Six Variants.

The six actions slowly appeared in Li Qiye’s head. Sometimes it was an eagle flying in the nine layered sky, and one flap of its wings would take it three thousand miles away. Another was a fast descent into the ground with enough force to pierce through the layers of hell. The third was in the depths of the sea; it transformed into a giant Kun, and its heavy tail caused endless tsunamis.

(TL: Kun resembles a whale, Peng is the eagle form, I suggest googling Kun Peng if you want an image.)

Sometimes it was an eagle; sometimes a Kun. The transformation became faster and faster to the point that one couldn’t differentiate whether it was an eagle or a Kun. The Kun became an eagle and ascended to the heavens; stumbling on the grand truth. Kun and Peng were ever changing like the sun and the moon’s rotations; it was as if they were one with the primordial orders of the heavens and earth.

-Bang!

A loud noise rang in the room, and Li Qiye initiated Kun Peng’s power. In the blink of an eye, Li Qiye’s whole body heavily jolted, and the gigantic Kun Peng that was thousands of miles tall suddenly disappeared. The heavy tornados and tsunamis that were accompanying the beast also subsided. These images slowly become strands of consciences, slowly gathering into one grand truth. What emerged from this grand truth were the symbols from the erased memories that were now returning to Li Qiye’s mind.

In the end, when the eagle was no longer an eagle, and the Kun was no longer a Kun, only one grand mysterious truth remained. A complete Kun Peng was formed, and the Kun Peng's Six Variants, without flaws, had appeared in Li Qiye's mind.

Li Qiye was extremely ecstatic; the heavens didn't let him down. He had finally regained his Kun Peng's Six Variants.

An unknown amount of time had passed, and Li Qiye recovered his thoughts from his deep cultivation. Although he had regained a completed merit law, and it was an extremely powerful one even among those at the same level, Li Qiye did not become complacent or arrogant. He knew his original body more than anyone else. When compared to the other geniuses, his Physique, Life Wheel, and Fate Palace were all lacking. He had to cultivate a hundred times harder to catch up to others; he had to be patient. Only then, could he obtain the Heaven's Will of this era to sweep the nine heavens and earth.

With the qualification of someone who had taught Immortal Emperors and powerful beings, he knew the principles behind the mysterious truths more than anyone else. His greatest strength and advantage was having a perfect cultivation procedure.

He started to research the Revolving Crescent Sun method. It was classified as a Life Wheel cultivation method used to train the Life Wheel and to increase lifespan and blood energy.

Every cultivator, and even mortals, all have an innate longevity gauge. Any living beings that have formed intelligence will have three things: the first was a Physique, the second was a Life Wheel,

and the third was a Fate Palace.

Physique didn't need much explanation. This was the thing that contained one's life force. Without this physical base, there was no life. Even a mortal would have a mortal body. The general shape of the human race with its bones, bloods, and muscles was considered one of the best physical bases to contain life.

There was a saying regarding the Life Wheel. A tree had its growth rings, and a human has the Life Wheel. The Life Wheel was located inside the body, but it was not of physical form. It was a light that was continuously spinning. At first, without any special external tools, only the cultivator himself could see his Life Wheel. However, after successful cultivation, the Life Wheel would appear behind one's head; its shape and light would determine the strength of one's blood energy and longevity.

If a mortal lived his life without any accident, then the Life Wheel would determine his lifespan. Li Qiye's Mortal Life Wheel for example, would allow him to live to the age of sixty without any cultivation.

Physiques, Life Wheels, and Fate Palaces all have the following ranking from lowest to highest:

-Mortal, Houtian, Xiantian, Emperor, Saint, and Immortal.

All three share the same ranking system; however, under normal circumstances, cultivators couldn't change or increase their Life Wheel and Fate Palace level; these two were innately gifted to you

by the heavens. As for the body, one's physique could be cultivated. For example, a person with a Xiantian's physique, through cultivation and effort, could raise it to the next rank.

Author's Note from the Daoist's classic Zhuangzi:

In the northern darkness there is a fish and his name is Kun. The Kun is so huge I don't know how many thousand li he measures. He changes and becomes a bird whose name is Peng. The back of the Peng measures I don't know how many thousand li across and, when he rises up and flies off, his wings are like clouds all over the sky. When the sea begins to move, this bird sets off for the southern darkness, which is the Lake of Heaven.

Chapter 30 : Twelve Immortal Physiques

(2)

It was the opposite case for the Life Wheel and Fate Palace. One could not naturally increase their innate ranking of the Life Wheel and Fate Palace. Even if one became an Immortal Emperor, the Life Wheel and Fate Palace would be the same as they were at the time of their birth.

All three of them were extremely important for the purpose of cultivation. The Physique determined one's bone and muscular structures, the Life Wheel dealt with one's blood energy, and the Fate Palace indicated one's innate aptitude and natural enlightenment.

For example, if a person had a Saint Life Wheel, then his blood energy would be as abundant as the desert sands; when trained using a Life Wheel method, his speed would be extremely swift; the effect would be greater as well.

Li Qiye slowly read the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law in order to find the mysterious truths of this method. The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had a completed version of this merit law, but what Li Qiye was aiming for was more complex than the manual.

To talk about the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law was to talk about its exceptional origin of how Li Qiye struggled to obtain this merit law. At the beginning of the Emperor's Era, he contemplated

about letting Min Ren cultivate this method, but he changed his mind.

In the old Desolate Era, both humans and demons were extremely weak species. Many immortal sages spent their lives creating suitable merit laws and cultivation methods for these unfortunate beings; eventually, they were able to form a new flourishing era.

There was a formidable immortal sage that created a Life Wheel merit law that allowed for one to cultivate quickly; it was named Revolving Crescent Sun. In the beginning stages of this merit law, cultivators were able to use their blood energy to build their Fate Palace, and their cultivation levels quickly rose.

However, the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law had a fatal weakness. The beginning stage allowed for the blood energy to carry one's cultivation level, but, as his cultivation level increased, his weak blood energy was no longer sufficient. The result was that the person would be left in a stage where his blood energy was weak and his cultivation was unable to grow. If he was to force the technique, his longevity would decrease from over-exerting his life blood.

When Li Qiye had obtained this method, he passed it down to many people. However, none of them were able to perfectly utilize it. For the sake of perfecting this technique, Li Qiye gathered many Immortal Emperors; including Immortal Emperor Xue Xi, Immortal Emperor Min Ren, and Immortal Emperor Tun Ri.

It wasn't until the era of the Black Dragon King that Li Qiye had

perfected this technique. Today, as he was researching the technique, his old memories containing the mysterious truths within the merit law came back to him.

After recovering the completed and revised Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law, Li Qiye took a deep breath.

In this world, not many people knew the effort he had spent on this technique across the eras. Who would know how many immortal sages of humanity spent their lives to develop the method?

The truth was, after Li Qiye left this method behind in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, many geniuses had tried it; however, none of them could reach grand completion.

Li Qiye spent three days and three nights to research the Kun Peng's Six Variants and the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law. Nan Huai Ren still had not returned; since Li Qiye was not in a rush, he chose to stay on the peak to further cultivate.

Once his two methods were ready, Li Qiye was ready to formally start his cultivation. One could say that Li Qiye's experience and knowledge regarding cultivation were rich even if his innate aptitude was subpar.

Even though the two methods were heaven defying, he did not rush toward completion. He wanted quality in his cultivation. He knew that rushing would only leave behind hidden dangers and flaws for one's long path of cultivation.

Li Qiye was cultivating both at the same time, but the two methods were not related or in sync with each other. The Kun Peng's Six Variants was about using the Fate Palace while the Revolving Crescent Sun was a Life Wheel Technique. One could cultivate both in the beginning without complications.

There was a fourth type of method outside of the three already mentioned ones; some people called it the foundation method. This method did not focus on the Physique, Life Wheel, or Fate Palace individually, but rather, it focused on all three of them at the same time. Although this fourth type had many uses, and its theoretical effects seemed great, it was hard to cultivate such a method to a higher rank.

There were also different rankings for merit laws and methods. For example, if Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon was to create a method, his method would be of the Virtuous Paragon ranking. As for an Immortal Emperor's creation, it would be named an Immortal Emperor method.

Of course, merit laws and cultivation methods weren't everything. Without a strong willpower, in the end, everything would be gone like the clouds in the wind. Many geniuses, in the past, started their cultivation with heaven shattering methods. This entitled them a smooth road until they suffered from Qigong Deviation. Other geniuses were spoiled in their beginnings, and they were given Immortal Emperor methods at the start; however, when it was time for them to compete for the Heaven's Will, they weren't able to cultivate their own Heaven Will's Secret Law; they lacked the experience and toughness from their past easy roads.

After thinking about all of the nuisances regarding cultivation, Li Qiye channeled his Life Wheel using the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law; the effect was clear. Behind Li Qiye's head was a wheel of light rotating without breaks, and his blood energy began to move within the light.

The blood energy was flowing through the Life Wheel as if it was a stream controlled by its current, never stopping.

Li Qiye was born with a Mortal Life Wheel; he had no advantage regarding this area. Because his blood energy was weak, his blood current was not strong within his Life Wheel's rotation.

If another with a Tianxian Life Wheel or Emperor Life Wheel were to cultivate the same merit law, their current would be a large river. A Saint Life Wheel's current would be as great as the ocean itself.

Li Qiye initiated the incantations of the Kun Peng's Six Variants, and he began to activate his Fate Palace in a particular order.

The Fate Palace was the home of one's fate; it carried the three souls and seven spirits. The Fate Palace was hidden inside the Shang Dan Tian, so Li Qiye started to use the Six Variants to knock on the Palace door. The Fate Palace slowly appeared in his Shang Dan Tian.

(TL: Shang Dan Tian is a meridian located on top of the forehead)

The Fate Palace had an ancient design, and it was crystal clear. However, because his Fate Palace was only of mortal rank, the light radiating from it was dim.

Normally, the Fate Palace was closed, and the soul and spirits were at rest. One had to knock on the Fate Palace to wake the souls and spirits up in order to channel their power, then one could start to cultivate.

(Nere: I was confused for a second, too. Apparently, in Chinese Daoism, there are three souls and seven spirits.)

This was why the first level of cultivation was known as Palace Foundation. This level itself was divided into three separate stages: First Entrance, Second Awareness, and Third Bloodsurge.

First Entrance was the process of knocking on the Fate Palace, allowing the incantations of the cultivating methods to enter the Fate palace. During this process, it was akin to a monk knocking on his wooden plate to connect to Buddha. One had to do it nonstop and faithfully, and, only then, would the Fate Palace answer by opening its doors.

-Bang, Bang, Bang.

Li Qiye used the Six Variants incantations to knock on his Fate Palace nonstop. He had forgotten how many times he had done it, but the Fate Palace would not answer him. This, however, did not deter Li Qiye.

For a genius, especially someone with a Saint Fate Palace, the

process of opening the Fate Palace was extremely easy because their souls and spirits were formidable. Legends have it that there was a person with a Saint Fate Palace that only had to knock once before opening his Palace.

This person would be a genius among geniuses; however, Li Qiye was not part of this group. He had to be patient and put in countless amounts of effort; that was his only road to success.

Even though Li Qiye knew a few different methods to open the Fate Palace with just one knock, such as using the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law to gather all of his blood energy to improve the incantations of his Kun Peng's Six Variants in order to strike a hard blow to the Palace Door, he didn't want to do it.

His Life Wheel was only of mortal grade, and his blood energy was thin. If he over exerted his blood energy, then his Life Wheel would be damaged. Not only that, but such a powerful blow would frighten his souls and spirit, and that would leave behind complications in the future.

Knowing his weakness, Li Qiye was determined to create a solid foundation without any imperfections. He kept on knocking on his Palace Door; even if it was ten thousand times or a hundred thousand times, he would continue until the Palace Door opened.

Chapter 31 : Kun Peng's Six Variants (1)

-Bang, bang, bang!

Li Qiye had knocked on the door for tens of thousands of times now, but there was still no answer.

For the majority of cultivators, this was not a good sign. It showed how your low inner talents were. However, Li Qiye had an unwavering willpower; even if he had to knock for a million times, he would keep on going.

-BANG!

After five days and five nights, a small sound resounded. Under the patient knocking of Li Qiye, his Fate Palace was finally opened.

Entering the door, one could see the power of the souls and spirits. However, his Mortal Fate Palace was extremely limiting. At this time, the Kun Peng's Six Variants incantations flew into the Fate Palace along with Li Qiye's consciousness.

The space inside the Fate Palace was very vast, approaching infinity. In the middle of Li Qiye's Fate Palace were mysterious incantations in the form of calligraphy; they flew around in a natural order around a radiant light as if wanting to wake it up.

This light was the soul. To others, it was the three souls and

seven spirits or even the True Fate. This was the thing that determined a person's fate through their life.

Only by cultivating could one activate the True Fate and the souls. Once they were awakened, the cultivators would gain their magical power. They would also be able to connect to the heavens and earth, borrowing their energy.

Kun Peng's Six Variants was a Fate Palace merit law; it had to wake up the souls and use them as the foundation of cultivation for Li Qiye. This was why the incantation calligraphies that represent the mysterious truths of the Six Variants were twisting the souls nonstop to wake them up. These words sometimes were an eagle flying, other times, they were a Kun playing in an ocean, or even a completed Kun Peng. These beasts caused Li Qiye's Fate Palace to resemble a wide sky and deep sea, and his Fate Palace light was heavily affected by their presence.

This process was the second step named, Second Awareness. Because of Li Qiye's low innate talents, this event would also take longer compared to other geniuses despite having an Immortal Emperor merit law.

His Fate Palace grew wider and bigger in size; one could not see the boundaries. Even if the awakening process was completed, he wouldn't be able to see through all of his Fate Palace. However, he felt an existence far away in his Fate Palace.

Towards the extreme side, in the east direction, it was as if there was a gigantic spring; however, it was dried out; there was no water running.

This Spring of Life was one of the Fate Palace Four Symbols. There are many theories regarding it; some immortal sages believe that it was the source of life and fate energy.

To the far west, Li Qiye felt an image of a huge cauldron, but, at this moment, it was extremely cold.

This was the Cauldron of life. It's flame was capable of burning and dissolving any existence. People believed that the source of its flame were the souls, hence the name, Soul Fire.

Towards the south was a gigantic tree piercing the sky itself. This tree was massive; however, it showed no sign of life as if it had died ages ago.

The Tree of Life was the most mysterious object in the Fate Palace. Legends told that it could steal from the heavens and obtain great fortunes.

At the distant north was a towering pillar that connected the heavens and the earth. The pillars were engraved by countless mysterious symbols. It looked as if it had been standing there since the beginning of time.

Pillar of Life, it was also known as the source of life. Without it, nothing would exist.

The Fate Palace Four Symbols included: the Spring of Life, the

Cauldron of Life, the Tree of Life, and the Pillar of Life. These were the most enigmatic entities in the world. Many ancient sages tried to understand the four symbols in order to get a better sense of cultivation.

The world believed that if one could understand the truths of all four symbols, he would be able to obtain the Heaven's Will and become an Immortal Emperor.

Li Qiye was still letting the Six Variants method stimulate the souls while his Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law was cultivating his Life Wheel; this resulted in a strange and mysterious state during his cultivation.

He kept the same pace without hastiness because he had absolute trust in himself. No one, or anything, could ever shake his willpower.

After ten days, Nan Huai Ren had finally returned. He immediately went to meet Li Qiye and apologized:

-Senior, sorry about letting you wait so long. Sect Master was in isolated cultivation; I had to wait till she came out before I could finish my report.

-It is not a big deal.

Li Qiye calmly answered.

Seeing Li Qiye's nonchalant disposition, Nan Huai Ren paused for a second and then voiced his concern:

-Senior, from what I've gathered while listening to the Sect Master, second brother is returning to the sect.

He hesitantly added:

-Second brother is the Sect Master's disciple.

When 'second brother' was mentioned, Nan Huai Ren's eyes were a little strange. He remained silent afterwards.

-Second brother?

Li Qiye noticed the strange gaze of Nan Huai Ren so he inquired.

Nan Huai Ren scratched his head and said:

-Senior, to tell you the truth, I don't know how to explain it. Once you meet second brother, you will understand.

Finally, he added another sentence.

-Second brother's circumstances are a bit special.

Li Qiye only smiled and did not interrogate. This matter, to him,

was not very important. He couldn't care less about the circumstances of the second brother. Ultimately, the second brother could be sent here to teach him or to monitor him; it had nothing to do with Li Qiye.

Li Qiye's determination to rebuild the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect would not be interrupted by anyone. Once the time was right, he would reinvigorate the sect. On this road, no one could stop his footstep. Anyone who tried to stop him would meet their death. If Buddha was in the way, slay Buddha; if God was in the way, slay God.

That year, under his tutelage, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had swept over the Nine Worlds. In this life, he would do the same. His Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect would rule over the Nine Worlds and destroy the Heaven Demon Grotto.

Nan Huai Ren was already used to Li Qiye's temperament even when facing the Demon Emperor Lun Ri; thus, he was not surprised by how carefree Li Qiye was about the return of the second brother.

Nan Huai Ren stared at Li Qiye a little bit, and he suddenly noticed that he had started his cultivation.

Nan Huai Ren happily exclaimed:

-Senior, you had opened your Fate Palace? How long did it take?

-Not too long; it only took five days and five nights.

Li Qiye said slowly.

-Uh...

Nan Huai Ren was at a loss for words after he heard the answer. Five days and five nights? You dared to say it wasn't a long time? In any sect, if a disciple was to take even three days and three nights to open the Fate Palace, he would be scolded by the seniors as being incompetent; so much so that he wouldn't be able to raise his head anymore. For taking five days and five nights, he would be considered trash amongst trash. If people knew Li Qiye took such a long time, he would become the biggest laughingstock in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

The worst disciple of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had only taken three days and three nights, yet Li Qiye required five days and five nights.

However, Nan Huai Ren could tell from Li Qiye's expression that he didn't consider spending five days and five nights as something to be ashamed about.

If other students took that long, their self-esteem would be at an all time low. However, Li Qiye didn't feel inferior or pride from it; it was just another day to him.

Thinking about the deaths of Xu Hui and Protector Hua, Nan

Huai Ren trembled. A person that was considered idiotic by the world had an unstoppable aura; he possessed a calm and elegant demeanor at all times, and the utmost self-confidence as well as his unshakable willpower that showed through his ability to kill people without any remorse; people like Li Qiye would be the most frightening of existences.

Nan Huai Ren stopped here with that thought, and he tagged along with Li Qiye to select his treasure.

Once they reached the Ancient Triangular School, Li Qiye and Nan Huai Ren carried the order to the Weapon Armory. Here, they saw an extremely large statue standing in the middle.

Chapter 32 : Kun Peng's Six Variants (2)

The statue inside the Weapon Armory wasn't Immortal Emperor Min Ren or an Elder that had magnificent contributions to the sect, but it was made to the shape of a gigantic black crow.

The crow statue spread its wings as if it wanted to fly through the nine skies. Its claws were gripping two dual blades made out of mortal steel. These blades were the same type used to practice "Invisible Dual Blade".

No one knew how long these dual blades had been here for. They did not survive the torture of time; rust covered the blades' edges, and it looked like both blades were on the verge of breaking at any moment.

Li Qiye stared at the statue in a daze. Maybe he had forgotten this pose, but Immortal Emperor Min Ren never had. Nan Huai Ren, seeing Li Qiye's solemn moment, he whispered:

-Senior, this is the statue of the Crow God in the legends. When our patriarch was young, the Crow God had taught him on this peak. This is why our sect was established here; this statue was erected after our patriarch's ascension as a memorial.

Li Qiye smiled at the story. Of course, he knew this because the Crow God and he were one in the same. He also knew that the whole story was a lie; the real reason why the sect was established here was a secret that only he was aware of.

However, the action depicted by this statue was not false. The first time he met the courageous little boy that loved martial arts, he used his claws to steal the blades from the boy's hands.

Even though he had become an Immortal Emperor, Min Ren had never forgotten their first meeting.

-Let us go inside.

Li Qiye regained his composure and went inside the Weapon Armory.

Inside the armory, there were all types of different Life Treasures and Longevity Treasures. The first level had ten thousand different weapons, but these were only made from steel mixed with low level metals. These were treasures with relatively low grades.

A cultivator's weapon was divided into four types: first, the common weapons; second, Longevity weapons; third, Life weapons; and lastly, True weapons.

The common weapons were meant for new disciples. These weapons were extremely common because they were made from mortal steel mixed with magical metals; they were not made from any excessively rare material. Even though these weapons, in the eyes of mortals, would be considered to be heavenly weapons that could cut through steel like mud, cultivators did not think highly of them. They couldn't fully utilize the power of the mysterious

truths coming from the Grand Dao.

Technically, Longevity weapons were not considered to be traditional weapons. They were rather, treasures, instead; even if they took the shape of a weapon. They were meant to prolong one's lifespan and feed the blood energy of the user. One could say, every cultivator would have at least one Longevity Treasure because it would feed their Life Wheel. It could also have a pivotal support role in combat since it could quickly replenish the Life Wheel that was depleted during battle.

Life and True weapons were the real force of cultivators. They have great usage in both defensive and offensive means.

Within the lifespan of a cultivator, they could possess many different Life Treasures and even inherit a Life Treasure from someone else. However, they could only have one True Treasure because this treasure was directly connected to their True Soul; the True Treasure and True Soul directly reinforced and supported each other, and the True Treasure, once linked to a cultivator, couldn't be inherited by another cultivator.

Even though a cultivator had to create his own True Treasure and use it for the rest of his life, the power of a True Treasure greatly exceeded a regular Life Treasure. Even if it was the same grade, a True Treasure would annihilate a Life Treasure in the blink of an eye.

Some of the weapons from the first level were common weapons such as the Profound Steel Sword, the Icy Crescent Saber, and the Meteoric Claws while the Life weapons ranged from the Shan He

Pagoda and the Demon Slaying Circle, to the Jiang Jiao Staff.

There were also a few True weapons such as the Heavenly God Stone, the Bloody Sky Rope, and the Fierce Sun Calligraphy Pen.

All of these Life and True Treasures had a very low grade; thus, any third generation disciple was able to pick from them. The disciples with contributions were able to pick from the second level instead.

While strolling in the first level, Li Qiye noticed the killing aura from these treasures and their ability to absorb the energy of the Grand Dao.

He took his time looking at each one, and he then casually went to the second level. The second level only contained Life and True weapons with a higher ranking than the first level.

However, Li Qiye also only looked at each weapon once. He did not select any of them, and they went on to level three.

Seeing Li Qiye entering the third level, many disciples who were choosing their weapons were jealous. One couldn't help but say:

-I went to South mountain and decapitated a Longevity beast and made many contributions to the sect, and I only got to pick a level two True Treasure. Why does he get to go to level three?

Level three of the Weapon Armory was reserved for disciples

with great contributions to the sect. Li Qiye's ability to enter it made the other disciples feel cheated.

-He has the order from the Elders.

Li Qiye turned around toward the angry disciples, and slowly said:

-If you have the ability to question the Elders, go and do it. Chirping here is only a waste of time.

Li Qiye's words enraged the third generation students. Many of them here had a high status within their own peer group, but they were looked down on by a piece of trash.

-Let us see how long you can be arrogant for! One day, I will teach you a lesson!

A disciple angrily yelled.

Li Qiye ignored him and kept on walking to the third level. Nan Huai Ren lamented over the fact that these disciples could only see an outside appearance. Do they actually think that Li Qiye was an idiot?

Once they stepped inside the third level of the Weapon Armory, there was a blinding light enumerated from the many dazzling auras. The Life and True weapons surrounded by the rotation lights of their own auras made heavenly noises and exerted the

energy of the Grand Dao like an unstoppable tsunami; it was as if all of these treasures were alive.

Without a doubt, these weapons, here, had a higher grade and status than the ones in the second level.

-Senior, all the Life and True weapons here are exceptional versus the ones below. The lowest grade here is Inner Longevity and the highest is Heaven's Primal. There is even a True Deity True Treasure here in the Weapon Armory.

Nan Huai Ren explained to Li Qiye.

Life weapons and True weapons were connected to the cultivators using them. It was better for an Inner Longevity cultivator to pick an Inner Longevity weapon.

-Look, this is Jiu Lu Longevity Wheel!

Nan Huai Ren introduced:

-Senior, this wheel was made from the life rings of a Jiu Lu Longevity beast, and it inherited the strength of this beast; if you use this wheel to feed your life essence, it will purify your blood force.

-And this is Jiang Fei Heavenly Rope.

Nan Huai Ren explained in a way that showed Li Qiye that he completely memorized the details on the contents of this third level treasure room.

-This treasure was created from the bones of a Heavenly beast in the Warrior Canopy rank. I believe that this beast was a Twin Headed Half-Dragon. Once you are connected to this treasure, you could use it to activate the original truths of the dragon bones.

-Over there is the Hell Breaker Axe, it was forged from a piece of Star Spirit Immortal Steel...

Nan Huai Ren seemed as if he knew all of the Life and True weapons on this third level; he couldn't stop introducing all of them to Li Qiye.

Li Qiye glanced at him and praised:

-It seems like you are really familiar with this place.

Nan Huai Ren blushed and replied to Li Qiye's remark:

-I always ask to tag along each time my master had to go to the Weapon Armory, so I know a little bit about this place. The fourth level, however, I only went up there once with my ancestor.

Because Nan Huai Ren was amicable and social, unlike his master, Elder Sun liked him a lot.

-The floor above... what Life and True Treasures does it have?

Li Qiye casually asked.

The Weapon Armory has nine levels, but he was only, currently, at the third floor.

-I've only been in the fourth level once; the treasures there were of the Royal Nobles level. As for the above floors, I do not know the exact details for each.

Nan Huai Ren shook his head.

-Would level nine contain an Immortal Emperor True Weapon?

Li Qiye voiced his question. Min Ren had created many True Weapons throughout his life, and Li Qiye knew that Min Ren had left a few behind to protect the sect.

Nan Huai Ren looked around and whispered:

-I heard that we no longer have any Immortal Emperor Life Treasures. So naturally, we also don't have any Immortal Emperor True Treasures either.

-There is nothing left?

Li Qiye found that hard to believe because Min Ren didn't just leave one. No matter how unfilial his descendants might be, they couldn't just throw them all away.

Nan Huai Ren shook his head and softly answered:

-I don't know the exact details, not even my master knows. Like I told you before, thirty thousand years ago, we fought the Heavenly God Sect. In that battle, we lost the right to our Kingdom that we had been reigning for hundreds thousands of years as well as our last Immortal Emperor True Treasure.

Chapter 33 : Invisible Dual Blades (1)

Immortal Emperor Life Treasures were not only a priceless item to all cultivators, but they were also an integral part in the protection of an Immortal Emperor sect.

Min Ren created the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, and he had left behind several Life Treasures to protect his descendants. However, after one hundred thousand years, the sect currently has zero Life Treasures.

Now Li Qiye truly understood; the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect didn't decline for no reason at all. The Emperor merit laws were missing and the Immortal Emperor Life Treasures were gone as well. Plus, there was no wise leader to guide them. It would be against the heaven's will if they didn't decline.

-Senior, do you want to select a Longevity Treasure or a Life Treasure? Or maybe a True Treasure?

Seeing Li Qiye in a daze, Nan Huai Ren reminded him.

Although Li Qiye had made one round in the third level, there was not a single treasure that he found suitable.

Nan Huai Ren didn't understand why Li Qiye didn't like the weapons stored here. The third level was not the best, but these weapons would still make all of the disciples within the sect drool with desire.

However, Li Qiye didn't settle for any of the weapons here, and Nan Huai Ren didn't dare to say anything. He knew Li Qiye had his reasons, so he followed Li Qiye down, leaving the third level.

All of the disciples that ridiculed Li Qiye, previously, were still there. Seeing his empty hands, they sneered:

-Look! Our Prime Disciple's eyes are too high. So... Even the third level didn't meet his needs!

-Heh. You don't know this, but only Immortal Emperor Life Treasures are worthy of him; he doesn't care about the other things.

Another disciple, with a high pitched voice, commented:

-Why doesn't he look into the mirror and realize his place? A piece of trash like him being allowed to select a weapon from level three is already a great privilege given by the Elders.

One student, that was extremely angry, said:

-He is only a useless person. Even if we bring an Immortal Emperor Life Treasure before him, he would only think that it was scrapped metal. A person that has eyes but can't see isn't qualified to wield a Life Treasure.

Having heard all the tauntings from the disciples, Nan Hai Ren heavily furrowed his brows while Li Qiye casually said:

-It seems like all of you are very dissatisfied with me.

A disciple harshly replied:

-Hmmp! Someone like you, who isn't qualified, shouldn't be our Prime Disciple!

-What a shame; I am still your Prime Disciple.

Li Qiye slowly spoke:

-Continuously being disrespectful; it seems that I would be unfit for this position if I don't break your dog legs, today.

After hearing Li Qiye, a disciple stood out from the crowd and straightened his posture; he then coldly proclaimed:

-Oh? The great Prime Disciple wants to scold all of us? As your junior, I would love to learn from your many techniques.

Hearing these words, the other disciples clamored and laughed loudly. All of them presumptuously thought that Li Qiye, with his Mortal Physique, Mortal Life Wheel, and Mortal Fate Palace, could be easily taken care of with just the use of one hand.

-Huai Ren, beat them until they crawl outside.

Li Qiye glared at them and commanded Huai Ren.

The other disciples didn't know, but Huai Ren did; how did Du Yuan Guang die? Xu Hui met his end how? Suddenly, he wiped the cold sweat off his forehead. If Li Qiye truly became angry, he would dismember all of these little boys.

A command was a command; Nan Huai Ren sighed and stepped forward. He gazed at the disciples and calmly said:

-You guys have committed the crime of being disrespectful to prime senior; I am here to carry out the sentence!

-Nan Huai Ren, you...!

Seeing Nan Huai Ren's interference, some of the disciples angrily yelled.

A disciple said without hesitation:

-Senior Nan, you are a favorite among the Elders; to follow such a loser is to ruin your good name...

-Bang!

This disciple, who had not finished his words, was knocked away by Nan Huai Ren.

In the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, Huai Ren's talents weren't the best; however, as the disciple of Protector Mo, it was easy for him to deal with these average disciples.

-You said too much! Not knowing when to keep your mouth shut will bring the impending threat of death!

After punching the student away, Nan Huai Ren pointed his finger at the other students and said:

-All of you come forward; don't say I am bullying you!

The other disciples were both afraid and angry. They jumped forward together, but Nan Huai Ren did not show mercy; he beat them all, left and right, to the floor.

It seemed as if Nan Huai Ren had used too much force; however, he was just saving their lives. At worst, he was just causing them physical pain without long term complications.

If Li Qiye personally handled it, then there might be decapitated bodies on the floor, instead. Nan Huai Ren knew that Li Qiye, in fact, didn't care for the disciples, or anyone, who disrespected him. Incidentally, Nan Huai Ren hoped that his brutal beating of them was enough to appease Li Qiye.

As for the disciples protecting the Weapon Armory, their job was to protect it; other quarrels had nothing to do with them, so they closed their eyes and ignored it.

-I want the dual blades over there.

As Nan Huai Ren was throwing the disciples out of the Weapon Armory, Li Qiye was talking with the protector in charge.

The protector's brow furrowed, and he asked:

-The dual blades under the Crow God's feet?

-That is correct.

Li Qiye replied.

-Recently, I have been practicing the Invisible Dual Blade technique, and on a second look, the dual blades are perfect for me; so, I want them.

The protector and guarding disciples all thought that Li Qiye's request was very strange; they looked at him as if he was a mental patient.

The two blades over there were basically two normal blades that have been rusting. Don't even compare it to the Life and True weapons on the third level; they weren't even comparable to the

common weapons in level one.

They believed that not picking a treasure from the third level was already strange, but he then picked the two rusted blades, not worth a cent, made from mortal steel. If this guy didn't have mental problems, then he would be an idiot for not knowing good from bad.

When Nan Huai Ren saw Li Qiye's choice, the first thing that came up in his mind was the Serpent Punishing Stick. His heart was excited because he remembered when Li Qiye wanted the old stick from the fire place in the Grand Chamber; all the Elders, and himself, included, thought Li Qiye was ignorant for valuing a regular stick so highly.

However, that stick had beaten a genius, like Xu Hui, as if he was defenseless. Now, Li Qiye suddenly wanted those two blades? It might not be just a coincidence. He probably had his eyes on them since they had stepped inside the Weapon Armory.

A student who was thrown out by Nan Huai Ren was both angry and afraid; he yelled:

-Nan Huai Ren! You... You dare to hit me? I will report this to the Elders about...

-Slap him. Slap him until he cannot speak anymore.

Li Qiye mercilessly said.

From those simple words, Nan Huai Ren could feel a strand of anger building inside Li Qiye. It seemed like this senior was becoming agitated.

-My apologies.

Nan Huai Ren slapped the disciple three times, without hesitation: "Slap, slap, slap." Nan Huai Ren knew that this wasn't just him saving the disciple's life; this was also a trial that Li Qiye was using to test him.

Li Qiye left this matter alone, and he turned back to the protector:

-The Elders have agreed on me picking a weapon, so I would like to choose these blades.

The protector rolled his eyes at Li Qiye. This kid didn't look like an idiot, so why was he so insistent on doing something so foolish?

The protector hesitated for a moment, but he then, finally, nodded his head:

-This is possible!

These were only two mortal blades; they were not a renowned treasure. Li Qiye came with the order from the Elders, and them

giving him two regular blades wasn't a big deal.

Li Qiye personally took down the two blades, so that the protector could write it down into the checkout list. Although Li Qiye's request was strange, the protector didn't really know what to say.

Finishing his task, Li Qiye left the Weapon Armory with his blades. Coming across the disciples who were beaten senselessly by Nan Huai Ren, he slowed his steps and angrily said:

-You guys need to be grateful toward Nan Huai Ren for saving your lives. If you have any complaints about my actions, you should go and report it to the Elders. However, don't let me personally deal with you because the result would not be preferable on your end.

Nan Huai Ren's intention was revealed by Li Qiye, and he could only smile sheepishly.

The beaten students were frozen with fear. This person, before them, was a frightening man; there was no resemblance of a thirteen year old boy.

Li Qiye walked back to his peak after speaking his mind.

Chapter 34 : Invisible Dual Blades (2)

After returning to the peak, seeing Nan Huai Ren's curious expression while he looked at the blades, Li Qiye threw them to Nan Huai Ren.

-If you want to look at them, then you can hold and look at them as much as you want.

Nan Huai Ren felt bashful after being caught by Li Qiye. He didn't know why Li Qiye wanted these blades, but he couldn't just ask right away either.

Holding the blades, Nan Huai Ren stopped being so courteous, and he meticulously observed them; however, he couldn't see anything extraordinary from them.

The two blades in his hands seemed to be just mortal weapons made from regular steel, and the rust on them was proof that they couldn't withstand the test of time.

-Why did senior choose these blades?

Nan Huai Ren believed that Li Qiye had already decided to go for these blades when he first entered the Weapon Armory.

Li Qiye smiled and answered:

-If you, or anyone in the sect, could see through their mysteriousness, then they wouldn't have been in the Weapon Armory for so long.

-What kind of treasure is this?

Nan Huai Ren politely inquired. He truly could not see the magical properties.

-They're not treasures.

Li Qiye answered:

-They're only two normal dual blades made out of steel. In fact, the material these are made out of are worth less than the two silver coins over there.

-But why...

Li Qiye's answer confused Nan Huai Ren. If they were truly like Li Qiye described, then why did he pick them?

Li Qiye interrupted his question:

-However, they can cut through the weapons of Royal Nobles and Enlightened Beings as if they were cutting through tofu.

-How is that possible?!

Nan Huai Ren's heart shook when he heard this. Royal Nobles were extremely strong, let alone Enlightened Beings. Since thirty thousand years ago, there hasn't been a single disciple who was capable of reaching the Enlightened Being stage in the sect.

Li Qiye liked to see Nan Huai Ren's surprised expressions, and he slowly proclaimed:

-You are smart, and you can clearly understand the current situation. I will not mistreat you. Emperor merit laws or Saint level treasures; if you want them, you will have them. If you do a good job and contribute greatly, I will even let you cultivate merit laws that are far more formidable than Emperor laws.

Li Qiye's words were like steel rods beating on the drum that was Nan Huai Ren's heart. His master, or even Elder Sun, wouldn't be able to make such a promise because there weren't that many known Emperor laws in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

-Thank you brother.

Nan Huai Ren gathered his wits and bowed toward Li Qiye, and Li Qiye naturally accepted his gesture.

After Nan Huai Ren left, Li Qiye held the blades in his hand; he

caressed the edges. He sighed and started to remember his past.

So what if one could become an unbeatable Immortal Emperor? Little boy Min Ren was groomed by him, so he was able to accept the Heaven's Will. His whole life, peerless in all the Nine Worlds, and he successfully cultivated the Solar Immortal Physique as well. However, in the end, he was still slowly erased by the river of time.

Li Qiye removed the rust from the blades, bringing them back to their original form. The two blades had a normal appearance, but they now exuded an ancient aura.

Using his hand to lightly touch the edges, Li Qiye felt a cold energy emanate from the blades. Everyone was correct in their judgment; these blades were indeed just mortal blades. However, they were the blades that were once used by Min Ren, personally, when he was a little boy.

Based on the materials, these blades were trash; however, they used to be the main weapons of an Immortal Emperor. Even after he started cultivating, he was not willing to part with these blades; he always had them with him. Even after his ascension, they were still by his side.

Every time he reminisced, he would take out the blades and caress them as if he wanted to share his feelings with the blades' soul.

Even though Min Ren never forged the blades, they were blessed with an Immortal Emperor's touch and groomed by an Immortal

Emperor's blood energy; thus, even if they were made of mortal steel, they were still exceptional. How powerful was an Immortal Emperor? This was the person that carried the Heaven's Will and reigned over the universe and the Nine Worlds.

The true value of the blades was not in its material or sharpness, but the Immortal consciousness and thoughts hidden within the blades.

An Immortal Emperor's consciousness was extremely frightening. Even though the two blades were not comparable to a Life Treasure or True Treasure, they were indefinitely stronger than a treasure from a Royal Noble or an Enlightened Being, many times over. One strand of offensive consciousness from an Immortal Emperor could cut through anything.

Li Qiye slowly tried to connect with the leftover Immortal consciousness hidden in the blades.

Of course, within a short amount of time, he couldn't easily communicate with this Immortal consciousness; this required patience and careful procedure. Li Qiye wasn't in a rush; he slowly felt the consciousness in the blades' body.

In this world, no one was more familiar with Min Ren than Li Qiye. Thus, there was no one more familiar with this Immortal consciousness that belongs to Min Ren than Li Qiye.

In the two following days, Li Qiye was still cultivating his Kun Peng's Six Variants and Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law, and he

spent the rest of his time trying to communicate with the dual blades.

Even though he was the Prime Disciple of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, no one, except Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren, had ever questioned his cultivation.

Li Qiye was like a translucent shadow living in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Even the Elders didn't want to know his situation, let alone other people. To them, having Li Qiye was fine, but they would have no problem being without him.

This made Nan Huai Ren the most familiar guest at Li Qiye's peak. Whenever he had time, he would come to check up on Li Qiye. He took care of his daily necessities; this ranged from mortal tools to a dimensional pouch.

Protector Mo also tried to teach Li Qiye cultivation tips; however, Li Qiye seemed to know and understand his intent, so he eventually removed that thought from his head.

Three months had passed. During one of Li Qiye's cultivation session, and he felt a force rampaging through his body. Within a second, his Fate Palace released and absorbed multiple circular auras, and his eyes shot out a luminous flash.

Right after, his Fate Palace underwent a momentous change. The Spring of Life to the East was suddenly flooded with the Water of Life. It traveled to all of the corners and caves, slowly creating a small spring.

To the west, a bright fire burned the sky. The Cauldron of Life's flame was ignited, and the Soul Fire within it was lit aflame; it was as if it was capable of melting any existence in the world.

The south did not want to lose to the others. The Tree of Life radiated many circular golden auras, and its leaves started to spring to life. Countless Life Energy surrounded the Tree of Life; it was as if it was a sleeping dragon being woken up from a long slumber. It let out a loud roar filled with infinite power.

Lastly, to the north, there were also loud commotions. The Pillar of Life exerted a heavy presence; it was as if it was ready to connect the heaven to the earth. The mysterious Dao symbols on its body started to move around like they had their own consciousness.

The Second Awakening! The second level of Palace Foundation was the Second Awakening stage. It took him three months to complete the first level.

At the same time, all of the symbols and Dao truths from the Kun Peng's Six Variants happily came to life. Sometimes it was Kun Peng playing with Li Qiye's True Fate by flying to and going inside it. At other times, it became a Kun, and it swam in the surrounding water, jumped up and down, and caused huge tsunamis.

Li Qiye's heart was filled with excitement. He took a deep breath; finally! He did not waste his time!! To go ten thousand miles, one starts with a half step. This was a great beginning!

If other cultivators had to spend three months to get to the second stage, they wouldn't be as excited; they would have even thought that he was trash.

After his True Fate went back into its slumber, Li Qiye left his excitement behind. He started to cultivate to a higher level. The slow had to start early, and the talentless had to be diligent. Throughout his life, he had seen many cultivators with average aptitudes become extremely strong masters; they were undefeated their whole lives, and they did this by being hard workers. He had also seen many geniuses fall into deep despair, without a chance to lift their heads.

A cultivator's talents and physique aren't enough; one also needs a strong Dao willpower, and a will strong enough to follow the road to the end. One day, he would be the last one smiling, and he would be the one to stand at the highest peak, looking down on humanity.

Chapter 35 : Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique (1)

The Third Bloodsurge was the last level of Palace Foundation. This level was just like its name suggested; from when the blood of a cultivator finally condensed into a single drop of longevity blood, this was the sign of a successful bloodsurge.

There was a widespread saying in the world of cultivation: The Physique grows one's Blood, the Blood feeds one's Life Wheel, the Life Wheel strengthens one's Fate Palace, the Fate Palace, in turn, helps strengthen one's Life Wheel, the Life Wheel, then, supplements one's Blood, the Blood augments one's Physique, and the Physique, then, protects one's Fate Palace.

Physique, Life Wheel, and Fate Palace; these three existences have always benefited and synergized with each other. One could not be missing from any of these.

A strong Physique allowed the blood energy to be strong. The strong blood energy would prolong the lifespan, the longer the lifespan, the stronger the Fate Palace would be, and a formidable Fate Palace allowed the cultivator to obtain an even stronger Physique.

The Fate Palace also lent its power to the Life Wheel. The Life Wheel would create Longevity Blood, the Longevity Blood would strengthen the Physique, and, then, the stronger Physique can protect the Fate Palace.

However, no matter how this system worked, all three were surely dependent on one's blood energy. If a cultivator's rank was too high, a weaker blood energy would not be able to support his formidable Physique, Life Wheel, and Fate Palace; thus, there was a need for the blood energy to become Longevity Blood.

Longevity Blood was extremely valuable to any cultivator. Each drop of Longevity Blood was created through many purification cycles. They were not only the pinnacle of blood energy, but they also contained the mysterious grand Dao.

There was another saying regarding the blood: "Ten thousand blood, one longevity; one blood, ten thousand years longevity." Many cultivators interpreted this differently during their training.

However, there was a common theme with their interpretations. It was that one drop of Longevity Blood required ten thousand bits of blood energy to form, and one Longevity Blood drop of an Immortal Emperor could allow a mortal to live for ten thousand years.

Although no one had tried to use an Immortal Emperor Longevity Blood on a mere mortal to prolong his lifespan; the above phrase should make it clear on how valuable it was regarding each drop of Longevity Blood.

To reach the stage of Third Bloodsurge wasn't anything impressive; a normal cultivator only needed a few months.

The crucial point of this stage was to use a Longevity merit law to improve the blood energy, and Li Qiye was doing just that.

The Life Wheel behind his back radiated its heavenly light while it rotated Li Qiye's blood energies in a circular pattern. Also, in the center of the rotation was a vortex. Once this vortex appeared, his blood energy became stronger and faster; it flowed like a torrential downpour.

Because of his Mortal Physique and Mortal Life Wheel, his blood energy was originally anything but impressive; however, at this particular juncture, his blood energy was reaching the level of Xiantian Physique and Life Wheel.

His blood energy flowed like a river, never stopping. It quickly finished one revolution around his Upper Dantian to his Lower Dantian. It became faster and faster until there was a giant vortex forming in Li Qiye's body, shaped like a round bloody crescent sun.

This was the magical and frightening part of the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law; this method could turn one's blood energy into an extremely powerful flow. Because of this unbelievable speed, the Fate Palace within Li Qiye's True Fate suddenly came to life.

In this moment, Li Qiye's True Fate had been completely awoken. It was akin to a huge Kun sucking up the blood vortex that was rotating because of his Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law.

The Kun kept on sucking in the vortex with extreme speed; the written incantations of the Kun Peng's Six Variants came into life with blinding lights. These incantations completely crushed the incoming vortex into smaller pieces in the refining process.

After the process, the blood energy became even purer and thicker with crystallized shinings. Then, the tempered blood was thrown back into the Life Wheel. The True Fate became even stronger as well as the Kun Peng's incantations. Each incantation resembled the Kun Peng as if they were made from real flesh; it slowly split into even smaller Kun Peng's as they flew to the four directions, filled with life.

The whole operation was very natural like this was how it always had been.

Li Qiye's Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law was actually purifying the blood energy, making it stronger, as well as using it to power the incantations within his Fate Palace.

Throughout the years, countless disciples had tried to cultivate the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law; however, they failed because their method was flawed and imperfect. They could only lament in failure.

Li Qiye's version was perfected through sheer effort and patience across the years. It was something that he couldn't have done by himself; however, he succeeded with the help of people like Min Ren, Tun Ri, and the Black Dragon King, amongst others...

After one day and one night of blood purification, he suddenly heard a thud; it was as if an extremely heavy object had fallen into his Life Wheel. At this moment, he felt like his mind was enlightened; everything was clear to him. His whole body was relaxed and surrounded with golden aura, and his blood aura, in the back of his Life Wheel, was brighter than ever before.

Li Qiye examined his body; he found a drop of flashing Longevity Blood; it was crimson like fire and extremely beautiful like it was a creation from the heavens appearing in the Life Wheel.

This drop of blood was the proof that Li Qiye had successfully broken through the stage of Palace Foundation and officially step into the Palace Expansion stage.

(TL Reminder: Palace Foundation, Palace Expansion, Yun Physique, Provision Palace, Inner Longevity, Heaven's Mandate, Warrior Canopy, Purified Rebirth, Heaven's Primal, True Deity)

If one was to say that Li Qiye took three months to reach the Second Awakening stage within the Palace Foundation, then no one would believe that it only took him one day and one night to create a drop of Longevity Blood; however, this was the frightening power of the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law.

A genius could reach the Second Awakening within a day, but it would take him at least ten days to form one drop of Longevity Blood. However, Li Qiye only required one day to accomplish this task; no one would be calm after hearing this news.

This was also why many geniuses chose the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law despite its flaws, in the past, because of its unbelievable speed for cultivation.

The next day, when Nan Huai Ren saw Li Qiye, he was very surprised and asked:

-Senior... You... You... You have reached Palace Expansion already?

-I reached it last night.

Li Qiye insipidly stated.

If it was another person, he would be very proud; only the most heaven shattering geniuses would be able to form a Longevity Blood drop in one day; however, Li Qiye knew that this was all because of his merit law. He, personally, didn't have anything to be proud of.

After hearing Li Qiye's answer, Nan Huai Ren, in a daze, said:

-Senior! I still remember that a few days ago, your True Face had still not reached the Second Awakening stage...

-Two days ago, I reached Second Awakening.

Li Qiye was still as calm like water in a well, and he answered.

-You... You truly took three months to reach Second Awakening, but you only took one day to purify your first Longevity Blood drop?

After knowing the full story, Nan Huai Ren's frozen body weakly asked.

Li Qiye only smiled, without words. After a moment, Nan Huai Ren was both afraid and marveled by the speed:

-The Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law is truly a wondrous method; no wonder many disciples in the past had tried to cultivate it.

His voice, filled with regrets, also rang again:

-It is so unfortunate that the flaw of the method is also a fatal wound. Many geniuses tried to perfect this method, but no one had succeeded.

Nan Huai Ren curiously asked again:

-At what stage will you switch to a different Life Wheel method?

From his knowledge, he knew that one couldn't cultivate with

the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law forever because of its unfixable flaw.

The best way to cultivate from the beginning to end, no matter if it was a Life Wheel law or Fate law, was to use the same method throughout; this was how one truly improved his cultivation.

A cultivator could change their existing cultivation method, but that would leave behind irreparable defects in the future for their grand Dao road. One day, when a calamity comes, this defect would be a fatal weakness.

However, for many cultivators, not many were exposed to the best merit laws when they first started their cultivation paths. If a person started with an Emperor merit law and stuck with it for his whole life, it was a good thing; However, if he started with a lower rank merit law, then his future achievement would be extremely limited.

From Nan Huai Ren's perspective, even though Li Qiye had cultivated the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law, in the future, he would need to change his method. Otherwise, he would ultimately be ruined by this merit law.

Because of this, Nan Huai Ren politely reminded Li Qiye:

-Senior, you should quickly switch from this merit law; the sooner the better. Once you reach the dead end, it will be much harder to change; you will be unable to sever the control of this method from your blood energy.

Chapter 36 : Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique (2)

This situation had happened many times in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. There were many talented beginners that believed in the same idea. First, cultivate using the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law to sprint through the early stages; then, wait until the merit law was no longer effective; lastly, change to a different merit law. However, once these geniuses were trapped in this ideology, they could never shake off the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law because the way this merit law moved blood energy was completely different from any other Life Wheel merit laws.

This was the reason why, later on, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect no longer agreed for disciples to practice this method. Disciples with great inner talents were completely forbidden from doing so.

-I have my own plan.

Li Qiye smiled and didn't say anything else. Of course, he couldn't reveal the secret of this merit law. If other people knew that he had perfected the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law, then the consequences could only be imagined!

Nan Huai Ren knew that Li Qiye wasn't an ignorant person, nor arrogant, but he didn't understand where Li Qiye's confidence was coming from regarding this topic.

-I heard second brother is coming in a few days!

Nan Huai Ren mainly came today to bring Li Qiye this message.

Li Qiye lightly nodded, and did not inquire further. He was not concerned about this second brother, the disciple of the Sect Master, that Nan Huai Ren spoke of.

After Nan Huai Ren's departure, Li Qiye, once again, diligently immersed himself in his cultivation. Although he already had the unparalleled arts of the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law and the Kun Peng's Six Variants, he was not lazy in the slightest.

Palace Expansion also had three stages. First, Merit Law's Building; second, Essence Development; third, Earth's Extension.

A grand completion of Palace Foundation meant that: both Life Wheel and Fate Palace merit laws were finalized, and the Dao basics of the Life Wheel and Fate Palace were successfully forged.

At this moment, Li Qiye could choose to cultivate different merit laws, no matter if it was a Fate Palace, Life Wheel, or Physique method.

The next method would be dependent on the finalized merit laws; this was why cultivators called the first stage, Merit Law's Building.

However, Li Qiye wasn't in a rush to start a new method; he wanted to perfect the Invisible Dual Blades as well as strengthening his Physique, making it powerful.

To a cultivator, a powerful Life Wheel and Fate Palace was not enough, he would also need a powerful Physique.

The Life Wheel and Fate Palace were determined by the heavens, no one could change that; but the Physique was different, it could be improved through cultivation.

Natural Physiques also varied greatly. The Mortal Physique was the weakest while the Immortal Physique was the best. Cultivators differentiated between Physiques from weak to strong with the following: Mortal Physique, Houtian Physique, Xiantian Physique, Emperor Physique, Saint Physique, and Immortal Physique.

One could be born with a Mortal Physique, Houtian Physique, Xiantian Physique, Emperor Physique, or Saint Physique; but it could not be an Immortal Physique, because it was the pinnacle of all Physiques. From the ancient times until the present, no one had ever heard of a natural Immortal Physique.

For the constitution, the Xiantian Physique was the determining factor of whether one could successfully cultivate his Physique into a higher level. If this was the case, then there was a chance that one could eventually successfully cultivate into an Emperor Physique, Saint Physique, or even an Immortal Physique.

However, the Houtian Physique did not have that possibility. For example, the Golden Hawk Physique of Xu Hui belonged to the Sky Eagle Physique family and was considered to be a powerful Houtian Physique.

Through cultivation, the Golden Hawk Physique could eventually reach the state of Heavenly Hawk Physique or even its highest state, Immortal Hawk Physique. Although this last state was not weaker than an Emperor Physique, this Houtian type of Physique would never be able to obtain the pinnacle state of Immortal Physique.

Evolving from the Golden Hawk Physique to Heavenly Hawk Physique was a strengthening process, while going from a Xiantian Physique to an Emperor Physique was a rise in rank and essence.

Emperor Physiques and Saint Physiques also had many limitations. For example, the Emperor Golden Bull Physique was a strong Physique within its family and could rise to the rank of Overlord Physique through cultivation, but cultivators could not cultivate it into their own special Physique, even if it was the same rank.

Physiques given by the body would remain the same type, even with cultivation; no merit law nor high ranking Physique method could change that.

However, the Heaven's creations were mysterious and magical! Although the Golden Hawk Physique and Emperor Golden Bull Physique couldn't escape their limitations no matter how heaven defying the cultivation method was; there was one Physique

capable of the ordeal. A Physique that was dismissed by many people, the Mortal Physique!

One could cultivate the Mortal Physique into the Golden Hawk Physique, the Emperor Golden Bull Physique, and even an Immortal Physique in the legends. Before cultivation, the mortal body was not limited by any factors.

Whereas the Houtian Physique, with a natural fire attribute, must find a method with a similar affinity. If a fire attribute picked a water Physique cultivation method, it would create a fatal dissonance for one's cultivation.

The Mortal Physique did not have such a requirement; before the cultivation road, one could pick any Physique building method.

Of course, to rise from a Mortal Physique to a Houtian or Xiantian Physique was not an easy task. The cultivator required a formidable Physique method, as well as a willpower that was ten times higher than others; lastly, a high grade Physique paste was necessary. The higher the grade and quantity, the better.

This was why, to successfully increase the rank of a Mortal Physique into a Xiantian Physique, would be a monumental task; monstrous efforts must be exerted.

This was the reason no one in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect wished to invest in someone with a Mortal Physique, Mortal Life Wheel, and Mortal Fate Palace like Li Qiye; any Physique method or high grade Physique pastes used on such an average person

would be a waste.

Li Qiye realized that his chosen road would be extremely torturous, but his heart had not wavered ever since he got his hands on the Physique Scripture, one of the Nine Grand Heavenly Scriptures; a treasure that was craved even by Immortal Emperors.

If someone had successfully done it in the past, then Li Qiye knew that he was capable as well. The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect's Immortal Emperor Min Ren had many descendants; they believed that his Immortal Physique was natural gifted by the heavens, but Li Qiye knew that these words were completely nonsense. He single handedly nurtured Min Ren so he was aware of all the facts, that Immortal Emperor Min Ren was not born with an Emperor Physique, or a Saint Physique, but a Mortal Physique. This fact would be hard for the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect to accept, but this was the truth. When Min Ren was younger, Li Qiye taught him one of the Nine Heavenly Scriptures. The word "Yang", meaning the sun, was the chosen Physique method for Immortal Emperor Min Ren. Thus, he successfully cultivated one of the twelve Immortal Physiques.

Today, Li Qiye opened the Physique Scripture; all of the esoteric incantations regarding it appeared in his mind. From the past till the present, no one had ever grasped the mysteries of the Physique Scripture more than Li Qiye; thus, he was able to create a number of legends.

From the Desolate Era until now, he was never lax when it came to researching the Physique Scripture. Especially during the time when the Black Dragon King ruled the land, this was when his

mastery reached its peak. Until later, his situation had a complication and thus, he had no choice but to command the Black Dragon King to erase all of his memories regarding the Physique Scripture.

The Physique Scripture had a total of six incantations: Yin and Yang, Hardness and Softness, Pure and Taint!

Even though the Physique Scripture only had six incantations, they were the ultimate evolution of the mysterious truths in all of the Physiques. In the distant era, there were twelve Immortal Physiques, but no one knew that they originated from the Physique Scripture.

Once one reached the grand understanding for any of the six words; each word would give birth to two different Immortal Physiques and a cultivator could only pick one from the two.

For example, Immortal Emperor Min Ren was taught the word “Yang” by Li Qiye . There were two Immortal Physiques that stemmed from the word “Yang” at grand completion; Immortal Solar Physique and Immortal Light Physique. Min Ren was able to cultivate the Immortal Solar Physique.

After generations of deductions and numerous years of studies and understanding, Li Qiye realized that the Physique Scripture could cultivate any Physique, but there were no Physiques stronger than the twelve Immortal Physiques.

At this moment, Li Qiye had decided to cultivate the word

“Taint” to grand completion, to the extreme. He wanted to cultivate the Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique from the twelve Immortal Physiques.

Li Qiye knew that the process to reach grand completion for the Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique would be very long; it was not something that could be done in one day and one night. A fast completion would be a few hundred years, while a slow completion would be a few thousand to ten thousands of years.

However, he had extreme confidence in himself. Even if he was born with a Mortal Physique, through perseverance and willpower, one day, he would be a practitioner with the Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique.

The Physique Scripture surfaced in the mind of Li Qiye. He controlled the incantations of the word “Taint” like an unstoppable river into his Fate Palace.

His True Fate that was absorbing the blood energy earlier was now also absorbing the mysterious truths of the word “Taint”. Polished by the True Fate, the mysteries of the word “Taint” were being integrated into his blood. At this point, his body was startled, and it seemed like everything had become slow, as if time had stopped.

Chapter 37 : Tu Bu Yu (1)

The Life Wheel continuously spun while the blood roared. The Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law was an absolutely outstanding law, even through the eons; it turned the blood energy into a ferocious vortex.

Right when the incantations of the word “Taint” appeared in the blood of Li Qiye, his blood became extremely heavy; the blood flow slowed down due to this.

However, no one could underestimate the magic of the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law. After the mysterious truths of the word “Taint” slowed down the blood flow, the merit law angrily acted up, using its full power, controlled the Life Wheel, and roared with all of the impact in the world.

The stagnating blood flow suddenly became faster with the push from the Life Wheel and the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law. The blood flow in Li Qiye’s body, at this moment, was like a gigantic dragon that was rampaging, fierce and immense.

The overbearing blood went into a rampage, tearing apart Li Qiye’s meridians, destroying his bones, and burning down his Fate Palace. Within a short moment, Li Qiye’s Physique was nearly ruined.

Li Qiye, in agony, spat out a mouthful of fresh blood. This was a great pain that he almost couldn’t handle. Suddenly, there was a

crack that appeared in his body, and in the next second, his whole body began to shatter like a piece of porcelain.

The power of the mysterious truths within the word “Taint” was more than people could ever imagine. The blood, with tremendous weight under the pull of the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law, could overwhelmingly destroy anything.

Li Qiye’s body was severely crushed; his Mortal Physique could not withstand the power of divinity from the conflicting force inside his body! However, the word “Taint” was certainly not trying to kill Li Qiye. If the mysterious truths of the Physique Scripture was nothing more than this, then it would not be coveted for many eons by Immortal Emperors.

Li Qiye’s palace was also destroyed by the force of the vigorous blood, but as his body was crushed, many songs of the Grand Dao started to sing. Countless mysterious truths from his Fate Palace came into action; his True Fate was absorbing the endless incantation runes, and these runes made his True Fate radiate Life Energy throughout his body.

At this moment, under the effect of the word “Taint”, the Spring of Life gushed out a raging Water of Life; it was as if a tsunami had appeared. The Cauldron of Life immediately burned with Soul Fire; the Soul Fire brightly shook the heaven and earth.

The thousand leaves of the Tree of Life stretched brilliantly toward the four directions; they emitted countless Life Energy. Afterwards, the Leaves of Life fell down to the ground, and the deepest root of the Tree of Life connected to the deepest part of Li

Qiye's Fate Palace. All of the roots eventually tied Li Qiye's whole body, locking together his shattered remnants.

The Pillar of Life used its mysterious incantations to connect to the word "Taint", as well as the heaven and earth. The incantations ran endlessly and started to borrow the power of the world to make the body of Li Qiye pierce the Nine Heavens and drill into the Nine Earths.

At this time, the Water of Life, Soul Fire, Leaves of Life, and the incantations of the Pillar of Life were refined by the word "Taint" while surrounded by Li Qiye's blood. They turned into Primordial Chaos energy which wrapped around the entire, broken body of Li Qiye.

(TL: The word "Taint" is the same as the first letter in "Primordial Chaos")

At this moment, Li Qiye's body was tormented by the heavy blood on the inside, which weighed as much as ten thousand mountains, while the Primordial Chaos energy was surrounding him like a mud paste in a blockade. The whole process was extremely painful.

However, despite the pain, Li Qiye was still holding on. Li Qiye was enduring so that the blood with the "Taint" mysterious truths would refine and recreate his body; because the Primordial Chaos energy was encompassing his body, his completely shattered body didn't break into pieces onto the ground.

Blood, once again, disintegrated Li Qiye's body. The "Taint" mysterious truths, time and time again, destroyed Li Qiye's body; this process was like a giant hammer smashing into Li Qiye time and time again while the Water of Life, Soul Fire, Leaves of Life, and Pillar of Life's incantations combined into Primordial Chaos energy, and was recasted to the broken areas in order to rebuild Li Qiye's body.

If outsiders could see this scene, they would be shocked to witness the power of the Fate Palace Four Symbols: the Spring of Life, the Tree of Life, the Cauldron of Life, and the Pillar of Life.

For eons, countless sages wondered and studied the mysterious truths of the Fate Palace Four Symbols to no avail. It was believed that only Immortal Emperors could comprehend the entirety of the truths within the Four Symbols.

However, at this moment, a thirteen year old boy was able to communicate with the Four Symbols; it was simply unthinkable.

In fact, since ancient times, regarding the mastery of the Fate Palace Four Symbols, no one went as far as Li Qiye did, including Immortal Emperors. He spent endless years researching the Physique Scripture, how could there be someone else who had the same grasp of mastery as he did?

Suffering time and time again, the refinement continued. Li Qiye did not know how long the process had been; the pain had made him numb.

Ever since he had chosen the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law and the Physique Scripture, this result had been within the expectations of Li Qiye.

Although he could have also cultivated the Physique Scripture without the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law, in this world, there was only this merit law that was capable of driving the mysterious truths behind the word “Taint” within the blood flow.

Because of the Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique, he needed the power of the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law; not only to completely destroy his body, but also to reshape it into a higher rank.

An unknown amount of time had passed; Li Qiye felt an itch throughout his body. The body reshaping had been completed, his shattered body pieces were connected once again. His pain had totally disappeared and when he opened his eyes again, his body was without damage. It was hard to believe that Li Qiye’s body, which was fragmented and split, was now without the slightest wound; it exceeded people’s imaginations.

There were different advantages and disadvantages for different Physique methods; each method for the formation of different Physiques vary, but in this world, there was no other Physique method that was flawless like this Physique Scripture. To be able to completely destroy a body, then reform it perfectly; in the entire process, there was no lasting harm.

When Li Qiye stood up and took a step, the brick below him was instantly shattered. He did not activate his blood energy, nor

exercise his merit laws; it was purely due to his body movement. The effect of the Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique from the word “Taint” was frightening.

When a cultivator practiced the word “Taint” to grand completion, two different Immortal Physiques would appear. They were the Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique and the Sky Destroyer Immortal Physique.

Although they came from the same word “Taint”, these two Immortal Physiques were completely different.

The Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique made it so that the body was as heavy as a thousand mountains. Once a cultivator reached grand completion of this Physique, it was said that he could crush everything with his own body, including the galaxy itself.

There was a saying: the Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique was immeasurably heavy; one lift of the foot could stomp to death both Immortals and Demons. From this saying, one could only imagine how heavy the Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique truly was.

The Sky Destroyer Immortal Physique turned the body into a mighty, infinite power. When completed, a cultivator could rip apart the earth barehanded and wrestle a real dragon; these were easy matters.

Li Qiye had been cultivating on the peak while using this self-torturing method for more than a month. With the Revolving

Crescent Sun Merit Law rotating his blood non-stop, Li Qiye had broken through two small stages within just a month. The last two stages, Essence Development and Earth's Extension, were not a challenge to him.

When he was about to pass the Essence Development stage, his merit law led the Life Wheel to spin. His heavy blood energy bellowed out roars and turned into a huge vortex, sucking blood up and down inside it.

This vortex, combined with the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law and the Kun Peng's Six Variants, frantically absorbed the world's spirit energy. The Kun Peng inside his Fate Palace, the world's largest creature, opened its mouth and satisfyingly swallowed the spirit energy from the heavens like an endless pit.

In the blink of an eye, Li Qiye nearly absorbed all of the spirit energy surrounding his old peak. Fortunately, there were no other people around; otherwise, this would cause a great shock.

This spirit energy from the world was moved into his True Fate where it was refined. The more spirit energy there was, the stronger the True Fate; the stronger the True Fate, the stronger the Dao foundation; the stronger the Dao foundation, the stronger the cultivation level.

After the True Fate had absorbed enough of the world's spirit energy, it radiated an aura with enough force to tear away the vast fogs from the four oceans. At this moment, the True Fate wanted to break away its own boundary, to turn this vast space into its own territory. This process was called Earth's Extension.

Nan Huai Ren was shocked to find out that it only took Li Qiye a month to break through the two stages of Essence Development and Earth's Extension.

-Within a month, to enter the Yun Physique stage, senior is too crazy!

Nan Huai Ren was envious from watching; this speed could be comparable to geniuses.

Of course, Nan Huai Ren didn't know that if Li Qiye didn't cultivate the Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique and didn't have the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law to carry his blood which weighed thousands of pounds, he wouldn't have such a satisfying result.

Chapter 38 : Tu Bu Yu (2)

Nan Huai Ren was only envious, he did not want to become a victim of the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law. Everyone knew that cultivating this method would result in a trap, set up by its effect that was impossible to get out of, becoming a piece of trash in the end.

Seeing Nan Huai Ren's expression, Li Qiye only smiled and didn't say anything else.

The next day, Li Qiye woke up early, as usual, to cultivate. However, when he opened the door, he was startled because there was a man standing quietly outside.

It was an old man, around the age of fifty to sixty. He was wearing a robe made out of vines, his face was lean without any facial hair, but his eyes were extremely alive. Although he was old, his back was straight and his spirit was high.

-Senior, good morning!

The old man respectfully clapped his hands when he saw Li Qiye.

-Uh!

Li Qiye didn't know what to say. He was always calm and collective while looking at life, but he was at a loss with the current event. If the boy Nan Huai Ren called him "senior," it would be acceptable; however, this was an old man, around fifty to sixty years old, respectfully calling a thirteen year old boy like him, "senior"; such a strange thing.

Li Qiye regathered his wit and said:

-Elder, you must be mistaken, I am not your senior.

The old man looked around, and turned his gaze back to Li Qiye and asked:

-This place is the Prime Disciple's peak?

-Yes!

Li Qiye truthfully answered. If this old man didn't have such a good spirit, he would think this was an encounter with a mentally ill patient.

-You are the Prime Disciple of our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, correct?

Li Qiye obediently answered honestly again:

-Yes, I am Li Qiye.

The old man smiled and formally bowed his head, then said:

-Then it is correct. This is your peak and you are the Prime Disciple, which means that you are my senior.

-Uh!

Li Qiye suddenly became silent, he was certain that the old man didn't have the wrong person. But in the end, to have such an old man calling him senior felt very strange and uncomfortable.

-Sorry, sorry, I'm late!

At this time, Nan Huai Ren breathlessly rushed in from the outside, and smiled.

When Nan Huai Ren arrived, he saw Li Qiye and the old man standing still in front of the door. He coughed awkwardly, then did their introductions:

-Big brother, this is second brother. Second brother, this is...

-I know, he is big brother!

Before Nan Huai Ren could finish, the old man interrupted him and earnestly replied.

-Uh, nice to meet you, second younger brother!

Li Qiye hesitantly gave out a courteous response.

The old man nodded, revealing a very nice smile, and said:

-Senior, this younger brother's name is Tu Bu Yu. I am also the second disciple of the Sect Master. Since you are the Prime Disciple, you are the eldest brother of all of our third generation disciples.

Seeing his kind smile, Li Qiye's head was shaking. He wanted to yell: Uncle, I am only thirteen years old and you are fifty to sixty years old, please don't play coy in front of me and call yourself "younger brother."

Finally, Li Qiye invited Tu Bu Yu inside the house, then he dragged Nan Huai Ren to the side and asked:

-What is going on?

Having a younger brother like this old man, Li Qiye was at a loss for words.

-Uh!

This time, it was Nan Huai Ren's turn to not know how to

answer. It took a while before he calmly responded:

-Brother, a couple of days ago, I already told you that second brother was coming back.

Li Qiye, of course, knew about the second brother coming back because Nan Huai Ren had told him this, but he didn't pay attention. He thought that the second disciple of Sect Master Su Yong Huang would be around thirty years old, at the most forty. But this younger brother in front of him was at least fifty years old. He was surprised and startled to have a younger brother this old.

-Brother, he is indeed Tu Bu Yu, the second disciple of the Sect Master.

Nan Huai Ren said with confidence. The truth was, before, the Sect Master only had Tu Bu Yu as a disciple; Li Qiye had only recently went under the Sect Master's wing.

Li Qiye contemplated for a moment. He had not met his master yet, but only this fifty year old second brother.

However, it was true that he was the Prime Disciple and with that status, all third generation disciples – despite their age – had to call him “big brother.”

-How many more older disciples do we have here at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect?

Li Qiye glanced at Nan Huai Ren and asked. Imagining a scene where a bunch of old men gathered around him and respectfully called him “big brother,” Li Qiye could not stand it.

-Only one person like that...

Nan Huai Ren quietly laughed.

After hearing the response, Li Qiye sighed in relief and walked toward Tu Bu Yu:

-When did junior Tu come back? Did master come back with you?

-Dear big brother, this young brother came back alone. I only...

Tu Bu Yu said with a serious manner and an exposing kind smile.

Li Qiye immediately interrupted him, and said:

-Younger brother, you are sixty; please don't be so courteous, you are shortening my life.

-Dear big brother, I am only one thousand six hundred and seventy five years old this year.

Tu Bu Yu, while keeping his amicable smile, seriously answered.

-Crash!

Li Qiye staggered, almost falling over after hearing the answer. Not only him, but even Nan Huai Ren couldn't stand straight.

-Could, could you repeat that...

Li Qiye was almost choked to death by his own saliva. A one thousand year old man called him big brother. Dear heaven, does one really need a younger brother this old?

-This young brother is one thousand six hundred and seventy five years old.

Tu Bu Yu slowly repeated without changing his tone.

Li Qiye glared at Nan Huai Ren, and Nan Huai Ren could only innocently smile; he, himself, didn't know that Tu Bu Yu was so old.

-Big brother, are you okay? Do you want this young brother to get you a cup of water...

Seeing Li Qiye's choking expression, Tu Bu Yu kindly offered.

Li Qiye recovered and broke Tu Bu Yu's words mid-sentence:

-Grandpa, please stop calling yourself young brother, I'm getting goosebumps. First, I am only thirteen years old, you are above one thousand; you calling me big brother is only shortening my life. Second, this is the main point, why are you trying to be cute in front of me, calling yourself young brother? Are you implying that I am really old compared to my age? Do I look that old? Huai Ren, do I look that old?

Li Qiye crazily spoke nonstop, Nan Huai Ren was smiling on the inside. This was the first time he had seen this senior unable to hold onto his calm emotions.

However, under the killing glare of Li Qiye, Nan Huai Ren could only smile and pretend to look elsewhere.

-If this is big brother's command, this young brother... no, I will respectfully obey.

Tu Bu Yu was receptive, with a smile on his face.

-Such a brilliant decision, young brother Tu.

Li Qiye nodded his head approvingly.

Tu Bu Yu smilingly replied:

-When it comes to heavenly brilliance, I am not your equal.

Tu Bu Yu's words silenced Nan Huai Ren. He used to think that he was smooth and slick, good at reading other people's mind, but this old man was even faster at flattering than he was. It seemed that Nan Huai Ren had met his match.

Li Qiye only smiled and certainly did not mind this. One could see that Tu Bu Yu was an interesting and wily person; a person living for one thousand years like him could call a thirteen year old boy "big brother" in their first meeting. This type of person, if he wasn't an insidious mastermind, then he would be a person who could read the circumstances, knowing what to do in each situation.

Of course, no matter what type of person he was, he could not escape from the eyes of Li Qiye. He had seen many people; when it comes to reading people's thoughts and characters, very few could hide their intentions and nature in front of him. Otherwise, he wouldn't be able to cultivate the invincible Min Ren.

Li Qiye and Tu Bu Yu only just casually talked for a little bit, then they said their goodbyes. In fact, Li Qiye didn't really care for Tu Bu Yu's purpose in coming back to the sect, so he didn't bother asking; this wasn't a big deal to him. Li Qiye only had one goal; that was to make himself powerful, rebuild the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, and kill anyone who tried to block his steps, leaving no survivors!

If the appearance of Tu Bu Yu yesterday was strange and funny for Li Qiye, then the news from Nan Huai Ren the next day was unexpected to him.

The next day, Nan Huai Ren and his master, Protector Mo, went up to the peak. They reported to Li Qiye, giving important news: Tomorrow, Li Shuangyan, the princess of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, will be coming to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

As the person in charge of the marriage between the two factions, Protector Mo was the first to be informed regarding Li Shuangyan's arrival by the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

-Coming is fine, it is best to come after thinking it through completely. But if not, it doesn't really matter.

Li Qiye was quite surprised. He thought that the Nine Saint Demon Gate would wait for eight or ten years, he didn't expect that Li Shuangyan would be coming in less than a year.

Of course, if the Nine Saint Demon Gate was to wait for ten years before making a move, then Li Qiye wouldn't open his door for them. By then, his wings would have become full-fledged so there was no need for the Nine Saint Demon Gate to come. What he needed right now was a timely ally, not someone who would "embroider flowers on cotton cloths."

(TL: Basically giving help when it is no longer necessary, cottons was considered expensive/high class in the era where this phrase originated from.)

Protector Mo was too hesitant to personally ask Li Qiye, so he winked at Nan Huai Ren. Nan Huai Ren understood his master, and had to bite the bullet to ask:

-Senior, if princess Li actually wanted to stay at our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, would you really let her be a sword maid?

Chapter 39 : Princess's Arrival (1)

Li Qiye answered Nan Huai Ren:

-Of course. Now that the word is out, why change it!

Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren winked at each other, and Nan Huai Ren finally stuttered:

-B-bu-but she is the descendant of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, and the princess of the Old Ox country.

-So what?

Li Qiye was like an ancient well without waves, and calmly said:

-Little Nan Huai Ren still hasn't reached the apex, he still has a lot of training to do.

Nan Huai Ren and his master were silent, not knowing what to say. The words "So what?" were very short and simple, but what kind of arrogant attitude and confidence was required to say these words?

Li Shuangyan wasn't only the descendant of the Nine Saint Demon Gate and the princess of the Old Ox country, but she was also one of the geniuses possessing an Emperor Physique, Emperor

Life Wheel, and Saint Fate Palace. She had incredibly great talents.

Whether it was talent or appearance, Li Shuangyan was not below anyone in the Grand Middle Territory, or even the entirety of the Mortal Emperor World. There were enough men that wanted her love to make a line from the east to the south of the Old Ox country.

Even then, Li Qiye was not satisfied; she was only worthy of being his sword maid. If this news were to be spread, who knew how many men would want to kill Li Qiye.

Nan Huai Ren and Protector Mo had given up in front of Li Qiye's arrogance; this was not the first time they've seen this. They only gently sighed, and didn't dare to report this to the Six Elders, afraid that the Six Elders would be scared silly.

-Do the Elders know about this?

Protector Mo shook his head:

-I have not reported this to the Elders. We have decided to wait until we spoke with you first before reporting to the Elders.

Ever since their return to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect from the Nine Saint Demon Gate, the two, master and disciple, had to choose between Li Qiye and the Six Elders – and they chose Li Qiye. To others, this was an odd decision, but Protector Mo had thought it through.

-Then report it to the Elders!

Li Qiye nodded this head without much care.

Even if people of this era valued the Nine Saint Demon Gate and Li Shuangyan, to Li Qiye, they were nothing. No matter how talented Li Shuangyan was, she still couldn't compare to Immortal Emperor Xiu Shu that year!

After leaving Li Qiye's peak, Protector Mo immediately reported the message to the First Elder. First Elder Gu couldn't sit still when he heard this news.

-What, Princess Li is almost here?

Compared to the nonchalant Li Qiye, the First Elder's reaction showed a lot more shock.

After Protector Mo confirmed that the news was absolutely true, the First Elder walked back and forth in the room; his heart was extremely excited.

Protector Mo secretly sighed, this was the gap; Li Qiye had no reaction to the news whilst the First Elder was extremely serious and ecstatic. No doubt, the First Elder greatly valued the marriage

between the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

Finally, the First Elder calmed down and calmly commanded:

-Send the command to Li Qiye, tell him to prepare well to welcome the arrival of Princess Li.

-Yes!

Protector Mo accepted; he wasn't foolish enough to tell the First Elder that he had already told Li Qiye first.

-Also inform all of the Elders, Protectors, and the rest of the disciples within the sect. We have to use the most solemn ceremony to greet the arrival of Princess Li. During this time, no one can make any mistakes, understand?

The First Elder gravely commanded.

Protector Mo immediately accepted the order and didn't say anything else. If this was before, then Protector Mo, like everyone else, would heavily value this marriage; but because of Li Qiye's influence, his view on the grand scheme of things had changed. Like Li Qiye, he believed that becoming a subsidiary for the Nine Saint Demon Gate wasn't a permanent solution. Only strength itself was the fundamental path.

Of course, Protector Mo was also clear that the current Cleansing

Incense Ancient Sect was lacking an upper echelon that could independently deal with all of the dangers – that had enough strength to reignite the sect.

-Princess Li coming to our sect is one thing, but what about the issue of the marriage?

After finishing his commands, the First Elder continued his questions. His heart was also clear, that the current Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was too weak, and with a new start, they would need the backing of the Nine Saint Demon Gate to survive.

Which was why this marriage must be successful; it further guaranteed the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect's chance of revival.

-This...

Protector Mo didn't know where to start. The truth was, he had heard from one of the Elders from the Nine Saint Demon Gate that if Li Qiye had chosen to stay at the Nine Saint Demon Gate that day, then his marriage with Princess Li would definitely already have been settled and assured.

-I'm afraid only the Princess and the Demon Emperor would clearly know the answer.

In the end, this was the only thing Protector Mo could say. Some things, he couldn't reveal too much about.

The First Elder took a deep breath of relief and said:

-Relay my order to Li Qiye; tell him to take good care of Princess Li during her stay here. We absolutely cannot let her have a hint of displeasure; try to win the Princess's favor. When the time is ripe, tell him to propose to her. If he could marry the princess, then the sect will heavily reward him!

The First Elder made so many commands that Protector Mo was frozen without words. In fact, Li Qiye didn't even want to marry the Princess; even if Princess Li was willing to follow him, the best she could do was being a sword maid. Of course, Protector Mo couldn't tell the First Elder that, because he would certainly become crazy.

-Yes!

Protector Mo quickly affirmed. He would definitely relay the order to Li Qiye, but he also knew that Li Qiye would definitely just laugh it off.

Overnight, the news regarding Li Shuangyan's visit to the sect spread throughout the entire faction; everyone was ecstatic.

Especially the young male disciples, they were more excited than anyone else. Although they haven't seen her figures, they had heard about her reputation; Princess Li of the Old Ox country,

descendant of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, a beautiful and peerless talented woman.

She was the goddess in everyone's dream, the object of affection for many of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect's male students.

A senior brother couldn't help but exclaim:

-Goddess Li, you can say that she is the real beauty of our Grand Middle Territory. Five years ago, I was on a mission to the Old Ox country, I only caught a glance but I guarantee that she is the most beautiful woman I have ever seen.

-Princess Li's visit! Maybe there is a chance to get her favor!

Another younger brother started daydreaming, and said:

-On looks and talents, I am also famous in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. If I could get her attention, then I could soar up into the sky. In the future, I will be the Sect Master of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, it is no problem!

All of a sudden, the male disciples became more active; some started to dress up meticulously. Especially the disciples who were considered to be talented in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; they put on their True Armors and True Treasures in visible sight so that Princess Li would take a second glance at them.

The next day, all of the disciples in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect gathered outside the Dao gateway, the Six Elders were present as well, along with the Protectors and sectional leaders; as long as they were still present in the sect, they had to participate in this feast today.

All of the disciples were wearing their most extravagant clothing, even the female disciples were dressed up.

Normally, only the upper echelons were allowed to stand on top of the Dao gateway, but there was an exception today. There were two other people qualified to stand here to greet Li Shuangyan.

One of the two was today's hero, Li Qiye, and the second was Leng Shi Zhi – who was known as the genius of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

Leng Shi Zhi was only twenty years old with a handsome face, a fit and muscular body, and his confident smile which always gave him the aura of a genius.

Leng Shi Zhi was a disciple of the second elder, Cao Xiong. This Leng was the most talented disciple, he was considered the top genius of all of the third generation disciples.

Leng Shi Zhi joined elder Cao Xiong's rank for almost twenty years; today, he is at the Warrior Canopy ranking. At such a young age with such a strong cultivation in a declining sect like the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, he was not just a genius in name.

Back then, when the second elder Cao Xiong had an aspiration of ambition to become the Sect Master, Su Yong Huang appeared out of nowhere and he lost the chance to become the head of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. This event had always haunted him.

Today, Su Yong Huang didn't have a successor; Cao Xiong used all of his resources to groom Leng Shi Zhi so that this disciple could easily win the seat. He had wanted for Leng Shi Zhi to become the Prime Disciple, but Su Yong Huang had refused, and the First Elder didn't support him. This was the second hatred in his heart.

Even though Li Qiye was now the Prime Disciple, Cao Xiong did not put Li Qiye – this waste of life – in his eyes. With Li Qiye's disposition, he was not qualified to fight with his disciple, Leng Shi Zhi, for the seat of the Sect Master.

So, for this visit of Princess Li to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, Cao Xiong had especially commanded his disciple, Leng Shi Zi, to seize this golden opportunity; if he could get Li Shuangyan's favor, then becoming the Sect Master, it would no longer be up for question. No one in the sect, then, whether they be the Elders or Su Yong Huang, wouldn't be able to stop his steps at becoming the Sect Master.

So today, Leng Shi Zhi was particularly well dressed, wearing treasure clothing with radiating lights, with a pair of boots accompanied by white clouds, and on his waist was an Eight Treasures Jade Jewel with a faint sound of the Grand Dao; his whole body, with the treasures, exerted a formidable pressure.

Chapter 40 : Princess's Arrival (2)

Leng Shi Zhi was anxious to put all of his most powerful treasures on his body, afraid that someone wouldn't know that he was the first genius of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, as well as one that possessed numerous treasures.

In fact, Leng Shi Zhi wasn't the only one to dress up today, all of the male disciples were adorning beautiful clothings as well. Their treasures were in plain sight on their bodies, afraid that people wouldn't know that they didn't have so many treasures.

Li Qiye saw this scene and could only shake his head. He told Protector Mo who was standing near by:

-These people seemed to be attending the circus, not Li Shuangyan's greeting party!

Nan Huai Ren didn't have the qualification to stand next to the upper echelons during the greeting party, only Protector Mo was next to Li Qiye. Hearing those words, Protector Mo could only let out a small hollow smile.

-Be more formal!

At this time, Leng Shi Zhi who was standing in front turned back and coldly said:

-Princess Li is the descendant of the imperial family, the most distinguished guest of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. We must greet her in the most dignified manner, in order to avoid disgrace and shame to our sect!

Finished speaking, he looked at Li Qiye with disdain.

At this point, Li Qiye alone, was wearing a cotton garment, unadorned by any treasures and looked exactly like a mortal. At first, Leng Shi Zhi was assigned to be standing side by side with Li Qiye, but Leng Shi Zhi believed that he was above the piece of waste, so he took the initiative to stand in front.

-Her royal highness' presence is definitely an honor to all of us.

Among the male disciples waiting, one excitedly exclaimed.

Leng Shi Zhi was dismissive of these disciples, their talents were so average, how could they win Princess Li's favor. It was simply a toad wanting to eat a swan's meat! Hmmph, as for the idiotic Li Qiye, he wasn't even a toad; he was not even qualified to have such a thought.

With this thought, Leng Shi Zhi had an even greater disdain for Li Qiye. Although the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and the Nine Saint Demon Gate had an ancient marriage pact, only the Prime Disciple like Li Qiye would have the right to marry Li Shuangyan. However, Leng Shi Zhi didn't care for this ancient convention; Li Qiye was not qualified to marry Li Shuangyan in his eyes, and surely Li Shuangyan would hate a piece of trash like Li Qiye.

In Leng Shi Zhi's opinion, as long as he had the opportunity to be close to Li Shuangyan, he could please her enough to win her favor. He was extremely confident in himself, he was the first genius of the sect after all!

Li Shuangyan had yet to come. At the ancient gateway, some of the younger generation couldn't help but quietly whisper amongst each other. A disciple asked:

-This time the princess is coming to our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, what is her purpose?

-I heard that the Prime Disciple and the successor of the Nine Saint Demon Gate were determined to be married.

An older disciple knew a little about it, and thoughtfully said.

-Marriage?

After hearing this answer, one disciple glanced at Li Qiye and contemptuously said.

One disciple said with disdain:

-Him? Hmmph, in my opinion, the princess came to dissolve this marriage. Her royal highness would be dismissive of an idiot with a Mortal Physique, Mortal Life Wheel, and Mortal Fate Palace.

-Whatever reason it might be for the princess' arrival, this is a good chance for us to be close to her royal highness.

A disciple excitedly said.

The only person without any interest in these little arguments was Li Qiye. It was fine to occasionally act in a play, but if this took any longer, he would lose his interest!

At this time, an “Ooomph” resonated from the Dao gateway, it blindingly illuminated the eyes. The brilliant crystal door was opened, and the dimension between the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and the Nine Saint Demon Gate was finally connected. A group of people stepped out from the gateway, and the first person was the successor, Li Shuangyan of the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

In addition to her, there were a few familiar faces to Li Qiye, such as Grand Protector Yu He and a few exceptional disciples of the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

Li Shuangyan, still dressed in white, her masterpiece of an alluring face was still cold as snow; arrogant like a goddess sitting on her throne, causing even the moon and sun to blush in her presence.

As for the male disciples, especially the ones that were seeing Li Shuangyan for the first time, they were stunned by her beautiful face and figure and couldn't recover for a long time. Even the female disciples found that the appearance of Li Shuangyan totally

eclipsed their own, and subconsciously felt ugly in comparison.

The person who claimed to be the first genius of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, Leng Shi Zhi, couldn't keep himself from staring at Li Shuangyan's features; he lost his thoughts for a long time, unable to recover.

The Six Elders were surprised because they thought it would just be Li Shuangyan, but Grand Protector Yu He came as well.

One had to know that Yu He was a powerful figure even within the Royal Nobles of the Nine Saint Demon Gate. Even the Elders of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect didn't have the qualification to meet Yu He; but this time, he personally came along, and this made the sect feel quite proud.

The Six Elders quickly recovered, and brought the Protectors forward to greet him.

-Princess Li and Protector Yu's arrival brings our sect great honor. If our small faction's hospitality has any mistakes, I hope for the princess and grand protector to forgive.

The First Elder led the pack and greeted them.

Seeing this, Li Qiye sighed. The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had really declined. The great Six Elders of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect of Immortal Emperor lineage had to act in such a servile manner, these people were helpless.

Way back then, when Min Ren and him were still controlling the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, they never had to bow down to anyone. He sent the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect to sweep the whole Nine Worlds.

Virtuous Paragon? Ancient God? Who dared to stop the rise of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, kill without mercy! Heavenly Demon, Blood Race, and even the High Elf blessed by the heavens had to come worship the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Between the nine heavens and ten earths, in the middle of this world, who had the qualification to make the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect subservient?

-Elder Gu and everyone are too kind!

Li Shuangyan lightly nodded her head and Grand Protector Yu He stepped forward to return the greeting.

At this time, Li Shuangyan's bright eyes fell upon Li Qiye. Even though they showed no emotions and were as cold as ice, their attractiveness were still apparent. Li Qiye, however, was still casually standing, calm and comfortable as if there was nothing important enough to warrant his attention.

Seeing Li Shuangyan walking away, Yu He and the other disciples from the Nine Saint Demon Gate quickly followed.

Numerous disciples held their breaths, their minds were frozen from staring at the beautiful girl ahead. The First Elder was

relieved to see this scene. No matter what, Li Qiye had successfully passed the trial of the Nine Saint Demon Gate. Li Shuangyan going towards his direction was a good start.

Leng Shi Zhi was trying to regain his composure and he saw Li Shuangyan coming closer. He was ecstatic. Of course, Li Shuangyan had noticed him – the first genius of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. So he arched his back and exposed a confident smile to greet Li Shuangyan.

Seeing this, many male disciples were jealous and envious, but they had to admit that Leng Shi Zhi as the first genius of the sect and was the one who was the most entitled to Li Shuangyan's blue eyes.

(TL: To get into someone's blue eyes is to get their respect or acceptance)

However, Li Shuangyan didn't bother to look towards his direction. She went straight towards Li Qiye, making Leng Shi Zhi's expression freeze.

-Li gongzi!

(TL: Gongzi is close to Mr. but mostly meant for younger men. A suffix meant for respect)

Li Shuangyan greeted in front of Li Qiye. The two of them, one masterpiece of alluring beauty, and the other was just an ordinary

boy; them standing together created a scene that was like the difference between the heavens and earth.

Li Qiye just casually nodded, despite Li Shuangyan's peerless beauty. He was not moved by her honoring gesture, he leisurely smiled and said:

-It is best to figure it out completely!

Of course, these abrupt words could only be understood by a few people here.

-It is my honor to see gongzi again.

Yu He also stepped forward and clapped his hands:

-Our majesty has a message for you. He hopes that when you have some leisure time that you would visit our sect as a guest, his majesty will personally greet you.

-If the Demon Emperor said so, then I won't be so reserved.

Li Qiye smiled and then continued:

-Coming to my Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect as a guest, you don't need to be so restrained; if there are any inconveniences, just let Protector Mo or Nan Huai Ren know.

-Gongzi's words, Yu He understand!

Yu He nodded, and greeted Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren.

This small action caused a shiver in the master and disciple pairing, because the words from Li Qiye before had changed a lot of things.

Although they were on the side of Li Qiye, they have not been given any real benefits. However, with Li Qiye words just now, their status had been elevated greatly.

Even the greeting party led by the Elders were using a subservient status to greet a Royal Noble like Yu He. However, with Li Qiye's words, it meant that he placed them in the same position as Yu He, and they could directly communicate with Grand Protector Yu He of the Nine Saint Demon Gate. Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren felt like the decision of joining Li Qiye was their wisest choice; their destiny would be changed in a way that others couldn't ever imagine.

Chapter 41 : Princess Can Only Be A Maid (1)

This scene caused everyone to be stunned, and this included the Six Elders. Although they were the Elders of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, with their cultivation, the best they could do was to be given the title of Named Hero from counties.

Yu He was different; with the status of Grand Protector of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, he was an extremely powerful Royal Noble. He could even be granted the title of Enlightened Being.

This was why practitioners with lower cultivation levels than Yu He, like the Elders of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, didn't have the qualification to stand side by side with him; because of this, their positions were already lowered by half.

The Six Elders respectfully greeted Yu He while the Grand Protector was speaking to Li Qiye with reverence; no one understood the events that were unraveling before their eyes.

What was even more incredible was that Yu He also brought a message from the Demon Emperor Lun Ri: that if Li Qiye, once again, became a guest at the Nine Saint Demon Gate, Lun Ri would personally greet him.

Who was the Demon Emperor Lun Ri? He was the mighty overlord of one direction; he could walk vertically and horizontally across the world. The Elders of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect

could only stare from afar, and someone like Demon Emperor Lun Ri wanted to personally greet Li Qiye? This was an unimaginable matter.

(TL: Walking vertically and horizontally means that he could do whatever he wishes)

As for the other disciples, they were unable to think. At once, the people on the scene were standing frozen in place. However, they were even more shocked at the scene where Li Qiye naturally curved his left arm; Li Shuangyan glared at him for a second, without saying anything. She then, gently, held Li Qiye's arm, and she left with Li Qiye in a submissive manner.

“Protector Yu, I don't have time to entertain you.”

Before leaving, Li Qiye only left behind one sentence while Yu He was bending his back to say goodbye.

No one in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect understood; none of them had any explanations for the things that had just happened. These events were so outside of their own imagination. The disciples, Elders, and Protectors were all petrified, and they could not recover for a long time.

While everyone was still flabbergasted, Li Qiye had brought Li Shuangyan back to his ancient peak. Once they stepped inside the small house, where there were only the two of them, Li Shuangyan withdrew her hand from Li Qiye.

She angrily narrowed her eyes at Li Qiye, and her cold and arrogant voice rang in the air:

“This time, are you satisfied?”

Li Qiye acted as if he didn't see Li Shuangyan's attitude. He comfortably sat in a chair, and he looked at her, slowly saying:

“In front of everyone, do you think by grabbing my hand is akin to granting me a great honor? Satisfying my vanity? No, you are mistaken. This Li Qiye does not need such vain admirations.”

“The fact that I let you borrow my arm is my giving you three parts face...”

Li Qiye paused for a second, and his eyes became cold; he then spoke in a serious manner:

“I have always hid the shortcomings of the people by my side, and I have always protected them. Since you wanted to follow me, I gave you face by letting you hold my arm. This is so you could be proud! Strictly speaking, as my sword maid, you don't have the status to hold my hand and walk alongside my shoulder; you need to remember this!”

“You!”

Li Shuangyan was shaken with anger, and her face was deeply flushed with redness. She accepted the order to come to this place, to let go of her royal status; she patiently held the hand of this bastard, and she followed him in the presence of everyone. One could say that she gave him ten parts face. However, now, he dared to say these words. How could she not be angry?

“You have your pride, I can understand.”

Li Qiye did not acknowledge her anger, and he continued speaking:

“You were ordered by the Demon Emperor to come here, but, in your heart, you did not want to. You consider yourself to be a talented woman, a beloved daughter of the heavens, and you look at me with great contempt; you believe me to not be worthy of your attention for even a second – this is normal. However, remember these words, today, I let you hold my arm. This is to give you a good beginning. If you feel victimized by having to follow me, then that is your concern. The decision is yours; however, when comes the day of my sweeping this entire heaven and earth, there will be no place for you by my side!”

A thirteen year old boy, saying these most confident and arrogant words, even a prince coming from an ancient country would not make such a statement. However, today a thirteen year old boy said such dominating words.

If others said such a thing, then it would certainly be arrogance and ignorance. However, Li Shuangyan looked at Li Qiye’s incomparably calm expression and his tone showed his confidence

in saying the most arrogant words in the world. If it was another time, she would have thought of him as being presumptuous, ignorant, and the King of Ye Lang; however, now, she could not see this pattern in his appearance.

(TL: King of Ye Lang is an expression of calling someone ignorant and arrogant. The original raw has another idiom for arrogance + ignorance so it sounds more poetic than this version)

Of course, Li Shuangyan didn't want to come here voluntarily. Outside of Demon Emperor Lun Ri's command, even the honorable Elder Sword of the Nine Saint Demon Gate thought that following Li Qiye would grant her a promising future; they eventually persuaded her, so that she would come.

This matter, for Li Shuangyan, could be considered an incomparable grievance. She was the Nine Saint Demon Gate's successor, and she was the princess of Old Ox country. Whether it be talents or appearance, she was an outstanding phoenix; she was a beloved daughter of the blue heaven.

Her male suitors, even if only counting the talented geniuses, were numerous like the carps crossing the river, but she didn't care; however, today, she had to lower herself into becoming a sword maid for a mortal.

Her master, Demon Emperor Lun Ri, was an expert with an extremely powerful cultivation with great talents and intelligence; even in the era where the Heaven's Will was fractured, he was able to defy the heavens and become a tyrant in one direction. However, this generation's overlord, and her master, would value someone that only had a Mortal Physique, Mortal Life Wheel, and

Mortal Fate Palace; this made her so perplexed – without an answer – after much thought!

She wanted to release the anger in her heart, but she didn't know how; she wanted to call Li Qiye ignorant, but the situation did not seem to be this way.

In the end, Li Shuangyan couldn't contain herself and angrily said:

“Good, you consider yourself to be unparalleled in the world, then prove it to me. If you truly have that sort of ability, then I'll consider those words to be legitimate. Otherwise, you are just daydreaming to satisfy your own ego.”

Looking at Li Shuangyan for a moment, Li Qiye slowly raised his voice:

“Proof? I have nothing to prove!”

Li Shuangyan angrily shivered at Li Qiye's arrogant attitude. He was only thirteen years old, obviously younger than her, but his words were incomparably domineering; it was as if he was the supreme emperor for an entire generation. This thirteen year old boy had went mad to say such words in such an indifferent and bored manner.

“I have a magical formation; if you can just say a few mysterious truths regarding it, not to mention you being able to solve this

formation successfully or not, then you do have some ability!”

Finished speaking, Li Shuangyan took out an ancient beast fur – its origin was unknown. It was a myriad of curved symbols, Dao runes, stars, and formations of dots. This little beast fur, seemingly, contained all of the stars in the universe; it was as if it held all the profound mysteries in the heavens and earth.

If one took a careful look, their spirit would be sucked out instantly with the feeling that they had suddenly entered a mysterious world. No matter how marvelous and supreme one’s talent was, they wouldn’t be able to control themselves. They would be captivated by the mysterious truths of the beast fur, and eventually, fall enamored to the magical formation, unable to escape from the inside.

Li Qiye looked at this old fur; it was too familiar. In the blink of an eye, a corner of the magical formation clearly appeared in his head. This was one part of the memories regarding the complete magical formation hidden in the mind of Li Qiye, and that was the magical formation on the ancient beast fur.

This little corner of the magical formation was simply too profound. Regarding the complete formation, Li Qiye was too lazy to remember the whole memory because no one else knew more than him.

“This is only a corner of a broken formation. Listen carefully, now: Starting from Kui Xing constellation, go towards the Nine Entrances, avoid the Eight Full Moons, turn into Nine Stars, switch to the Milky Way, and then return to the Dao...”

Li Qiye calmly spoke while pointing with his fingers:

“This will be the center of the broken formation; it is carefully protected by six Beasts and four Immortals, together. From the past until now, the people who could successfully break through this formation could be counted on one’s fingers.”

(TL: Kui Xing = one of the twenty eight mansions. All of these terms here are based on Daoism constellations and beliefs, the same as the Fate Palace)

Li Qiye eloquently spoke without pause; it was as if he had them memorized. Each word, from his mouth, made it sound like it was not a masterpiece magic formation, but merely a trivial technique.

However, Li Shuangyan was shocked completely. She knew the heaven shattering secret of this broken magic formation. Even her patriarch, ancestor of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, was only lucky enough to have this little ancient beast fur. This corner of the broken magic formation, alone, was enough for the many geniuses and Virtuous Paragons of the Nine Saint Demon Gate to research through several generations; in the end, they were able to completely understand the profound truths behind this broken formation.

Despite understanding the theory, they could not actually recreate this magical formation for practical usage. Seeing Li Shuangyan’s talent for magical formations, Demon Emperor Lun Ri passed the formation to her, full of optimism, since she might be able to, one day, understand this formation even further; this too, could be a boost to her training. Half of her current cultivation was

also related to this magical formation.

From a young age, Li Shuangyan had already started studying this formation, but it took ten years for her to understand it. This was under the guidance from the knowledge left behind by the Virtuous Paragons. Otherwise, someone else, without such good circumstances, would waste an unknown amount of time.

Li Shuangyan's dream was that, one day, she could create this formation; even though it was only a broken corner, it would still be able to kill Gods and Immortals; however, she knew, with her current cultivation and luck, this dream was impossible.

This trip to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, Demon Emperor Lun Ri also wanted her to bring along the ancient beast fur and wait for the right opportunity to ask Li Qiye to see if he knew anything about it or to hear his thoughts regarding it.

Li Shuangyan would never, even in her wildest of dreams, think that Li Qiye would be able to, with a single glance, eloquently describe this broken formation that was considered peerless in the world.

Chapter 42 : Princess Can Only Be A Maid (2)

Li Shuangyan had a suspicion that Li Qiye had seen the ancient formation somewhere else previously; however, she quickly dismissed this idea because the Nine Saint Demon Gate had to pay a great price in order to obtain this single copy of the broken formation that the Formation Progenitor had left behind. It could be said that, besides the Formation Progenitor who had died in the Ancient Era, only their Nine Saint Demon Gate knew about the existence of this broken formation.

But now, Li Qiye, with a single glance, had been able to recite information regarding the broken formation as if it was something insignificant, and was nothing more than a lesson on memorization.

This made Li Shuangyan frightened into being speechless for a long time; she had spent ten years of research, along with the guidance of many generations of great sages from the Nine Saint Demon Gate, yet all of this was only equal to a few words that were hastily spoken by him? Such an event greatly damaged her confidence.

Even the most heavenly talents weren't able to understand the formation with just one glance, but Li Qiye had done just that. Li Qiye's words alone could have defeated all of these geniuses. The worst part was, Li Qiye wasn't a genius!

Li Shuangyan didn't know that Li Qiye had already seen the complete formation in its entirety during the ancient times, and that was why, upon seeing the ancient beast fur, his memories of the formation had resurfaced.

“Come here.”

At this point, Li Qiye leisurely beckoned for Li Shuangyan to come closer.

Because Li Shuangyan still hadn't recovered from her shock, she subconsciously came closer to Li Qiye. She didn't even know why she did it.

“Pow, pow, pow!”

Li Shuangyan was still in a daze, so Li Qiye grabbed her, placed her over his lap, laid her down, and without any mercy for beauties, swung his big hand onto her butt several times; he caused it to numbingly burned.

“What are you doing?!”

Li Shuangyan was like a cat that had its tail stepped on, as she jumped to her feet, and loudly yelled. Her face blushed red, and she angrily glared at Li Qiye.

As for Li Qiye, he just patted his palms in a comfortable manner, like it was a trivial thing to do, before slowly saying, “As my maid,

you need to be aware of your situation. I can forgive the people around me, and favor the people around me; this includes you, even if you're only a maid. However, you have to remember, never provoke me! Don't think that just because you're heaven's favorite daughter that you can flip over the earth!"

"You!"

Li Shuangyan seethed with anger. She was the favorite daughter of heaven, and was the princess of the Old Ox country. In the past, until now, she'd always been in a high position, and no one had dared to be disrespectful towards her. However, today, a small man had mercilessly spanked her on the bottom; this sort of shameful thing truly made her tremble.

"Go, find a place in which to live by yourself."

Li Qiye motioned with his sleeve to imply the departure of the guest, ignoring Li Shuangyan's feelings.

"You... Little man! You...! You better remember this!"

In the end, without knowing how to vent her anger, she enunciated each word clearly. She had always been superior, looking down below from her high position, and countless talented young men wanted to win her favor. However, today, Li Qiye said a few hateful sentences, and he then told her to leave; he didn't even arrange her a place to stay. This really infuriated her!

Li Shuangyan left with her arms waving angrily in the air; her royal highness, at the age of eighteen, was provoked by a thirteen year old boy to the point of wanting to vomit blood. Even she couldn't believe it.

“Do not try to practice the ‘Immortal Emperor Slaughtering Formation’ any longer.”

At this point, Li Qiye's calm voice echoed from behind:

“The formation on your hand is simply a small corner of the Immortal Emperor Slaughtering Formation. If you force yourself to cultivate it, one day, you will be ruined by this formation. Even the ones that knew about it since the Ancient Era long ago didn't dare to cultivate it on a simple whim; let alone you. If you truly want to repair this array, once your cultivation has matured, I will think about teaching you a thing or two.”

Based on the cultivation and talent of Li Shuangyan, most people normally didn't get the chance to ask her for guidance, and now a little man like Li Qiye wanted to guide her?

However, the four words “Immortal Emperor Slaughtering Formation” made her stop in her tracks. This formation was a legend left behind by many generations. Most people didn't believe of its existence, but Li Qiye was talking about it like he had it grasped in the palm of his hand.

Even though she was curious, her anger had not subsided; nor her pride. Thus, she only scowled angrily, and she ignored Li Qiye.

Then, she continued leaving.

Li Qiye didn't care whether Li Shuangyan was in a good mood or not; he simply sat in his chair in silence. Immortal Emperor Slaughtering Formation! How many years had passed? His lost memories suddenly resurfaced once he saw the corner of this broken formation.

In the warring era, against the Ancient Ming, how many people died in this formidable formation? How much of a price did he have to pay to build this formation?

This eternally invincible ancient formation; a formation that, once completed, would be bathed in the blood of many masters. Many immortal sages and himself spent their blood and sweat to create this formation.

In the devastating war against the Ancient Ming, for the Mortal World and all of the Human race, numerous masters had died in this formation. He controlled the grand formation, side by side with his brothers, generals, and comrades, to fight a heaven shattering battle; blood painted the sky.

He did not remember how many people had died on the battlefield, nor how many peerless masters that followed him had been sacrificed. He only remembered his pain, in silence, after the battle.

Time could erase everything, and time could heal all wounds; however, some memories could not be forgotten even through the

passing of time because they are imprinted in the deepest part of the soul, never to be forgotten.

Li Qiye sighed, and he regained his composure. He did not allow himself to drown in emotions and indulge in the sentimental past. The past had passed, and the present was worth living. In this life, he would have the chance to traverse the Nine Worlds and personally repay some old scores; not only for himself, but for the people that had sacrificed themselves for him as well.

Li Shuangyan's visit to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was an important event; not only did it make the young male disciples sleepless, but it also made the upper echelon excited.

Only Li Qiye acted like nothing major had happened. He didn't care whether Li Shuangyan was going to leave or stay; if she was willing to pledge allegiance to him, then, in the future, he would reserve a spot for her next to him. If not, then so be it. He would not be missing capable assistants. Even without her, he could find a substitute; it was this simple!

This night, Li Shuangyan was with a stomach filled with angry steam. Her teeth grinded, and she silently cursed Li Qiye. She didn't stay in Li Qiye's small mansion, and she also didn't leave this place; however, she chose to create a small treasure building down from the corner of Li Qiye's peak, and she entered inside. Although she did not live with Li Qiye, she also didn't leave his peak.

With the arrival of Li Shuangyan and Yu He, the biggest harvest was gained by Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren because they were in charge of the entire trip for Yu He and his people at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

This was no minor event because they could work alongside a Royal Noble like Yu He; they could ask him many questions about cultivation and his experience – this was a big benefit. The most essential thing was still Li Qiye's words that allowed for Protector Mo's and Nan Huai Ren's positions to elevate greatly within the sect.

Yu He obeyed Li Qiye's order, and he left everything for Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren to decide. They became the special envoys between the two sects.

One has to remember that before disciples, and even the Six Elders of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect wouldn't necessarily be able to meet Grand Protector Yu He. However, now, simple organizers like Nan Huai Ren and Protector Mo could directly meet with Yu He to discuss events; this meant that the relationship between the two sects had become more intimate.

The improved status of Nan Huai Ren and Protector Mo; this left many Protectors, Sectional Leaders, the third generation disciples, and even the second generation envious.

Despite all of the commotion, Li Qiye did not care. The most important thing to him right now was to refine his Dao

foundation, not allowing any room for mistakes, and carefully cultivate towards flawless perfection. Once there was a mistake, this small mistake would be a fatal danger on the road of cultivation; especially when he faces the time of Life Reduction and the Fate Calamity. As long as his base was solid, with a strong Dao foundation, then in the future, he could go farther; he could exceed the apex.

(TL: Life Reduction is when the Life Wheel weakens, Fate Calamity is a fated time of calamity)

Many geniuses wanted to rush their cultivation ranking and they neglected their refinement of the Dao foundation; rushing for success caused the Dao foundation to have defects. In the end, they died in regrets during the moments of Life Reduction and the Fate Calamity.

This was why Li Qiye's expectation for himself was very high. Even though the peerless Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law could increase his cultivation speed, he still limited its effect for a solid foundation. If he stopped his own suppression, then he could easily break through into the Inner Longevity rank.

(TL: Reminder: Palace Foundation, Palace Expansion, Yun Physique, Provision Palace, Inner Longevity, Heaven's Mandate, Warrior Canopy, Purified Rebirth, Heaven's Primal, True Deity)

Li Shuangyan had stayed at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect for seven days. Time had passed without any incidents, but this morning, Nan Huai Ren visited Li Qiye's peak along with a middle-aged man.

“Senior, this person is Sectional Leader Zhou, an instructor at Cleansing Jade Peak.”

Nan Huai Ren immediately introduced the man to Li Qiye.

His senior only glanced at Sectional Leader Zhou once, and he nodded his head:

“What is the matter?”

Li Qiye’s attitude was arrogant in the eyes of Sectional Leader Zhou, and his heart was uncomfortable. He coldly scowled, but he didn’t say another sentence.

Nan Huai Ren quickly replied:

“The Elder has decided that senior will temporarily replace Sectional Leader Zhou as the instructor of Cleansing Jade Peak. Today, Sectional Leader Zhou brought along a list of disciples of the Cleansing Jade Peak, as well as detailed information regarding them. The Elders hoped that senior would accept this decision.”

Sectional Leader Zhou was just silently listening. He, a Sectional Leader, was meeting him but Li Qiye didn’t show him any respect. He left the roster behind, and he then turned away without leaving any words or reminders behind.

Chapter 43 : First Elder's Plan (1)

After Sectional Leader Zhou had left, Li Qiye glanced through the roster of the disciples at the Cleansing Jade Peak; there were a total of three hundred disciples, and the first disciple of the Cleansing Jade Peak has been there for five years.

Li Qiye read through the roster once, and he then, looking towards Nan Huai Ren, asked:

“Do you have any comments?”

Nan Huai Ren dryly laughed:

“Dear senior, this little brother doesn't want to wildly speculate; however, if you really want to know my perspective, then this little brother could only dare to say a thing or two!”

Nan Huai Ren was always smooth and understanding, and he knew conversational limits; once he chose to be under Li Qiye's wing, then he would go where Li Qiye points.

“Dare my fart!”

Li Qiye contemptuously yelled and then, he continued speaking:

“If you use the same amount of energy you spend on treacherous

scheming to cultivate, your current power would reach a very high rank.”

Hearing Li Qiye’s words, Nan Huai Ren could only force himself to smile:

“Senior, one can’t do any different from his natural disposition, birthed by the heavens.”

“Fine, don’t give me more treacherous words. Tell me your opinions.”

Li Qiye lightly waved his hand. He didn’t care for the smooth words of his junior. Nan Huai Ren’s nature had been solidified; it couldn’t be changed even if he wanted to.

Nan Huai Ren quickly said:

“I heard one piece of news: The First Elder wanted you to teach the disciples how to cultivate at the Strange Gem Peak, but the second elder has been advocating for you to teach at the Cleansing Jade Peak...”

“Keep going with your conjectures, so I can listen to them!”

Li Qiye casually smiled; he had already understood the essential factors behind this event.

Nan Huai Ren was no longer flippant; he continued explaining his thoughts in a serious manner:

“The second elder has great influence at the Cleansing Jade Peak because senior Leng Shi Zhi also studied there. Although Leng Shi Zhi was only a third generation disciple, with his cultivation, he had already been equal in status to the sectional leader uncles.”

Here, Nan Huai Ren looked up to see Li Qiye’s expression because he knew; when it comes to strategy and tricks, this senior was the most frightening person.

“Mm, how did the other Elders react?”

Li Qiye smiled.

“This...”

Nan Huai Ren pondered for a moment. Even though he was gifted at reading people, but, as a third generation disciple, there were many things that he was not privy to.

“It is very simple! We just need to see whether the First Elder still wants to compete for the Sect Master position, then, we can make an accurate conjecture.”

At this moment, Tu Bu Yu arrived; he spoke while he walked forward. Even though he was more than one thousand years old, his body was as vigorous as a young man; his face always had a

kind smile.

“Keep going, I’m listening.”

Li Qiye did not mind the presence of Tu Bu Yu joining the conversation; thus, he commanded him to go on.

Tu Bu Yu smilingly said:

“Senior, no one in our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect has more influence than the First Elder. He is a serious man, administrates fairly, and, on top of that, he was also the eldest disciple of the previous Sect Master. One could say that he has the biggest opportunity to become the Sect Master of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.”

“Our master isn’t the eldest disciple of the previous Sect Master?”

Li Qiye was a little surprised to hear Tu Bu Yu’s response. He had thought that, because Su Yong Huang was the eldest disciple from the last Sect Master, that was why she became the new Sect Master.

Tu Bu Yu shook his head and smilingly answered:

“Master’s situation is a bit special unlike the First Elder. Within the first generation of disciples, the First Elder was the most likely successor; in fact, amongst the Six Elders, only the second elder

had competed for the Sect Master's seat. The other four, in theory, had always supported the First Elder."

"Then what does the First Elder think about this situation?"

Li Qiye stroked his chin, and he asked.

Tu Bu Yu quickly replied:

"Everyone knows about how Cao Xiong yearns for the Sect Master's seat, but no one knows what the First Elder is thinking. Even though the other four Elders support him, fervently, he still hadn't shown a decisive attitude. I'm afraid that, in recent years, the other four Elders stance have been shaken because of this."

Li Qiye looked at Tu Bu Yu and teasingly said:

"Master has been outside for many years, and younger brother seldom returns to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; however, it seems like you are still pretty well-informed on things."

It made one think about why Su Yong Huang still grasped the exact situation of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect even though she wasn't here. Li Qiye was a bit curious, but he didn't care for the First Elder's attitude, let alone Su Yong Huang's or even Cao Xiong's. Since he had made up his mind about reviving the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, no one could stop him; not even his master-in-name, Su Yong Huang.

“Senior, please stop joking. As a disciple of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, this is our home; of course we have to pay attention to our home’s current situation.”

Tu Bu Yu graciously smiled; his words were humbling.

Since Tu Bu Yu had started speaking, Nan Huai Ren had been silently listening. A monster living for more than one thousand years more than possessed the necessary qualifications to discuss the situation of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

He was definitely an old fox! Li Qiye silently cursed in his mind, and he then calmly smiled:

“Since younger brother is back, then you should know about master’s attitude more than anyone, eh.”

If this second disciple was a smart person, then Li Qiye wouldn’t waste time talking in circles; he would directly ask about the main point.

(Nahct: Beating around the bush – we didn’t want to lose the original meaning)

Tu Bu Yu’s expression was still the same, and he smilingly said:

“Senior is the Prime Disciple of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, and you represent our future glory; whatever senior does or says, master will not interfere.”

Not bad. Such mastery at pushing and pulling; as expected from a one thousand year old fox. Li Qiye was impressed with the sly conducts of Tu Bu Yu. If the disciple was like this, then what would the master, Su Yong Huang, be like?

(TL: The first raw sentence is using Tai Chi's ideologies to describe someone dodging a question completely)

Li Qiye only smiled after he finished speaking. Right now, he didn't want to cause a commotion in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; once his cultivation reached an acceptable height, he would take action and deal with everything.

Leaving Tu Bu Yu to the side, Li Qiye directly commanded Nan Huai Ren:

“Huai Ren, go bring all the information regarding the merit laws that are currently being practiced by the disciples at the Cleansing Jade Peak to my place; I want to see what they are playing with.”

Nan Huai Ren quickly affirmed and turned around to take care of it without neglect.

However, before Nan Huai Ren had returned, Li Qiye was invited to meet the First Elder via his disciple.

The Cleaning Ancient Incense Sect used to have over one thousand primary peaks; however, right now, there were only

seventy-three peaks, and even these seventy-three were withering; the natural world energy within them had slowly been depleted.

As the First Elder, Elder Gu was qualified to own the tallest peak containing the highest amount of natural world energy in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

As a third generation disciple like Li Qiye, being invited to a private conversation with the First Elder would be considered a tremendous honor in the eyes of the other young disciples.

Li Qiye comfortably sat in the hall, facing the First Elder, without any worries or nervousness.

The two of them stared at each other for a long, yet, as they examined each other's attitude, no one was willing to make the first move.

Eventually, the First Elder couldn't wait any longer; he sighed and opened his mouth:

“Li Qiye, this seat does not understand you. If others say that you are from the Nine Saint Demon Gate, then you are too irrationally arrogant.”

(TL: Certain people in powerful positions refer to themselves as “this seat”)

The First Elder was quite blatant with his words; then, he too might as well open the sky for a truly clear and direct

conversation. Li Qiye smiled indifferently and said:

“What is the First Elder’s implication? That I am a spy from the Nine Saint Demon Gate?”

“This isn’t something that can be confirmed or denied on my own.”

The First Elder wittily responded.

Li Qiye smiled after hearing these words; this answer was not outside the realm of his expectation. He stared at the First Elder for a moment, he then inquired:

“How others look at it doesn’t matter. The most essential thing, here, is your opinion. What does the First Elder think about my teaching of the Dao at the Cleansing Jade Peak?”

The First Elder stood up and went to a window. He silently stood there, without saying a word, akin to a statue. After a while, he turned around, stared at Li Qiye, and then said:

“I, alone, cannot administrate everything in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, especially during this time.”

“It seems like the four Elders attitudes has been shaken!”

Li Qiye smiled and thought about the words of Tu Bu Yu. He

understood the thoughts of the First Elder. Although the four Elders had always supported Elder Gu, a long period of time could wither or shake their attitudes; Cao Xiong's ambition for the Sect Master's seat had been apparent for a long time. It would be strange if they didn't reconsider their attitudes.

“I was born and raised in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, and my master was my benefactor; his kindness, to me, was as heavy as a mountain.”

The First Elder's tone became heavy and continued:

“I do not want to see the day where the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect suffers a great calamity befallen from the heavens.”

Li Qiye was silently listening. A moment later, the voice of the First Elder rang again:

“Our enemy isn't the people in our sect; they are from external forces such as the Heavenly God Sect.”

“Elder, please guide me through this maze.”

Li Qiye nodded, accompanied by a rare serious attitude, and he inquired.

(TL: Li Qiye here used a respectful idiom to ask the Elder to elaborate)

The First Elder sat down, gently sighed, and then he said:

“Thirty thousand years ago, our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect fought a battle with the Heavenly God Sect. We suffered a crushing defeat in our national capital, and we had to run back to the sect’s territory, losing complete control of the kingdom. Thirty thousand years ago, till now, all of our great predecessors from the older generations had met their origins; our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect’s decline was inevitable and irrevocable. Although we had fallen, we still possess certain things that the Heavenly God Sect coveted. The Heavenly God Sect has not made any moves; it is because they still have some reservations. If, one day, the Heavenly God Sect finds out that we do not have any hidden aces, that would be the day of our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect’s demise!”

The war between the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and the Heavenly God Sect – Nan Huai Ren had talked about this before. In reality, when Li Qiye was still the Dark Crow, he knew some information regarding the Heavenly God Sect; however, his disposition at the time was not ideal. Thus, he naturally did not bother with such trivial matters!

Chapter 44 : First Elder's Plan (2)

Here, the First Elder glanced at Li Qiye, and he said:

“Do you understand why I am telling you all of this?”

“This disciple is all ears.”[1]

Li Qiye nonchalantly smiled with a calm and dull expression; it made the First Elder unable to understand Li Qiye.

“We need an ally like the Nine Saint Demon Gate.”

At this point, the First Elder gently sighed, and, with some hesitation, he lowered his tone:

“This is why I hope that you can marry Princess Li! As long as you are able to marry Princess Li, regardless of what happens, I will support you!”

“Elder, are you are not afraid of bringing the wolf to chase the tiger? Then being eaten by the wolf in the end?”

Li Qiye smilingly said.

The First Elder bitterly smiled, gently shook his head, and he replied:

“There are some things, that aren’t up to a little character like me to control.”

At this point, he deeply stared at Li Qiye, and he said:

“This is why I will bet on you! Hoping that it will be a miracle!”

Here, the First Elder’s demeanor became strange; he looked at Li Qiye, and he said:

“Until now, many people had wanted to take the Cleansing Incense Ancient Order from San Gui Ye, yet no one had succeed! However, San Gui Ye is willing to give the Cleansing Incense Ancient Order to you!”

Speaking of San Gui Ye and the matter of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Order, Li Qiye couldn’t help but smirk. However, he did not say more about it; there were secrets behind this event that other people naturally couldn’t see through it.

Staring at the First Elder, Li Qiye smiled:

“Elder is betting money on me, why not bet it on the Sect Master? I heard Sect Master was appointed by the previous Sect Master to be the successor.”

Regarding this problem, the First Elder closed his mouth and

remained silent. The First Elder's attitude piqued Li Qiye's interest; Su Yong Huang, the current Sect Master of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, was what type of person in the end? What was the secret in this matter?

“This time, I proposed for you to be a Dao instructor; I am hoping that you could earn some merit points and eventually be able to join the upper echelon's meeting in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.”

The First Elder didn't speak about the matter of the Sect Master, Su Yong Huang. He instead switched to a different subject.

Li Qiye smiled, and he said:

“Elder hopes that I can have great contributions, so that I could join the upper echelons. Eventually I would become a Protector or an Elder, so that I would be more worthy to be with the Nine Saint Demon Gate's successor; the princess of the Old Ox Country.”

Li Qiye easily pointed out the intricacies, and this made the First Elder stunned for a moment. In reality, since the beginning, he was not optimistic about Li Qiye; however, Li Qiye mysteriously passed the Nine Saint Demon Gate's trials, and this caused the Six Elders to suspect that he was a spy from the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

However, since Li Shuangyan's arrival and the attitude of Yu He, the First Elder couldn't help but to contemplate regarding this situation. If one was to say that Li Qiye was a spy from the Nine

Saint Demon Gate, then his method would be too arrogant and too obvious! The most important thing, however, was that Yu He's attitude did not seem like it was an act!

This made the First Elder rethink; if Li Qiye truly wanted the Emperor merit laws or Immortal Emperor True Treasures of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, with the Cleansing Incense Ancient Order, he simply didn't need to be a spy! This Order was given to him willingly by San Gui Ye; if Li Qiye had used this Order to demand an Emperor merit law or an Immortal Emperor True Treasure, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect wouldn't have an alternative unless they wanted to disobey the teachings of their ancestors!

In reality, whether the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect still had Immortal Emperor True Treasures or not, as well as its Emperor merit laws, the First Elder knew best in his heart!

“Within the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, I am considered the oldest person. Unfortunately, my talents are limited, and I had no way to stop our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect's irreparable decline.”

The First Elder looked at Li Qiye, and he said:

“I don't believe in miracles; however, I hope that you are a miracle, or that the Patriarch was not willing for the high heavens to destroy my Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. I am not hoping for you to revive the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, but I hope that you could use your good relations with the Nine Saint Demon Gate to protect the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!”

Li Qiye couldn't help but laughed a little, and he said:

“The First Elder values me so greatly, this truly makes me scared from receiving too much affection.”[2]

Of course, the First Elder didn't believe Li Qiye; he simply didn't appeared like he was scared from receiving too much affection, but this wasn't important.

Li Qiye smiled, and he said:

“The First Elder places all of his betting money on me and not the Sect Master; why is this the case? This truly leaves me curious.”

It was obvious that Elder Ge being the First Elder was very reluctant to mention the Sect Master Su Yong Huang, but in the end, he looked at Li Qiye and deepened his voice:

“Li Qiye, if one was to say that your identity is not clear, then, the identity of the Sect Master is not one that I am willing to see!”

It was but one short sentence from the First Elder, yet it contained many hidden implications! Su Yong Huang was the current Sect Master and was also his master's appointed successor; why was it that the First Elder was so unwelcoming of Su Yong Huang?

“Currently, for our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, whomever sits on the Sect Master’s seat is no longer important. We are about to be broken from our home, so why is there the need to dispute for the Sect Master’s position?”[3]

The First Elder clearly didn’t want to elaborate much on Su Yong Huang, so he said in a serious manner:

“However, I do not wish for the second elder to be the Sect Master!”

The First Elder suddenly told him this; thus, raising Li Qiye’s interest. These words, if it wasn’t a close confidant, would not easily be said; however, the First Elder told him this.

“Second Elder isn’t bad; I heard the Second Elder, when he was young, his aptitude wasn’t bad. Within the Elders, his cultivation is only below yours.”

Li Qiye leisurely said.

“If Cao Xiong... he was persistent with his own principles.”

The First Elder paused for a second, and he then finally spoke:

“Him being the Sect Master isn’t a big deal! However, he reached out to Dong Sheng Long! This is akin to pushing our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect down into an abyss of destruction; he, because of his thirst for power, had lost his reasoning!”

“Dong Sheng Long?”

Li Qiye was slightly surprised, and he asked:

“The guest advisor of our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect?”

Regarding this topic, Nan Huai Ren had mentioned it before; Li Qiye still had some impression.

The First Elder stared at Li Qiye, and he then seriously said:

“As the Prime Disciple, hopefully, you will take up the responsibility of shouldering the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. This matter, I can tell you. That year, when Dong Sheng Long became our guest advisor, this was not my will! However, this came from the will of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom; I didn’t have a choice!”[4]

“Strictly speaking, Dong Sheng Long did not come from the Heavenly God Sect, but he is a Royal Noble bestowed by the Heavenly God Sect!”

The First Elder deepened his tone:

“For the other matters, I don’t need to say more.”

The First Elder finished speaking here. Li Qiye was clear on the

reason; he smiled, looked at the First Elder, and, in the end, he said:

“The First Elder wants to borrow my hand to eliminate Dong Sheng Long?”

“I know that, with your cultivation, you can’t eliminate Dong Sheng Long.”

The First Elder was silent for a long time, then finally made his decision, looked at Li Qiye, and he said:

“However, Yu He can; you can borrow Yu He’s hand to remove him!”

“Elder, this is a dangerous matter.”

Li Qiye laughed because he knew what the First Elder was thinking.

The First Elder contemplated for a while; in the end, he sighed heavily, and he then said:

“Bringing in the wolf to chase the lion, I know! However, in terms of the level of danger, the Heavenly God Sect is much higher than the Nine Saint Demon Gate. Thirty thousand years ago, our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect fought with the Heavenly God Sect once; we lost our Kingdom, and the Heavenly God Sect used our old territory to form the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom. Although the

Heavenly God Sect didn't kill to the last person, that was only because they had certain reservations. In this country, one of these days, the Heavenly God Sect will not tolerate our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect anymore. The Nine Saint Demon Gate rules the Old Ox country. If they want to destroy us, it is not an impossible thing; however, they definitely have to declare war against the Heavenly God Sect!"

Comparing the two, no doubt, the First Elder made a choice, and he wanted to use the Nine Saint Demon Gate against the Heavenly God Sect!

Li Qiye smiled, and he finally said in a leisurely way:

"Elder's thoughts, I understand. These are not the important things to me right now. The more pressing matter is the Physique paste. You Elders had promised, before, to reward me a piece of King Physique paste; I'm wondering when the sect will be able to accomplish this?"

"This..."

With Li Qiye suddenly bringing this matter up, the First Elder was stunned for a moment.

Li Qiye continued:

"Elder, my Physique paste; the leading beast marrow, I want it to be the beast marrow of a Hell Iron Bull. Do you have any objections

to this?”

“This... this will require some time.”

The First Elder was embarrassed, and he hollowly laughed.

Li Qiye stared at the First Elder, and he seriously said:

“Elder is regretting this, ah?”

“Li Qiye, what the sect promised for you will not change!”

The First Elder immediately raised his voice:

“However, you want the beast marrow of a Hell Iron Bull. You should be aware, that, with our current power, taking the bones of a one hundred thousand year beast, not an easy matter! Our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, does indeed, have a King Physique paste; however, the beast marrow isn’t from a Hell Iron Bull!”

“I require the beast marrow of a Hell Iron Bull!”

Li Qiye coldly said.

The First Elder took a deep breath, stared intently at Li Qiye, and then said:

“The beast marrow of a Hell Iron Bull, I can give to you. I will convince the other Elders but, the condition is that you must marry Princess Li!”

Looking at the First Elder, Li Qiye couldn't help but exhale a long sigh. Finally he stood up, and he calmly said:

“Elder, my woman, I can control; a princess is fine, a Saintess is fine – this isn't an issue. As for the matter that you are worrying about, I can give you one sentence: In my hands, whoever wants to destroy the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, I will slaughter them all! Also, I will add another sentence for the First Elder; whoever tries to stop my pace of reviving the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, whoever tries to stop my steps, kill without mercy! Gods and Devils are not exceptions!”

After he had finished speaking, he turned around and left.

The First Elder was suddenly stunned on the exact spot; a thirteen year old boy just said those arrogant words, but, at this moment, he didn't think that Li Qiye was arrogantly ignorant. In this midst of everything, he completely couldn't see through Li Qiye, and he didn't know where his confidence was coming from; a thirteen year old boy... What means did he possess to say such big words?

Eventually, the First Elder gently sighed. Since in all these years, he had carefully held the administration of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, he knew, that, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect's decline was irreparable, but, he still wanted a miracle to happen!

Maybe, Li Qiye's arrival was a miracle!

Whether he believed it or not, currently, he still has to gamble on this! Because he was running out of time, the other four Elders, regarding his not wanting to be the Sect Master, had become dissatisfied. If this continued, without the support of the other four Elders, the overall situation of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect will worsen!

Chapter 45 : Not Convinced? I'll Beat You Till You Are Convinced! (1)

Back at his lonely peak, Li Qiye immediately called for Nan Huai Ren, as well as his master, Protector Mo. Once the master and disciple had arrived, Li Qiye asked:

“What is the Sect Master’s origin, in the end?”

This matter interested Li Qiye. This First Elder truly wasn’t one to be jealous of talents. On top of that, he also didn’t have the ambition for the Sect Master’s position. Why was it that he was so unwelcoming for Su Yong Huang?

The master and disciple looked at each other. Nan Huai Ren knew even less; he shook his head, and he said:

“This matter... This matter, I do not know. Before I had joined the sect, Sect Master was already the Sect Master. I can only count the times I’ve met the Sect Master with my ten fingers.”

Li Qiye turned to Protector Mo; Protector Mo, too, gently shook his head, and he said:

“The origin of the Sect Master, I am not certain. In reality, within our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, very few people know the true origin of the Sect Master. One could say that the Sect Master suddenly appeared overnight.”

“Suddenly appeared overnight? A person who suddenly appeared overnight became the Sect Master?”

Li Qiye, hearing this statement, couldn't help but become puzzled.

Protector Mo pondered for a moment, wanting to think carefully, and he said:

“When the former Sect Master was still in this world, I heard the Supreme Elder still hadn't met his origin. I don't know the exact details, but, during that time, I heard that within the span of one night, the former Sect Master only called for Elder Ge. The Sect Master first appeared. Then, one could speculate that, in this moment, the previous Sect Master and the Supreme Elder, before meeting their origins, entrusted Elder Ge to help the Sect Master take charge of the Cleansing Ancient Incense Sect.”

After hearing the words of Protector Mo, Li Qiye felt that it was outside of his expectation. He had thought that his master, Su Yong Huang, was always a disciple of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; it seemed, now, that this was not the case.

“Are you saying that this master of mine was a person that the previous Sect Master and the Supreme Elder secretly groomed?”

Li Qiye inquired.

Protector Mo shook his head:

“We do not know the specific circumstances. We only know that, after Elder Ge was summoned, a new Sect Master was announced. In reality, at that time, not only Cao Xiong, but even the other four Elders were strongly opposed to it; however, I heard that the First Elder did a lot to persuade the other four Elders. Afterwards, the First Elder personally took action to suppress some disciples, certain high ranking Protectors, and sectional leaders in the opposition party...”

“At that point, the previous Sect Master was still there. The Supreme Elder hadn’t met his origin[1], Elder Ge had the support of the previous Sect Master and the Supreme Elder. Elder Ge’s status, in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, had always been high. In reality, most people, then, would have assumed that Elder Ge would accept the Sect Master’s position, but suddenly, a new Sect Master appeared; it was outside of everyone’s expectations. However, even Elder Ge, himself, supported the new Sect Master and he didn’t try to compete for it. In the end, the other four Elders also agreed with this decision.”

Protector Mo paused at this point, and he was silent for a moment.

“The new Sect Master was not well-received...”

Li Qiye could imagine the scene, then; suddenly, a new Sect Master appeared, and even with the support of the previous Sect Master and the Supreme Elder – along with Elder Ge’s suppression – still was afraid that the hearts of the people of Cleansing Incense

Ancient Sect were not happy.

Protector Mo gently nodded, and he said:

“Sect Master was in her new position for a short time; she then took a small group of disciples, became the overseer of the Desolate Wasteland, and she rarely returned. Sect Master had never returned to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect with the exception of the time the previous Sect Master and the Supreme Elder met their origins.”

Li Qiye couldn't help but stroke his chin; the whole thing made him feel confused. What was the Sect Master's origin, in the end?

“In terms of truly understanding the Sect Master, I'm afraid that, outside of Tu Bu Yu, there is no one else.”

Finally, Protector Mo whispered.

Li Qiye smiled, and he then shook his head. Tu Bu Yu speaking on this, that would truly be strange. Clearly, Tu Bu Yu was a trusted confidant of the Sect Master, Su Yong Huang. Otherwise, he wouldn't be sent back here.

Regarding Sect Master Su Yong Huang's origin, Protector Mo couldn't explain why, so Li Qiye also stopped asking. He slowly cultivated, and he thought about how to instruct the Dao to the Cleansing Jade Peak's martial hall.

If one was to discuss teaching conducts, then no one was more fitting to be an instructor than Li Qiye. He rose and he fell through innumerable moons, and he improved himself over millions of years. What type of person had he not seen? He had met many ambitious overlords, and he suppressed countless outstanding emperors.

Not to mention that Immortal Emperor Min Ren was groomed by his own hands. Even the Black Dragon King and three generations of Immortal Emperors, as well as many peerless supremes – all rose from his teaching.

Teaching a group of feather haired youngsters, for Li Qiye, was a matter as easy as turning his palm. However, with this matter, Li Qiye was seriously contemplating.

The reason was simple: every time a person was flung from his hands, not one of them were weak. He didn't want the life that he had finally obtained, with his body, with his own hands, to ruin his reputation.

Regarding cultivation, Li Qiye had many profound insights. In Li Qiye's eyes, talents weren't important, Physiques weren't important, and even merit laws weren't important.

The most important thing... was to have an unshakable Dao willpower; a willpower that thirsts for knowledge! A willpower that understands that the truth of all rivers flow into the same sea! A willpower that was diligent and assiduous! This was the most important thing![2]

For insufficient talents, hard work would suffice as long as the mind was willing; for insufficient talents, others take one day to awaken, and you take one hundred days to awaken. There would always be a fruitful harvest. With a Dao willpower that could accept that all rivers lead into the sea, one could see the entirety of the eight directions and not be blinded by their own shortsightedness!

Insufficient merit laws? Just be thirsty for knowledge! Even if it was a common merit law, as long as one was tirelessly diligent, one of these days, one could take this common merit law to the apex of its cultivation; they could traverse an entirely new heaven and earth with it!

Since the ancient times, countless supremes, from their common merit laws, had created a new heaven and earth, became enlightened with their own Dao merit law that belonged to just them, and walked on the road of Dao that only belonged to them!

Dao willpower, this was the foundation of cultivation! Countless eons, countless kingdoms, countless holy churches groomed many geniuses, but, in the end, only a few became Immortal Emperors; there weren't many.

Li Qiye carefully read through the short introductions for the three hundred students at the Cleansing Jade Peak and their current cultivating circumstances. He had memorized them all, and, at the same time, he also carefully read the merit laws of the martial hall.

In reality, the three hundred disciples at the martial hall did not cultivate that many different types of merit laws because the longest disciple had only been there for five years; they, technically, were not considered official disciples of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. They needed to pass the final assessment before they became official disciples of the sect.

Martial hall, with its three hundred disciples, half male and half female, didn't practice that many merit laws. The merit laws of the martial hall only numbered in the dozens.

Amongst these merit laws, some were created by the heavenly sages of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect to be used as entry merit laws, and some of the older entry merit laws were left behind by Immortal Emperor Min Ren. The oldest merit law was left behind by Li Qiye in his Dark Crow form.

These were all entry level common merit laws, and they were not considered to be heaven shaking methods; however, these merit laws were all chosen because they were necessary for a solid foundation.

Although, with the exception of a few common merit laws left behind by Li Qiye for the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, Li Qiye had never seen the other merit laws; however, after a million years, he had researched many merit laws. Even if all of his memories regarding merit laws were erased, from a certain perspective – regarding the understanding of merit laws – no one could compare to him! For any merit laws talked about, Li Qiye's explanations could be considered exact truths!

On top of looking over the merit laws of the martial hall, Li Qiye also went to the first and second level of the Scripture Library. Li Qiye himself wouldn't practice these merit laws; he was only finding appropriate merit laws for the martial hall disciples.

The First Elder was hoping that Li Qiye could contribute to the sect, so he specifically gave Li Qiye a license to read these merit laws.

With regard to being an instructor, Li Qiye was truly responsible; he was not only using the three hundred disciples to earn contribution points, then be finished.

As a senior instructing the Dao, he would surely uphold a high standard in his responsibility, and he would absolutely not ruin his reputation with his own hands.

For the instruction of Dao, Li Qiye had made full preparations. He had complete confidence in teaching these disciples, and he wanted to see the day of the final assessment. None of the disciples would fail the assessment and not become a disciple in the sect.

The Cleansing Jade Peak's main branch; one could say that Cao Xiong, in this main branch, had the highest influence. For example, Sectional Leader Zhou was on Cao Xiong's side.

However, this type of challenge, for Li Qiye, was far from what he would consider a challenge! Even if Cao Xiong's influence in this branch was greater, Li Qiye still had the utmost confidence that he could grasp this Cleansing Jade Peak in his hand. For him, this was

not a problem!

The Cleansing Jade Peak martial hall, built on top of the Cleansing Jade Peak; Cleansing Jade Peak was huge, and there were many buildings and staggered courtyards. The disciples that haven't been here for longer than five years numbered in the three hundreds. Counting the servants responsible for daily activities, the Cleansing Jade Peak had a total of four hundred people.

Li Qiye, early in the morning, had entered the Cleansing Jade Peak. Naturally, Sectional Leader Zhou would not give him a hand; however, Nan Huai Ren was meticulous and attentive because this was the first day of Li Qiye's Dao instruction. After Li Qiye had arrived, he, in place of Li Qiye, gathered the three hundred disciples to the martial hall.

Three hundred male and female disciples were all gathered at the martial hall practice ground, and, at this moment, all three hundred pair of eyes were on Li Qiye.

Li Qiye looked around at the surrounding disciples. Within the three hundred disciples, almost evenly divided between male and female, the oldest was not eighteen and the youngest was around thirteen years old.

Li Qiye only appeared to be thirteen to fourteen years old. He had to face the three hundred disciples and instruct the Dao; this caused Nan Huai Ren to worry that Li Qiye wouldn't be able to suppress these disciples.

However, looking at Li Qiye sitting there with a calm-sky clear-wind expression high above, he, a thirteen year to fourteen year old, appeared like a great master; seeing Li Qiye's confidence, Nan Huai Ren breathed a sigh of relief.[3]

Sure enough, when the three hundred disciples had gathered, trouble did as well. Within these three hundred, immediately, there was a disciple who was not satisfied with Li Qiye, ignoring the fact that Li Qiye was currently adorning the status of the Prime Disciple.

Chapter 46 : Not Convinced? I'll Beat You Till You Are Convinced! (2)

“A boy younger than I am... What methods could he teach us? Won't this create a mistake in our cultivation? In less than a year, I want to pass the assessment; in the one out of ten thousand chance that I don't pass, then, I would have to wait for another five years!”

A discontented disciple said.

There were many unhappy disciples. Another one couldn't help but to start complaining:

“This is true. We have such bad luck! A person younger, compared to us, has been sent here to instruct us on the Dao; this matter is intolerable bullying towards us.”

“Hmmpf, a trash Mortal Physique and Mortal Fate Palace could still become our Prime Disciple; it is truly a disgrace to our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!”

One disciple with good talents scowled, and he then said, with disdain:

“Shhh, older brother Luo. Careful or he will hear us.”

A disciple whispered while he pulled at his older brother.

In fact, prior to this, Sectional Leader Zhou had implied to make things difficult for Li Qiye. This matter was not a big deal, and there would be no one to step up in place of him. This was why the martial hall disciples became bolder.

“So what if he can hear us?”

The disciple called older brother Luo raised his voice higher instead, and he loudly said:

“He is only a rubbish straw bag, and he is no different from anyone else! Even if he held the thighs of the Nine Saint Demon Gate; we can’t allow him to delay our cultivation because of that! Why did we tortuously cultivate these past few years? It is so that we could pass the examination and become a disciple in the sect. If we are taught by a piece of trash like this, our efforts in these few years would be in vain.”

“This is true.”

In that moment, many students echoed:

“We can’t let a piece of trash waste our many years of effort in vain! We want to send him away! Change to a different instructor!”

Suddenly, around a dozen disciples chimed in. They surrounded him together, in a circle, and they started to heckle and rebel.

Seeing this situation, Nan Huai Ren, frowning, wanted to step forward, but he was stopped by Li Qiye.

“Get rid of this waste; he is not qualified to instruct us on the Dao!”

The dozens of students loudly jeered.

“True that! A person who had only recently joined the sect isn’t even equal to me, and he still has the audacity to instruct us in the Dao!”

A disciple contemptuously said:

“What is a Prime Disciple worth? Pfft, he is not worth a single coin!”

Older brother Luo yelled:

“Correct! His cultivation isn’t as strong as us, but he still wants to instruct us on the Dao. This is truly shameful! Wanting to instruct the Dao to us isn’t a difficult thing; he just has to beat us first, and then we can talk.”

“That won’t be good.”

A female disciple’s big eyes, having some fear, said:

“Provoking the instructor; this is not a light charge.”

“Bah, provoking the instructor? He needs to have the qualifications to be our instructor; then we can talk.”

Older brother Luo loudly said.

“Not wrong, without the qualifications to be our instructor, he can’t talk about Dao instruction. How is this called provoking the instructor?”

Many disciples agreed and without a double, this older brother Luo commanded high respect within his peers.

“So, you all are completely not satisfied with this senior?”

Now that Li Qiye started to open his mouth, the disciples here quickly became silent. They looked at Li Qiye while Li Qiye looked back at them. No matter what, Li Qiye still was the Prime Disciple sent by the Elders.

“Not satisfied, eh? One could say that I am a very open-minded person.”

Li Qiye laughed so hard that his eyes were shut.

Seeing Li Qiye’s smile caused Nan Huai Ren, who was standing next to him, to shiver. The expression of Li Qiye’s smile created an

illusion in his mind; it was as if a Desolate Wasteland fierce beast had opened its jaw while licking its white-as-snow fangs and stared intensely at a group of lambs.

At this moment, many students made a rattling sound from turning around to look at older brother Luo. Without a doubt, brother Luo was someone they trusted, and many people here were waiting to see his attitude.

This brother Luo, that was confident enough, suddenly stood up. This brother Luo was sixteen or seventeen years old, and he looked at Li Qiye, who was even younger than him; he coldly smiled:

“Yes! We are not convinced! You are just a new disciple! What gives you the qualification to instruct the us on the Dao. Hmmph! Casually pulling a bag of straws to instruct the Dao to us! This is no different from destroying our futures!”

“This younger brother, what is your name?”

Li Qiye wasn't angry with this. No, he still had his eyes closed and a smile on his face as he said this.

This brother Luo proudly look over Li Qiye, and he responded:

“I walk without changing my first name, and I sit without changing my last name; Luo Feng Hua is who I am! You want revenge, coming to me is enough!”

After hearing this name, Li Qiye let off a brighter smile; he had seen the roster, and this Luo Feng Hua he naturally knew of. Luo Feng Hua had joined for almost four years now, and his talents and physiques were not bad. After four years, he had reached the Provision Palace rank.

As an outer disciple, without the chance to practice superior merit laws, on top of the fact that three hundred disciples were instructed by only one sectional leader, and him using four years to reach the Provision Palace rank, even if his physiques and talents were not worthy of pride, he would still be considered a small genius.

“Besides this younger brother Luo, are there any others who are dissatisfied with me?”

Said Li Qiye, maintaining his eyes shut and wide smile.

Luo Feng Hua looked at the other disciples, and he then raised his voice:

“If you are not satisfied then say you are not satisfied; this is not a big deal! We’re not a bunch of cowards! We should unite and chase away this bag of straws; this is for our own good! If we let a bag of straws instruct us on the Dao, he will destroy all of our hard effort from the last few years. If there are any punishments, then they can come at me! I will shoulder them!”

This Luo Feng Hua, still speaking loudly, had some capability for leadership.

“This is not wrong! Our rights, we need to personally fight for!”

Under Luo Feng Hua’s lead, many disciples were tempted, and they all stood up.

Suddenly, there were almost a hundred disciples standing up, and some loudly yelled:

“A person even younger than us joined the sect later than us. He is not qualified to instruct us on the Dao! You should immediately get out of the Cleansing Jade Peak!”

“That’s right! Immediately get out! Get out!”

Different disciples were shouting.

In this moment, the roaring was higher than a wave, and the disciples, who were silent before, under the surging mob, couldn’t help but start to loudly echo their voices.

“It seems like all of you are very dissatisfied with me.”

Facing these discontent disciples, Li Qiye still smilingly said:

“However, this was a decision made by the Elders, wasn’t it? Since you guys are dissatisfied with me, I want to listen to your demands. You guys can talk; what type of person would have the

qualifications to instruct you on the Dao?”

Even though the crowd was emotional and loud, Li Qiye, on the other hand, was not angry. With a consulting appearance, he made this group of young teenagers hesitate for a moment. No one had their own opinion, so they couldn't help but looked over at Luo Feng Hua.

Luo Feng Hua met the group's expectation, and he coldly sneered:

“To be our instructor is not difficult. At least be stronger than us! Then one will be eligible to be our instructor. If one can't compare to even us, they shouldn't talk about instructing the Dao!”

“So, you want to have a match with me?”

Li Qiye smiled at Luo Feng Hua, as he said.

Luo Feng Hua, with a proud attitude, replied:

“Correct; if you can beat me, you will have the qualification to instruct the Dao to us! Hmmph! However, if you can't beat me, don't blame me for being ruthless! Against my enemies, I never hold back. At that point, don't blame me for beating you and rolling on the floor. Once I make a move, I will cut your ribs from your body!”

“This... This is not good.”

Next to him, the female students, with big eyes, timidly said:

“Everyone having a match is good, but we should know the right time to stop.”

Li Qiye shook his head, and he smilingly said:

“I feel that this younger brother Luo makes a lot of sense; if we stop at the right time, then it is not a real fight. Isn’t this right, everybody? If we want to fight, we have to use everything!”

“Good, winning or losing depends on the cultivation of the fighters!”

Li Qiye stepped up, and he loudly yelled:

“I will fight with you!”

This Luo Feng Hua, truly was courageous.

Li Qiye smiled again, his eyes were still shut, and he said:

“You want to fight? I will fight with you here.”

Finished speaking, he slowly took out his Serpent Punishing stick that was hung to his waist, and he said:

“I am the senior, I will not make the first move. You make your move.”

“Hmmp! You don’t know your own strength. Older brother Luo is at the Provision Palace rank! You dare to challenge older brother Luo with a wooden stick? This person doesn’t know life and death!”

Someone saw Li Qiye taking out his Serpent Punishing stick, and he said with disdain.

Nan Huai Ren shook his head; he knew that he had bad luck. Even an expert like Xu Hui was beaten by the Serpent Punishing stick until he rolled on the floor, let alone this Luo Feng Hua ahead.

“You don’t know your own strength!”

Li Qiye taking out a wooden stick, to Luo Feng Hua, was very humiliating. He opened his mouth, let out a loud roar, and he took out a sword; this was a True Treasure with a relatively low rank. The sword was out, and a “Ongggg” sound rang in the air. In the blink of an eye, many surging sword shadows appeared; one “Heavenly Vast River Sword” attack flew towards Li Qiye.

Luo Feng Hua’s sword, that just came out, was immediately knocked away by the Serpent Punishing stick.

A bang occurred; the next stick strike caused Luo Feng Hua’s

view to be covered with yellow stars. His face was hit violently once, and fresh blood painted his whole face; he, essentially, couldn't escape the Serpent Punishing stick.

“Bang... Bang... Bang...”

Li Qiye was without mercy, and Luo Feng Hua was clubbed dozens of times. Suddenly, he brought Luo Feng Hua down to the ground, and sure enough, Li Qiye continued to beat him. Luo Feng Hua screamed out in pain; Li Qiye was especially brutal towards Luo Feng Hua. He swung at him very hard; he did so until his eyes and nose were covered in nothing but blood.

“Ah...”

In the end, when Li Qiye finally held himself back, Luo Feng Hua didn't even have the strength to scream; he could only quietly whimper.

A person below Heaven's Primal rank, in front of the Serpent Punishing stick, could only accept the beating!

Nan Huai Ren couldn't help but pitifully glare at Luo Feng Hua. Even Xu Hui's teeth were hit till they scattered on the floor. This time, Li Qiye's beating could be considered mercifully restrained.

At this point, all of the disciples were frozen. In just a blink of an eye, Luo Feng Hua, the strongest person in their group, was beating to a bloody pulp.

“All of you step forward right now; all of you can come together.”

Li Qiye held the Serpent Punishing stick, and he pointed at the disciples that were chiming in with Luo Feng Hua; he said this dismissively.

“But... But... We.”

Seeing the end result of Luo Feng Hua, these disciples couldn't help but take a step back.

Chapter 47 : Dao Instruction Life Teaching (1)

“Come back here!”

Li Qiye’s eyes became cold, and he seriously said:

“You challenged my authority, and now you should come taste my authority!”

“We’re afraid of what? He is only one person, and we have so many people, like this! All go! Ah!”

A disciple, with big guts, loudly yelled. He then took out his weapon, and he jumped forward.

“All together!”

With one person leading, the remaining dozen became emboldened. They loudly exclaimed, and they took out their weapons, moving forward.

“Bang... Bang... Bang...”

However, having more people was of no use. In front of the Serpent Punishing stick, cultivators under the Heaven’s Primal

rank, they only had one option; the only option was to be beaten. The dozens of students were like little snakes, encountering their nemesis. The moment they made a move, the Serpent Punishing stick immediately hit their face, and as each strike came along, blood covered their faces. They fell down to the ground on the spot.

“Bang... Bang... Bang...”

For the ones leading this rebellion, Li Qiye showed no mercy, ruthlessly whipping without stop. Even if they were on the floor, he would still strike.

Li Qiye went all out with the whipping until these students wailed like ghosts and howled like wolves; struck until these students' bodies were covered in blood and lying on the ground. They wouldn't be able to stand up for an hour.

Li Qiye was so fierce, it made the spectating students shiver in fear; they turned pale.

“All of you, come over here for me!”

Li Qiye pointed at another group of disciples with his stick, and he coldly said.

“Sen-Senior, we, we, we didn't rebel.”

The female disciple with big eyes frightenedly said.

“I know.”

Li Qiye dismissively said:

“My first class is very simple. It is to let you all know that anyone can challenge me; however, the result of challenging me, will be as you all can see with your own eyes.”

“Bang... Bang... Bang...”

Li Qiye ignored whether the disciples made a move or not; he made a quick dash over to them, and sent a quick strike, beating them down!

In reality, Li Qiye was already at the Yun Physique rank, and some of the disciples were weaker compared to him. Even without the Serpent Punishing stick, he could still take care of them; thus, Li Qiye dashed like a fierce lion into a pack of lambs, and, in the blink of an eye, he had beaten half of them down.

“Run ahhh...”

They did not know who was scared with broken wits, but they turned around and fled.

Unfortunately, the moment they tried to escape, they were thrown back by Nan Huai Ren. They essentially couldn't get away,

and some of the ones who were thrown back started to defend themselves; however, a stick immediately flew toward them, and in a moment, they were lying on the ground in the same spot.

“Bang... Bang... Bang...”

Against the disciples who didn't rebel, Li Qiye went easy on them. He only brought them down to the ground. They were not like Luo Feng Hua, struck to the a bloody pulp.

Eventually, all three hundred disciples, without an exception, were struck to the ground. All of the disciples' faces were deadly pale. The Serpent Punishing stick was indeed their nemesis; one strike on their body, even if it didn't leave a wound, still hurt to the bones.

The Serpent Punishing stick, this was the best treasure to discipline students who didn't listen – rare in this world. Otherwise, Li Qiye wouldn't use it to discipline Min Ren and his group of little boys! In this moment, the entire martial hall was a relay of constant and agonizing moanings; all of the disciples were beaten by the Serpent Punishing stick to the ground. The ones that stubbornly fought back, these were beaten even harder by Li Qiye. Especially the dozens in the group of Luo Feng Hua. After he brought them to the ground, he even ruthlessly whipped them even more. He did so until their skins cracked and bones broke.

After carefully discipline these disciples in front of him, Li Qiye slowly went back to his seat on top, stared at the disciples on the ground, and he casually spoke:

“Provoke me, I very much welcome it; however, the result... Ah, you all can decide for yourselves. Today is the first lesson. It was only an appetizer! Later, I will not show such mercy; until I break your bones, I will not stop!”

Still staring at these disciples lying down in the same place, Li Qiye continued:

“I am your instructor, I will take charge of everyone here! Hard bones without submission? That is fine! I will hit them until he or she submits! Otherwise, be obedient disciples for me! In front of me, everything you have learned before, whether you are a genius or not, throw it all away! In front of me, geniuses and dog shit are of little value! A dragon, coil yourself for me; a lion, lie down for me; otherwise, I will beat you until your arrogant egos are shattered!”

Right now, a bunch of students were lying down there, they couldn't even stand up, so no one dared to talk back.

“The first lesson, today, will stop here.”

At this point, Li Qiye smiled; before he left, he said:

“Of course, if you guys are dissatisfied with me, you can go complain. However, you should remember well; if you complain about me, I will entertain you really well!”

Sure enough, that afternoon, Sectional Leader Zhou came to his door; once they met face to face, Sectional Leader Zhou coldly said:

“Teaching disciples under you, you should put Dao teachings at the top. The Cleansing Jade Peak disciples, in the future, will be the pillars of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. If something happens to them...”

“If Sectional Leader Zhou is unhappy with me, then go to the Elders and complain.”

Li Qiye interrupted Sectional Leader Zhou mid-sentence, and he then said:

“Since I am now responsible for the Dao instruction, how to teach – that is my business. I do not need someone else to wave their hands and dance their legs while telling me what to do. If Sectional Leader Zhou doesn’t have any other business, see yourself out.”

“You...”

Met with Li Qiye’s fighting words, especially how Li Qiye essentially didn’t put him in his eyes, this made Sectional Leader Zhou shiver with rage.

“Sectional Leader Zhou, please take your leave.”

Li Qiye didn’t want to glance at him much. With his level of

character, he didn't want to waste his time arguing needlessly.

Sectional Leader Zhou was outraged to the point of vomiting blood; his anger soared to the sky, and he almost crushed his teeth from grinding them. In the end, he was so angry that he smiled, and he coldly said:

“Good, good, good! Until the day of the assessment, let us see how you teach these disciples to pass it!”

Finished speaking, he turned around and left.

After Sectional Leader Zhou left, Li Shuangyan appeared out of nowhere. She coldly watched Li Qiye, and she indifferently said:

“You make enemies in all four directions, are you not afraid of others cutting you?”

“Cultivation, isn't everything.”

Li Qiye, comfortably looked into her eyes, and he said:

“To kill, is not a difficult task. It is more about how to kill; additionally, is it worth killing, is the question.”

“Speaking of killing!”

Li Qiye couldn't help but smile, and he then said:

“At the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, so what if a magnificent army with thousands of men and horses appear? The numbers that come are the numbers that will be killed!”

Li Shuang Ya stared at Li Qiye, and she coldly said:

“So, you are very confident.”

“However, don't forget. You are my sword maid; protecting one's master is your responsibility.”

Li Qiye was too lazy to talk about such matters, so he reminded her.

“You...”

Li Shuangyan's face was reddened because of Li Qiye's attitude; she had cultivated for so long, and her Dao willpower was very stable; however, since she met Li Qiye, many times, she was angered to the point of vomiting blood.

In the end, Li Shuangyan was a favored daughter of the heavens; she took a deep breath, and she finally calmed her mind. She stared at Li Qiye, and she eventually said:

“Making me submit, it is also not a difficult task. At the very

least, you have to give me a reason on why I should submit.”

“Pure Crystal Physique; one of the twenty-four Emperor Physiques is not a bad physique.”

Li Qiye stared at her, and he then casually said:

“Stay by my side well. In the future, I will teach you a little bit. As long as you work hard, with my instruction, cultivating to the Void Imperfection Physique will not be a problem!”

“Such strong words, Void Imperfection Physique!”

Li Shuangyan couldn’t help but to glare at Li Qiye; she coldly proclaimed:

“Do you even know the meaning behind Void Imperfection Physique? It is one of the twelve Immortal Physiques! From the ancient times till now, the people that could cultivate an Immortal Physique was just a very few! I currently am practicing a Saint Physique merit law; this is the apex of physique merit laws!”

Li Shuangyan was born with an Emperor Physique, this was a matter that made one proud; Pure Crystal Physique was extremely rare, and it was one of the twenty-four Emperor Physiques. The current physique merit law she was cultivating was one of the top physique merit laws in the world; however, even for her, to turn the Pure Crystal Physique into the Pure Jade Physique, this would require many moons!

Pure Jade Physique, this was one of the eighteen Saint Physiques. Once a Saint Physique was completed, unlimited power; it could not be underestimated!

“Onngggg...”

Li Qiye without a word, his Life Wheel suddenly appeared. Behind his head was a heavenly rotating aura; blood energy like a hurricane, and, in a split second, like a Kun leaping from an ocean, his Fate Palace floated up and down. Within this moment, Li Qiye ferociously extended a kick towards Li Shuangyan.

Li Shuangyan's expression changed; her white hands covered the air, holding a silver shield to block Li Qiye's kick.

“Bang...”

A loud noise rang the air; under one kick, heavy as ten thousand mountains, profoundly deep without words. This was such a kick. For Li Shuangyan to block was not so easy. A “Crack crack” sound occurred; under this kick, her silver shield immediately shattered into pieces. Even though she had successfully received the kick, she still had to take a step back. The stone bricks on the floor was trampled by her movement.

Suddenly, Li Shuangyan's expression greatly changed; this one kick, from Li Qiye, was not the power of the Dao. It was not from a powerful force, but it was weight; the power of pure weight.

It was as if one leg of Li Qiye was as heavy as ten thousand mountains. Under this one kick was enough force to crush mountains and rivers! This was something impossible. Li Qiye's cultivation was still shallow; there was no way his kick could be this powerful!

“Heaven's prideful daughter, these four words you do deserve without shame; to be able to bear the weight of this one kick, your cultivation is immeasurable.”

Li Qiye took a glance at her once, and he then said:

“You practice the Pure Jade Sacred Heart method from the War God Temple. It is not a bad Physique method.”

He left after these words.

Li Shuangyan was silent for a long time; her mind was shocked like never before. Since she had met Li Qiye till now, Li Qiye had only given a mysterious feel. This caused others to not see through him; but today, with his heavy kick, he had completely stunned her!

She believed that Li Qiye's cultivation definitely did not exceed the Yun Physique rank; however, that one heavy kick from Li Qiye had shook her to her core. She felt that it wasn't only grand Dao energy or power; it was but, simply, the force of weight.

It was absolutely impossible for a human leg to be this heavy; at least a Mortal Physique couldn't have reached this level! Why was it that Li Qiye's leg was heavy like this? Thinking about this, Li Shuangyan's heart couldn't calm down!

Speaking of Physiques; with heavy constitutions, there were several different Physiques. For example, the Xiantian Physique – Mighty Mountain Physique. Another example would be the Devil Suppressing Physique within the Emperor Physique trees, even the Hell Suppressing Physique was within the Saint Physiques.

However, one could see that Li Qiye was not of Xiantian Physique, and he was also not of Emperor Physique; definitely not Saint Physique! Natural born Emperor Physique and Saint Physique definitely couldn't escape other's eyes.

Chapter 48 : Dao Instruction Life Teaching (2)

The only possible explanation – Li Qiye cultivated a peerless and incomparable Physique! The weight of this kick left a matchless and profound impression when she thought of Li Qiye.

Li Shuangyan's mind shook. Within this moment, she couldn't recover for a long time; within this moment, she thought about many things.

On the second day, Li Qiye once again appeared at the martial hall, sitting high above. In the practice field, the three hundred disciples were gathered, and at this moment, the entire martial hall was completely silent.

Right now, one did not know how many disciples were frightened by Li Qiye; yesterday, all of them were thrown to the ground by Li Qiye, and they received a good beating. This kind of pain; when they thought of it, they couldn't help but shiver their whole body.[1]

However, the Serpent Punishing Stick was amazing; even if they were hit to the point of their skin bruising and flesh breaking, there would be no damage to the bones and muscles. Not to mention, yesterday, Li Qiye pulled his punches on many students; with a touch of golden healing paste, there would be no hindrance the next day.

Yesterday, many were scared by Li Qiye; thus, today, when Li Qiye's gaze swept the field, many of the disciple's hearts were beating drums; they didn't dare to look at him in the eyes.

“Very good; there are brothers and sisters with courage that can complain about me.”

Li Qiye smiled, and he said:

“However, I don't know if these brothers and sisters who complained about me have the courage to stand up or not?”

At this point, many disciples looked at each other in dismay; seeing Li Qiye's beaming smile, their hearts were all nervous.

“One person commits the crime will be one person accepts the punishment; it was I who complained about you.”

Luo Feng Hua stood up, and he loudly said. Even though, currently, Luo Feng Hua could walk, his body had no serious wounds; however, his face was covered with medicinal pastes, undermining his angry handsome face.

Li Qiye stepped down from his high position, and he beamingly smiled at Luo Feng Hua. Nodding his head, he said:

“People that have courage, I have always admired; younger brother Luo is someone I can admire without a doubt. However, you dared to challenge my authority, so you will be enlightened

about the consequence of challenging my authority. Today, young brother Luo wants to crawl back, or be carried back by other people?”

When he finished speaking, he slowly took out his Serpent Punishing stick.

Seeing Li Qiye’s smile, with the Serpent Punishing stick in his hand, all of the disciples – regardless of whether they were male or females – couldn’t help but greatly sour their expressions.

“Using... Using treasure... What kind of skill?”

Luo Feng Hua turned pale, but he was still standing up straight. He loudly said:

“If you are skillful, you should have a real match with me! With real techniques!”

By now, even a fool could see that the ordinary wooden stick in Li Qiye’s hand was a treasure.

“You truly want to have a match with me?”

Li Qiye stared at Luo Feng Hua in front of him, and he smiled.

Currently, the thing Luo Feng Hua was unwilling to see the most was Li Qiye’s beaming smile. Looking at Li Qiye’s demeanor, his

heart became uncertain; however, he gritted his teeth, and he became determined. He loudly said:

“Thats right, if you are skillful, use real techniques to have a discussion with me. If you are stronger than me, I will have no other words to say.”

“Since younger brother Luo wants to discuss things a little bit, then, I will have to have a discussion with you.”

Li Qiye smilingly withdrew his Serpent Punishing stick, then, he stared at Luo Feng Hua and said:

“I am the older brother, it wouldn’t be fitting for me to make the first move. You go first.”

Luo Feng Hua saw that Li Qiye had withdrew the Serpent Punishing stick; in his mind, he was ecstatic. He took out his sword, and he loudly said:

“Good, we shall discuss a little bit.”

The words had just ended, Luo Feng Hua crossed his sword horizontally, and he immediately put on a careful guard – his first move was a defensive form.

Luo Feng Hua was frightened by Li Qiye, so he was already on the defensive.

“A bit talented.”

Li Qiye examined his careful defensive form, and he smiled. In the blink of an eye, his Life Wheel appeared, blood energy rotated, and he sent one kick went out.

A “Pop” sound was heard; under one kick, Luo Feng Hua’s defensive formation was not of use. His whole body flew three meters, his sword was broken at once, and he laid on the floor, spraying a mouthful of blood.

“Crack, crack”; before Luo Feng Hua had fallen on the ground, the sound of a bone breaking was heard – a bone in his chest was broken. He lied on the ground ,spewing out blood, and his eyes went black; he fainted.

Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique! Li Qiye’s cultivation was the unbeatable and strongest Physique in the world! One kick, the weight of ten thousand mountains; one could only imagine how heavy this kick was.

All of the disciples were shocked; within the three hundred disciples, Luo Feng Hua’s cultivation wasn’t the highest; however, it could be counted with one’s finger. He couldn’t even block one kick from Li Qiye. How could this be possible?

“That was one kick with one tenth of my weight behind it, yet you still couldn’t block it; still, you had the arrogance to challenge me.”

Li Qiye slowly put his foot back down, and he said.

This one kick, Li Qiye had shown mercy; otherwise, this one kick with its true power, Luo Feng Hua would definitely be dead.

On the side, Nan Huai Ren slightly shook his head. Half a year ago, his oldest brother had not yet cultivated; even Du Yuan Guang and Xu Hui were dismembered by him at that time. Currently, he had cultivated; Luo Feng Hua, here, was courting his death.

Without Li Qiye's command, Nan Huai Ren woke up Luo Feng Hua, helped him reconnect his broken bone, put on some silver medicinal paste, and he then carried him back to his place.

"It seems like I still should use the Serpent Punishing stick to discipline you guys well, ah; it's basically not as dangerous."

Li Qiye once again took out the Serpent Punishing stick, and he randomly pointed at another disciple; he said:

"You, come out; if you have any skills, use all of them here."

"Old-older brother, I-I-I didn't complain about you, I, I swear to the heaven, I absolutely didn't complain."

Li Qiye nodded seriously, and he said:

“I know you didn’t complain, but, the content of the second lesson is still my beating you guys, again. Of course, you all could try to run; however, if you get caught by me, I will beat you ten times harder than I did yesterday. It is best that you guys believe my words, otherwise, the consequences will be serious.”

The disciple had no other choice; he hesitantly stepped up, and he said while trembling:

“Older brother, please show mercy.”

“Wanting me to show you mercy is not as good as putting in your own effort! One blow at full power, the initiative is in your hands.”

Li Qiye smiled with his eyes closed. Finished speaking, a strike immediately came.

Without any other choice, the disciple had to fight.

“Bang... Bang... Bang...”

This disciple couldn’t handle more than two techniques against Li Qiye’s hands. Immediately taken to the ground by the Serpent Punishing stick, Li Qiye was free to beat him up until he was in unbearable pain, but at least it was better compared to yesterday, there was no visible blood.

“You, you, you...”

Li Qiye pointed a few times, and he said:

“All of you come.”

“Bang... Bang... Bang...”

Many techniques came out; the three hundred disciples were, once again, beaten to the ground by Li Qiye. Many painful howls rang; whether real or fake, at least, this type of pain was straight to the bone marrow. At least, today, Li Qiye didn't mercilessly beat them up; there was no blood, but, this type of pain was still torturous.

“Little kids cannot be caught!”

Li Qiye shook his head and lamented quietly, then he turned around and left.

The third day, Li Qiye appeared one more time. The three hundred disciples were summoned to the field. What was outside of Li Qiye's expectations was that Luo Feng Hua, who had a broken chest bone from yesterday, also came.

After being beaten twice, currently, to all three hundred disciples, meeting Li Qiye was like meeting a ghost; their hearts trembled, and the taste of the Serpent Punishing stick would be a nightmare for a long time to them.

This was understandable for them. That year, when Immortal Emperor Min Ren was still young, the undefeated generals, who had followed Immortal Emperor Min Ren to fight in the nine heavens and ten earths, they, at a young age, also didn't forget the taste of the Serpent Punishing stick for a long time! Even after receiving the Heaven's Will and becoming an Immortal Emperor, when he thought back about this period, he was also filled with all kinds of emotions.

“The third class' content is still to beat you!”

Li Qiye stepped down, once again, and he beamingly smiled.

When Li Qiye's words came out, the disciples couldn't help but shiver. They had already been beaten twice; this frightened them to the point of their legs giving up.

“Who is first?”

Li Qiye smiled, and he gazed at the three hundred disciples here. As his eyes swept around, many students were shivering; they couldn't help but take a step back.

“Me.”

In the end, the first to step up was Luo Feng Hua, again. Luo Feng Hua stood up, and he loudly said:

“I will come!”

Finished speaking, he took out a large shield.

Luo Feng Hua, on the other hand, was smart. Today, he especially brought a large shield hoping that it could deflect the Serpent Punishing stick in the hand of Li Qiye.

“You have some courage, and you are even a little clever.”

Li Qiye nodded his head, and he smiled.

“Bang... Bang... Bang...”

In the end, Luo Feng Hua couldn't escape his fate of being beaten. If the Serpent Punishing stick could be stopped by a large shield, then it would not be worthy of being taken out from the Demon Forest by Li Qiye.

At this moment, Li Qiye had beaten Luo Feng Hua badly, and he stained him with fresh blood – he was beaten until he couldn't stand up from the ground, groaning in pain.

Witnessing Li Qiye's merciless action, the rest of the disciple's expressions greatly changed; however, they didn't dare to say anything.

“Clever indeed, but, you used it in the wrong place. One point of intelligence, becomes wisdom; next you will want to use your brain

even more. This meal, I fiercely beat you, so that you will use more of your brain.”

Li Qiye comfortably said.

This day, all of the disciples were beaten by Li Qiye again. This time, Li Qiye was much more merciless than yesterday; many disciples saw blood, lying on the floor, and they were not being able to stand up.

On the fourth day, Li Qiye casually said:

“The fourth day, it is still as before: beating you. Who will be the first one?

This time, all of the disciple’s faces quickly changed. They quickly stepped back, one after another; no one wanted to be the first to come out. Even Luo Feng Hua, who was courageous yesterday, didn’t dare to come out.

“I-I, I will go.”

In the end, an eighteen year old teenager stood up; this young boy appeared to be honest, but his body was still very strong.

“What is your name?”

Li Qiye glanced at this young boy, he had an impression of him.

Each time he had beaten them, all of the other disciples wanted to escape and flee; however, this disciple was tenacious. Every time, he tried to face the beatings head on. Each time he fell to the ground, he desperately tried to stand up; his mentality wasn't bad. This left Li Qiye with a not-so-shallow impression.

This disciple scratched his head, and he politely said:

“Respectful older brother, my name is Zhang Yu.”

“Why be the first one to come out?”

Li Qiye smiled, and he asked.

“Wh-when older brother is happy, you beat us anyway; when you are unhappy, you will still beat us. Older brother just want to beat us; since we can't run, wh-why not be the first?”

Zhang Yu stuttered while speaking.

Chapter 49 : The Most Vicious Dao

Instruction (1)

“Bang... Bang... Bang...”

Li Qiye brought a beating to Zhang Yu. Zhang Yu, within the three hundred disciples, his cultivation was near the bottom, but he joined the martial hall two years earlier compared to the majority of the other disciples.

Even though Zhang Yu's cultivation was weak, he had the toughness of an old ox and a spirit that would not let go. The Serpent Punishing stick violently struck his body causing his whole body to ache; it was as if his bones and tendons were peeled, even standing up was difficult.

However, Zhang Yu, again and again, tried to stand up, even knowing that this resistance was a waste of time; however, he kept trying to stand up, again, and again, and again and again, just to be beaten by Li Qiye again and again, down to the ground.[1]

This time, Li Qiye was deliberately trying to test him; again and again, he struck Zhang Yu. Even though there was no blood; however, he struck Zhang Yu until he felt an unbearable pain, his bones and tendons felt as if they were shattered.

If this was a different person, they would be motionlessly lying on the floor; however, Zhang Yu, again and again, stood up, and again and again, resisted Li Qiye's strikes.

“Bang... Bang... Bang...”

The stick kept striking Zhang Yu's body. This striking sound caused the other disciples to lose their wits; they felt that Li Qiye had gone too far against Zhang Yu.

The last three times, Li Qiye usually only brought a person to the ground, and then he would stop; however, this time, it was as if Li Qiye was purposely making it difficult for Zhang Yu. Again and again, he struck Zhang Yu, and Zhang Yu, again and again, stood up just to be struck by Li Qiye, to the ground.

Until the end, Zhang Yu was no longer able to stand up from the strikes. Even though his body sustained no injuries and it didn't shed blood, his four limbs were tired; he was trembling from the pain. Cold sweat the size of a bean ran rampant, and he had a pale-white face – this showed how much pain he was in.

Seeing the state of Zhang Yu, many disciples couldn't help but shiver repeatedly; with fear in their mind, the many female disciples felt bad, and they couldn't bear to watch.

“A spirit that is unwilling to give up, very good!”

Li Qiye glanced at Zhang Yu, who was tiredly lying on the ground, with a calm-sky clear-wind expression, and he said:

“If I was unhappy, I wouldn't take it out on little characters like

you all. Take ten thousand steps back; if I wanted to take it out on you all, I can think of – off the top of my head – three or five hundred brutal ways to torture you all!”

These words of Li Qiye was for Zhang Yu’s ears, and also the rest of the disciples.

“You...”

After beating Zhang Yu, the Serpent Punishing stick of Li Qiye readily pointed at another disciple:

“Stand out.”

The disciple pointed at by Li Qiye had his hair explode, his two legs trembled, and, under the tyrannical abuse of Li Qiye, he couldn’t not go out.[2]

“Do you all know why I have to beat you guys?”

Li Qiye looked at this disciple, and he smilingly asked.

At this time, in the eyes of the disciple, Li Qiye’s smiling face was more terrifying than the devil’s smiling face; his two legs shaking, his body exuded cold fear, and he couldn’t speak clearly. He stuttered:

“Ye-yes, it was because we offended older brother...”

“Wrong!”

Li Qiye smiled:

“Fight back.”

Finished speaking, the Serpent Punishing stick in his hand, once again, violently flew past.

“Bang!”

This disciple was struck by Li Qiye once, and he cried and moaned.

“Next.”

Li Qiye, once again, picked a random disciple and beat him once; he struck him until he couldn't stand up from the ground.

Suddenly, wailing sounds of pain went up and down in the field, and, under the Serpent Punishing stick, one after another, all of them suffered.

“Speak, why am I beating you guys?”

Li Qiye beat a disciple with no place to hide; this disciple could

only accept his fate, and he was beaten by Li Qiye till he had a swollen nose. In the end, he gave up on resisting, and he held his head with both hands, leaving Li Qiye to fiercely strike.

“N-no, I don’t know...”

This disciple could only consider himself unlucky; he said a dozen answers, but there wasn’t one that made Li Qiye’s hands stop.

“Ol-older brother’s strikes were... Were hitting our, our weak points... or, or it is because ol-older brother is, is testing us; our merit laws, inside our merit laws, are flaws.”

At this point, a frightened voice rang.

Hearing this sound, Li Qiye suddenly stopped, and he instantly turned around, looking for the origin of the voice. The one who spoke was a female disciple, Li Qiye had a little impression of her; a big pair of eyes with a frightened expression.

The face of the female disciple that was pretty and delicate. From her expression, one could tell that she was not bold. At this time, Li Qiye’s “vicious” eyes turned around; the female disciple unconsciously took a step back. Her palm became sweaty, the older female disciple next to her was worried about her, and he gently pulled at her once.

“You, come out.”

Li Qiye pointed at the big-eyed female disciple with the frightened demeanor, and he smilingly said.

This disciple was quite frightened and dawdled out.

This scene was a bit funny; Li Qiye was only a thirteen to fourteen year old boy, and the girl in front was clearly older than Li Qiye.

In front of Li Qiye, the female disciple waddled forward like she was a little lamb facing an old wolf.

“Speak, why do I want to beat you all.”

Li Qiye beamingly smiled as he looked at the female disciple; her face was whitely pale, and she didn’t dare to come closer.

This female disciple was indeed very afraid of Li Qiye, and she took a step back. This scene, it was like Li Qiye was a young master who specialized in bullying kind-hearted young girls.

The female disciple finally bit her teeth, and, with a voice like a silver bell, she quietly said:

“I, I feel that, older brother, e-each strike, all, were hitting me. Our techniques have openings, ol-older brother want-wanted to test our merit laws, our flaws.”

Having said that, the big-eyed timid looking female disciple looked at Li Qiye without confidence, and she then immediately tucked her head down; she really was afraid of Li Qiye.

At this point, she thought Li Qiye was going to act violently; however, Li Qiye slowly and casually asked her:

“What is your name?”

“Xu, Xu Pei.”

This female disciple’s scalp was tingling from being stared at by Li Qiye. She was older than Li Qiye, but the moment Li Qiye stared at her, she felt like she was being targeted by a Prehistoric Desolate fierce beast.

“Xu Pei, younger sister Xu.”

Li Qiye cheerfully smiled:

“I will tell you a good piece of news; very lucky, you have guessed correctly.”

Li Qiye’s words got out. Many disciples were stumped for words, and Xu Pei’s heart couldn’t help but become ecstatic; finally, she had escaped a calamity.

“From now on, you are the oldest sister; the three hundred disciples of the Cleansing Jade Peak will be led by you.”

Li Qiye slowly spoke:

“However, it is your turn to make a move right now.”

Li Qiye suddenly appointed this position, causing the other disciples to startled. Xu Pei was also startled; she was startled, not because of the appointment, but, because of the sentence said afterwards by Li Qiye.

“Old-older brother, I, I had guessed correctly to your, your question. I, I won’t be exempted from the beating?”

Li Qiye beamingly and cheerfully smiled:

“It is true that you have guessed correctly. However, I didn’t say I was going to let you go. My way of living is very fair; I always treat others equally.”

Right now, facing Li Qiye’s cheerful smile, Xu Pei felt that it was scarier compared to an old wolf.

In the end, Xu Pei didn’t have any other choice; she had to gather the courage to resist. At the point when she was about to make a move, she couldn’t help but timidly say:

“O-olde-older brother, not, not the face, is that okay...?”

Wishing to appear beautiful was the nature of all women; even a cultivator was like this. Li Qiye’s Serpent Punishing stick’s strike, even though it didn’t leave wounds, but being beaten till one’s face and nose were swollen, this – to any young girl – was a torturous affair.

“I can think about it.”

Li Qiye happily smiled, but his Serpent Punishing stick had already aimed for her face.

Xu Pei became frightened. She immediately moved her feet into a defensive gate, barely dodging the stick from hitting her face, but the Serpent Punishing stick was like maggots in the bones; she had just escaped but another strike was on the way.

Xu Pei was alarmed. Once again, she used the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect’s stepping techniques to dodge, but Li Qiye was still chasing her – it was hard to escape.

“If you keep on running away, do you trust that I will beat your face into a pig’s head or not?”

The voice of Li Qiye, like an evil ghost, rang.

These words astonishingly frightened Xu Pei. No longer dared to run, she immediately turned around to fight. She let out a roar

with her long sword in her hand put into motion, and she crossed horizontally towards Li Qiye.

“Bang!”

One sound, one stick from Li Qiye, without mercy, ruthlessly struck the sweet fragrant shoulder of Xu Pei; the pain caused her tears to flow; it was as if her sweet smelling shoulder was about to break into pieces.

“This power of ‘One Sword Sweep the Earth’ is one part too weak. It can’t even withstand a single blow. One Sword Sweeps the Earth; the move is just like its name, sweep through everything!”

Li Qiye violently struck Xu Pei’s sweet shoulder until she cried; however, Li Qiye was still cheerfully smiling, and he said:

“Again.”

Li Qiye ignored Xu Pei’s pitiful state; his cheerful smile was extremely ruthless, and he said:

“A fight to the death, it is not just being scrupulous as the earth, but it is also as courageous as the heaven. When meeting your enemy face-to-face in a narrow path, the braver one will win! Your heart is bright like a mirror, able to see clearly the downy feathers in the autumns; however, you are lacking the will to fight a bloody battle to the end – lacking the courage and enlightenment to fight a battle to the death!”

Li Qiye was giving pointers to Xu Pei; not only in her lacking techniques, but also her mentality in battle!

Xu Pei could only reluctantly withstand the pain and let out a lovable roar; her sword created a net like the sea, and she returned a blow towards Li Qiye.

“Bang...”

Li Qiye, once again, struck her waist and indifferently said:

“This one ‘Sword like the Grand Water’ lacks a majestic boundlessness; this move is dependent on the word ‘Grand! ‘Grand Righteous Energy!’”[3]

“Bang...”

Li Qiye, once again, obliterated Xu Pei’s openings; with each move and each technique, he taught Xu Pei:

“This ‘Southern Swallow Returns to its Nest’ was practiced very well, but you shouldn’t be complacent; it is still lacking maturity. A weakness can momentarily be exposed.”

Li Qiye enjoyed reading merit laws and techniques that were practiced by the Cleansing Jade Peak’s disciples. In reality, the three hundred disciple’s practicing methods and techniques were

limited, and the majority of these methods were left behind by Li Qiye for the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect that year. There were even some that Li Qiye had created just for Immortal Emperor Min Ren.

Chapter 50 : The Most Vicious Dao

Instruction (2)

Having diligently read these merit laws, in this world, there was no one who understood and mastered these techniques and methods more than him!

Li Qiye struck Xu Pei around twenty times. Then, she couldn't hold on any longer, fell to the ground, and she found it impossible to stand up. Li Qiye then let her off.

“Next.”

Li Qiye pointed at another disciple, and he cheerfully said.

“Bang... Bang... Bang...”

At this moment, all the other disciples also suffered the calamity; one after another, they were beaten by Li Qiye, and they laid motionlessly on the ground.

After Xu Pei's words enlightened them, at the moment when Li Qiye was beating them, the other disciples were watching each strike from Li Qiye. Even though they were getting hit, each disciple still remembered Li Qiye's every strike.

Now, everyone wanted to know the flaws in each of their moves

and actions. Some wanted to cover their flaws, so that they wouldn't be beaten so badly by Li Qiye; some wanted to use this opportunity to see their own weaknesses and to raise their own cultivation...

Although Xu Pei's words had woken everyone up, not every disciple could see the flaws in their techniques and actions. Even if they could see the flaws within and know, personally, that their moves had flaws, they still wouldn't be able to fix the underlying problems.

The other disciples weren't as lucky as Xu Pei; Li Qiye was only beating them, he didn't give them pointers.

In the end, the disciples who were beaten by Li Qiye lied on the ground, wailing moans filled the air. Li Qiye indifferently looked at them, and he then smiled, saying:

“Today will end here. I'm giving you guys three days to rest. You should carefully think for a little bit, lest you make the same mistakes again.”

Finished speaking, he turned around and left.

Three days rest was as quick as a blink of the eye. Li Qiye, once again, appeared in the martial practice hall of the Cleansing Jade Peak. Li Qiye looked at the surrounding three hundred disciples, and he slowly said:

“The content of today’s lesson is still the same; it is still a beating.”

Li Qiye’s words made many students change their expressions; many students were afraid of Li Qiye and the taste of the Serpent Punishing stick, it was definitely not easy to endure – this type of pain, absolutely torturous.

Li Qiye stared at the three hundred disciples ahead, and he beamingly smiled:

“Are you all coming out personally, or do I have to kill all the way to the door?”

“I go first to fight against older brother.”

Li Qiye had just finished his sentence, and the first to step up was Luo Feng Hua. This was not Luo Feng Hua’s first time to be the vanguard, but this Luo Feng Hua coming out first was completely different from the past.

Luo Feng Hua’s talents were not bad; within the three hundred disciples, his aptitude could be considered first or second. His cultivation was not shallow, and he could be said to be someone that was proud and arrogant.

When Li Qiye first arrived, he essentially didn’t obey. In reality, even after Li Qiye had beaten him with the Serpent Punishing stick, he was still not convinced in both his words and his mind all

the way until he was blown away by Li Qiye's one kick, breaking the bones of his body – this was when he suddenly woke up.

Even though Luo Feng Hua was arrogant and proud, he wasn't ignorant. Li Qiye's one kick immediately trampled and shattered his bones; the power of this kick made Luo Feng Hua realize the terribleness of Li Qiye!

At that moment, Luo Feng Hua realized that Li Qiye was not a bag of straws like the rumors.

Especially after Xu Pei's words that woke the disciples, afterwards, each disciple was carefully studying each blow from Li Qiye. One sentence woke the people up from their dreams. Being beaten by Li Qiye, even though the majority of the disciples suffered from agonizing pain, these last three days, caused them all of them to open their eyes. Many meticulous disciples theorized Li Qiye's strikes, and they had fruitful harvests regarding the flaws within their techniques.

Especially when these flaws were found out by pain; this made the disciples remember them very well.

Luo Feng Hua's talents weren't bad, originally. On top of Xu Pei's words, the last three days he had been contemplating, and it gave him not small benefits; he immediately understood Li Qiye's good intentions, and inadvertently, his attitude towards Li Qiye had changed significantly.

Li Qiye beamingly smiled at Luo Feng Hua, and he slowly said:

“Even though you are one part arrogant and prideful, you are not ignorant to the point of stupidity.”

Arrogant Luo Feng Hua; this time, on the other hand, his cheeks were red, he bowed his head, and he said:

“Please guide me from my mistakes, older brother!”

This time, Luo Feng Hua was sincere and serious.

“Make your move.”

Li Qiye also didn't say many nonsensical words. He took out the Serpent Punishing stick, and he casually spoke.

“Excuse me...”

Luo Feng Hua quickly yelled. After the words came out, going all out in effort, he let out a long roar; a brilliance – like a tsunami – rushed forward. Body like an eagle, stance like an aquatic dragon, commotions in the middle, and accompanied by a dragon tiger.

“Bang!”

Luo Feng Hua's technique had only began, but the Serpent Punishing stick had already directly struck. At the impact point, where his eyes were filled with yellow stars, tears were coming

out.

Li Qiye, making a move, showed no mercy. One stick struck Luo Feng Hua to the point where he couldn't tell North, South, West, and East from each other. One stick came down, and Li Qiye indifferently said:

“Combat on the battlefield is to avoid the lightning and fire; if you survive, this is akin to the enemy's death. Between each technique, the best is the one that kills in one blow. Combat on the battlefield, it is truly not a viewing contest – beautiful techniques are nothing more than the silver decorations at the tip of a spear!”

“The move ‘Dragon Seizing the Hawk’ in the ‘Flying Dragon Fist’, is simply to kill, it does not have excessive and unnecessary variations; a form to murder and kill without needless additions.”

Li Qiye, once again, struck the body of Luo Feng Hua, and he said:

“You considered yourself to be smart, and derived this move into a variation, and then another variation; seemingly profound; however, it is simply drawing legs on a snake, and impairs this killing move!”

Luo Feng Hua's perception was great; after Li Qiye finished speaking, he immediately changed his technique. The move was filled with a heroic aura and was direct, seemingly rough, like a hatchet chopping wood!

“This move’s variation isn’t bad; too hard an attack is easily broken. It has to be just right; between hard and soft.”

Li Qiye was talking, but his hand never stopped moving. Showing no mercy, one stick repeatedly struck the face of Luo Feng Hua until his face and nose were swollen.

“Bang... Bang... Bang...”

Suddenly, Luo Feng Hua had been struck a dozen times by Li Qiye. Without much effort, Luo Feng Hua was knocked down to the ground, and the Serpent Punishing stick rendered him unable to stand up.

Being violently struck by the Serpent Punishing stick, Luo Feng Hua was groaning from pain; however, his heart was ecstatic. This beating was not wasted as it gave him a fruitful harvest.

“Next person.”

Li Qiye mercilessly brought Luo Feng Hua down to the ground, and he said this to the other disciples.

“Bang!”

Finally, an older disciple next to Luo Feng Hua went forward; however, after one move, he was struck by Li Qiye’s stick on his legs. He immediately fell to his knees.

“Your move is too slow!”

Li Qiye didn't bat an eye; another club flew out, and the frightened disciple rolled to this side, then the other side, and then he successfully escaped the stick.

“Bang... Bang... Bang...”

After a while, the disciple was struck by Li Qiye, and he ended up with a swollen face. He, under the Serpent Punishing stick, had only lasted ten moves; however, these ten moves were not wasted since Li Qiye pointed out his incomplete moves one by one.

Half a day later, Li Qiye had finished beating all three hundred disciples. This time, it took longer compared to the past; each time a disciple was beaten, he was pointing out the incomplete variations in the disciple's techniques.

Towards any disciple, Li Qiye did not show mercy. All three hundred disciples were beaten until they couldn't stand up; at the moment, they kept on groaning with an unbearable pain. However, despite the tough pain, for many of the disciples, their harvests were great; their being beaten were not in vain!

In the next few days, each day Li Qiye was always beating the three hundred disciples one by one. However, all the disciples didn't have any complaints; there were even some disciples that were happy to be beaten. Even though Li Qiye was not showing mercy with his Serpent Punishing stick, however, because of the

big results, even worse pain would still have been worth it.

The Dao instruction of Li Qiye had left a deep impression on the three hundred disciples. Being beaten by Li Qiye so ruthlessly, even if they didn't want to remember their flaws, it would be difficult. Using pain to trade for learning, it left a lasting impression.

Even though the method of Li Qiye's Dao instruction was brutal, each disciple received great benefits. For the disciples, especially in the area of technique variations, these short few days were enough for them to learn truly profound technique variations. When their cultivations had flaws, previously, in the severe beatings, were remolded.

Within the short few days, many disciples showed clear progress. Especially the disciples with good talents such as Luo Feng Hua; his progress was even more obvious. Under the molding of Li Qiye, Luo Feng Hua grasped the true meaning of his methods, so, within a few short days, each of his techniques and each of his variations were as meticulous as an antelope and as high as the peak.

Even though Li Qiye was brutal, his teachings were true knowledge; all of the disciples greatly benefited.

Seeing Li Qiye taking great responsibility with his Dao instruction, the disciples, towards Li Qiye, were without grievances.

Even though Sectional Leader Zhou rarely beat the disciples

during his Dao instruction, Sectional Leader Zhou's Dao instruction was with everyone gathered in one place. The sessions that he instructed on were very short, and they were akin to force feeding. He presented the cultivation methods and their variations once; whether the disciples could understand, that was up to the individual disciples.

The three hundred disciples, each one had different talents and different perceptions. Even if they were to cultivate the same methods and the same techniques, their results would be different. This was why, during the moment of cultivation, there were natural biases. The stranger thing was that some disciple's cultivations were completely wrong.

Now, with Li Qiye's one-on-one instruction and beating out the flaws of individual disciples, this gave each disciple a clear direction for cultivation. Regarding the profound variations of techniques, their understand became deeper.

So, in just a few days, with regards to the variations of techniques, many disciples had seen the road; some had even taken steps on the road! This delighted many disciple's hearts. A few short days of Li Qiye's instruction were more fruitful than what they were studying for a year, even two or three years!

Chapter 51 : Immortal's Teaching Is Only As Good As This (1)

At the same time Li Qiye was instructing the Dao at the Cleansing Jade Peak, the upper echelon of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect held a secret meeting. In fact, only the Six Elders were eligible to attend this meeting.

The conference was personally arranged by the first elder. Sitting in his high seat, looking at the other five elders, he gravely said:

“With all five brothers in the same room, let us talk about the King Physique paste matter.”

When the first elder spoke up, the other five elders couldn't help but glance at each other; they were contemplating. Within the Six Elders, in terms of qualifications and merits, the first elder was the highest.

Furthermore, the first elder was the direct disciple of the previous sect master. The status of the first elder, one could say that no one could compare to it at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. However, there was a rumour within the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, that the current sect master, Su Yong Huang, was also a disciple of the previous sect master. The current sect master was thought to be a direct disciple secretly groomed by the previous head.

However, regarding this matter, the six elders were aware that

this was not the case.

Within the Six Elders, with the exception of Cao Xiong, the other four didn't have the ambition to compete for the sect master's seat because they knew, with regards to cultivation or contribution or status, they didn't have the qualifications to compete for the seat.

Truthfully, the four elders believed that regarding the matter of the sect master's position, besides the first elder, there was no one else.

“We had previously agreed with Li Qiye that if he could successfully become in-laws with the Nine Saint Demon Gate, we would grant him a King Physique paste.”

The first elder looked at the five elders, and he deepened his voice.

The four elders went silent, and only Cao Xiong was especially upset in his heart. Li Qiye having an in-law relationship with the Nine Saint Demon Gate; then in the future, this would have a great impact against his disciple, Leng Shi Zhi, to compete for the head's seat.

Cao Xiong had his own plans; even if he had no chance to become the sect master in this lifetime, he still hoped that his disciple, Leng Shi Zhi, could become the next sect master. In reality, Leng Shi Zhi did not disappoint his expectations. What gave Cao Xiong deadly anguish was that, at the halfway point, an unfathomable Li Qiye suddenly appeared.

If Li Qiye could actually marry Li Shuangyan, on top of his position as the prime disciple, then Cao Xiong was afraid that the matter of him becoming the next Sect Master was inevitable, and he couldn't be shaken by others; this included the current sect master, Su Yong Huang.

Within the Six Elders, the fourth elder, Elder Sun, stroked his beard up and down, and he nodded his head; he said:

“This matter we had agreed on; Li Qiye was successful on his part, granting the King Physique paste, is something we have to do.”

Elder Sun was ranked fourth within the elders, and he didn't realized he had unconsciously supported Li Qiye. The reason why Elder Sun was supporting Li Qiye was very simple; it was because his disciple was Protector Mo.

Elder Sun did not only have one disciple; in reality, Protector Mo, within his disciples, was not considered excellent. Protector Mo's cultivation was not the weakest within the disciples, but Protector Mo, and his disciple, Nan Huai Ren, their natures were the complete opposite; Protector Mo was taciturn and lacked social dealings on top of his average cultivation, which was why Elder Sun didn't think Protector Mo could inherit his legacy.

Elder Sun thought about supporting another disciple in the future, to inherit his elder seat! However, recently, things have changed. With one sentence from Li Qiye, everything became

different all at once! His words turned Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren into the ambassadors between the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and the Nine Saint Demon Gate. When the Nine Saint Demon Gate's Grand Protector Yu He had any concerns, they were conveyed through Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

One had to know that the status of Yu He, in the Old Ox country, was that of a Royal Noble. Even the Six Elders wouldn't necessarily be able to contact him, but, right now, any matters would be informed to Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren. Suddenly, the status of Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren, at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, had greatly improved.

His disciple and grand disciple had gotten great benefits, so naturally, Elder Sun had to support Li Qiye.

“As brothers all know, we still have a King Physique paste in our sect.”

The first elder spoke.

This matter only caused the other elders to think, but Cao Xiong's heart was in physical pain. This King Physique paste had been kept for a long time in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. It has been kept since the time of the previous sect master; however, this King Physique paste still had not been used.

In fact, the first elder once had a great contribution, and this King Physique paste was meant to be awarded for his usage;

however, the first elder was reluctant because he thought that he was already old and limited by his talents. For him to use a King Physique paste would have been a waste.

When even the first elder was hesitant to use it, the other elders definitely would not have any intentions, or a reason, to use this King Physique paste.

From their thoughts, back then, in the future, if there was an extremely gifted disciple in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, and if this disciple could uphold one direction by himself, then this one King Physique paste would be given to him to mold his body!

Currently, this King Physique paste was promised to Li Qiye, and it was a matter that was agreed on by the first elder; the other four elders weren't in a position to say anything. Cao Xiong's heart was in pain, because he had previously thought that this King Physique paste would be given to his disciple, Leng Shi Zhi, in the future for his second body molding.

“However, Li Qiye requires the leading beast marrow of this King Physique paste to change to a Hell Iron Bull's beast marrow.”

The first elder said with a deep tone.

These words had just came out, but the expressions of the four elders couldn't help but become alarmed; Elder Qian startledly reasoned:

“Older brother, the Hell Iron Bull, this is an extremely rare Heavenly Beast; everyone knows that the beast marrow of a Hell Iron Bull’s price on the market is as high as the sky! The beast marrow meant for a King Physique paste, this rank of beast marrow, even at its lowest, would have to be one hundred thousand years old. I’m afraid that this price would frighten people!”

The first elder gently nodded his head, and he said:

“I had contacted the auction house; they actually had a Hell Iron Bull’s beast marrow, still young, a little more than nine thousand years; this could be considered ten thousand. They were willing to swap the bone marrows with us; however, we have to add one thousand pieces of Ancient Sacred Refined Jade.”

“One thousand pieces of Ancient Sacred Refined Jade?”

Having heard this, the fifth elder, named Zhou, his expression greatly soured, and he said:

“This is the lion opening its mouth; with one thousand pieces of Ancient Sacred Refined Jade, we could buy the beast marrow! Two hundred thousand years!”

“Older brother, this Li Qiye, this is giving him an inch and he’ll want a mile.”

Cao Xiong grasped this rare opportunity, and he seriously said:

“The great matter of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, it is not his place to bargain. He is only a third generation disciple, yet he still dares to propose conditions with us. This whole thing is not showing us any respect! He is being too presumptuous.”

The first elder's expression changed after hearing these words. Cao Xiong continued speaking to the four other elders:

“Dear brothers, we are all aware that the King Physique paste is precious. This King Physique paste was meant for the third generation disciple, and this was already a great blessing from our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. That ungrateful thing still dared to haggle...”

“Besides, the origin of Li Qiye's identity is still in question; one could say that he might be a spy! We're giving a priceless King Physique paste to a traitor, is this not beating a dog with meat buns? If we add one thousand pieces of Ancient Sacred Refined Jade, on top of that, then our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect would suffer a heavy loss; who was to say, in the future, that Li Qiye won't defect against us after receiving all of our benefits?”[1]

This was an opportunity that was rare for Cao Xiong; he strongly tried to convince the other four elders, and he naturally wouldn't want Li Qiye to obtain this King Physique paste.

Elder Wu, ranked sixth within the elders, couldn't help but to try and convince the first elder:

“Older brother, were granting him the King Physique paste, is already a great benefaction from our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; Li Qiye, as a third generation disciple, he needs to be aware of this! Moreover, older brother is clear on this; in our sect, the remaining Ancient Sacred Refined Jade isn’t much. If, this time, we spend another one thousand pieces, this is not different from emptying our storage; this isn’t a trivial matter, ah, older brother.”

The other elders couldn’t help but to stare at the first elder; even though they didn’t say anything, their perspectives were obvious. Seeing this scene, Cao Xiong was secretly ecstatic. He thought that this matter was half completed; in just a moment, he will fan the fire again. Maybe Li Qiye wouldn’t even get the King Physique paste.

“One thousand pieces of Ancient Sacred Refined Jade, this is not worth it.”

Third Elder also said.

It was undeniable that the four elders were truly respectful towards the first elder. The first elder, in their minds, had an extremely high status, and he couldn’t be shaken by other people.

However, in recent years the situation had changed. Until now, the elders had all hoped that the first elder would take over the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. In their hearts, they rejected the current sect master, Su Yong Huang! Their ideal sect master was the first elder.

However, with regards to the sect master's seat, the first elder had never revealed his ambition. As time passed, the other elders couldn't help but become disappointed. Especially in recent years, the first elder appeared to be disheartened, and he no longer had the courageous aura like the early years; this greatly shook the other elder's hearts.

On the contrary, Second Elder Cao Xiong had never given up on the sect master's seat. Cao Xiong was too close to Guest Adviser Dong Sheng Long; in the elder's hearts, Cao Xiong was not an ideal Sect Master; however, in the future, if they really had to choose between Cao Xiong and Su Yong Huang, they couldn't help but hesitate.

Especially in recent times, when Cao Xiong had repeatedly suggested his intention to become Sect Master, making the elder's hearts more or less jolted inside.

Today, when First Elder brought this up, Cao Xiong pointed out the important intricacies within, making the four elders rethink their thoughts.

Just when Cao Xiong was reaching his opportunity, the first elder suddenly flashed his soaring eyes. In a split second, the first elder's aura greatly pressured others; his whole body exerted and exuded rays of brilliance. At this moment, it was as if the first elder became a different person; his heavenly form flew upward to the sky. With Dao finger incantations in front of his chest, he was brimming with imposing power! Inside this power was a faint presence of a Royal Noble's pressure.

The first elder, in the end, was a person that could be bestowed the Named Hero title. Within the Six Elders, he had been in the sect the longest, and he also had the deepest cultivation. He, suddenly exerting his pressure, caused the other elders to be shocked, and they felt the suppressing atmosphere.

At this time, the first elder slowly opened his mouth, and he said:

“Brothers’ oppositions make sense, but brothers must also know the grand circumstance ahead; the Nine Saint Demon Gate, to our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, is extremely vital! Li Qiye, to our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, is just as vital! Without him, there will be no Nine Saint Demon Gate! This is why, regarding this matter, I summoned brothers here hoping that brothers would approve this matter!”

Chapter 52 : Immortal's Teaching Is Only As Good As This (2)

First Elder's words this time were sonorously powerful and imposingly compelling. It was no longer a question. When he spoke these words, there was no other road; the other elders had to agree.

The aura of First Elder was aggressively frightening, and, in the blink of an eye, it shook the hearts of the other elders. Even Cao Xiong's expression couldn't help but greatly change!

The support of the four elders, for the first elder, had been shaken in these last two or three years; however, today, when the first elder suddenly exerted his imposing aura, it made the other elder's hearts tremor and linger in the middle. It was as if their old brother from that year was now present again. That year, the first elder was the one who made all the big decisions for the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. and, that year, the first elder's imposing aura was just like this.

Cao Xiong's expression soured; during these recent years, his ambition for the sect master's seat had not lessened. However, the first elder was downhearted and decadent, this made Cao Xiong not put him in his eyes. After all, he was not necessarily worse than the first elder! If they were to compete for the sect master's seat, again, the first elder was not his opponent.[1]

Now, the first elder suddenly, and abruptly, started a storm, and

this made Cao Xiong once again realize that the first elder was still the pillar of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!

“If older brother thinks that Li Qiye is worth grooming, then I support older brother’s decision.”

In the end, Elder Sun, master of Protector Mo, was the first to express his opinion.

The third elder was silent for a moment, and he then finally expressed his view as well:

“If older brother truly wants to groom Li Qiye, then let it be so. Hopefully he won’t betray your heart’s blood.”[2]

These words were, without a doubt, an agreement to the first elder.

The fifth elder was contemplating as well, and he then said:

“This time, I agree with older brother’s decision.”

Suddenly, all four elders agreed to accept this decision. This decision was made, not because of Li Qiye’s merits, but because of the first elder. The four elders faintly felt that the first elder’s ambition had not decayed. They hoped that the first elder could, once again, shoulder the burdens of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

Earlier, Cao Xiong had many little calculations in his mind, thinking about how to not let Li Qiye obtain the King Physique paste; however, the sudden reversal rendered all of Cao Xiong's schemes unusable. It made Cao Xiong startled, and he stood in the same spot, unable to accept the reality.

At the Cleansing Jade Peak, Li Qiye had beaten the three hundred disciples for more than ten days, and he then molded the disciples, regardless of their cultivations and flawed techniques.

To this day, the three hundred disciples at the Cleansing Jade Peak were convinced by Li Qiye in both their words and their minds. Even the arrogant Luo Feng Hua, towards Li Qiye, was convinced with both his words and his mind.[3]

Xu Pei became the oldest sister of the three hundred disciples. Xu Pei's age was higher than Li Qiye by not just a little; however, she was timid and lacked her own opinions. Under the devil-like training in these last ten days, Li Qiye was trying to polish Xu Pei; not only in her incompleted techniques, but also her Dao willpower in order to increase her confidence.

In the blink of an eye, half a month had quickly passed. Today, Li Qiye climbed to his high stand. In reality, Li Qiye didn't come alone. Serving by Li Qiye was no longer Nan Huai Ren, but Li Shuangyan.

The truth was, this was not Li Shuangyan's first time accompanying Li Qiye to the Cleansing Jade Peak. The first time

she had visited, there was a large wave within the three hundred disciples. After all, to these disciples who were not officially in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, a heavenly goddess like Li Shuangyan was an existence in the legends.

The descendant of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, princess of the Old Ox country, the heaven's prideful daughter, and a cultivation genius. Any of these titles was enough to startle these disciples. To some of the disciples, Li Shuangyan was high high in the above.[4]

However, under Li Qiye's instruction, Li Shuangyan recently had been showing up with Li Qiye to the Cleansing Jade Peak more often, making the three hundred disciples slowly accept Li Shuangyan's existence.

Li Shuangyan was perplexed regarding Li Qiye's ruthless Dao instructions; however, within a few days of witnessing Li Qiye pointing out their black hearts, revealing the incomplete and flawed techniques of the disciples, and this caused Li Shuangyan's heart to shake![5]

She could tell that the Serpent Punishing stick was a magical treasure. However, with just the Serpent Punishing stick, it wasn't enough for Li Qiye to correctly point out the flaws of many techniques. Without a doubt, Li Qiye grasped the profound truths behind these methods and techniques.

The Cleansing Jade Peak's disciples weren't practicing peerless merit laws, but, in order to grasp the profound truths of dozens of merit laws and understand the mysterious arts, was this such an easy thing?

Moreover, many of these foundational merit laws came from the hands of Immortal Emperor Min Ren. The simpler the merit law, the more majestic the aura; to truly grasp the profound truths was not an easy thing.

Without a doubt, currently, Li Qiye had never practiced these merit laws, but he had grasped the profound truths of these techniques! Such a phenomenon was shown by a thirteen year old boy with a Mortal Physique, Mortal Life Wheel, and Mortal Fate Palace; this was truly inconceivable!

Li Qiye, on his high platform, looked at his fellow disciples, and he started to speak:

“Today’s lesson is a lecture on the foundational mysteriousness of the Jade Spiral Merit Law. This is one of the most basic merit laws in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, and one third of all disciples practice this merit law. If a disciple does not practice this merit law, they could choose to not listen.”

“Older brother, we... Our lesson today isn’t getting hit?”

Currently, Xu Pei was the leader of the three hundred disciples. She suddenly heard Li Qiye’s announcement, and she couldn’t help but exclaim.

Li Qiye beamingly smiled at Xu Pei, and he said:

“What, our younger sister is addicted to being beaten? One day without a beating, and your whole body wouldn’t be comfortable?”

“N-no, not at all...”

Li Qiye’s words immediately made Xu Pei blush; her face reddened, and she immediately shook her head to deny.

In fact, when Li Qiye had started his lecture, the other disciples were expecting it as well. Li Qiye had beaten them for the last ten days, so they were almost numb to the painful sensation.

With his lecture starting, all three hundred disciples didn’t leave the field, and they stayed to listen in amazement. Currently, the three hundred disciples had absolute faith in Li Qiye. Li Qiye was already able to point out the flaws in their techniques; currently, when he was speaking about profound truths, it definitely would not be worse.

Currently, the disciples had forgotten that Li Qiye’s entrance to the sect was later than them. His talent was worse, and his age was also young. Before they knew it, Li Qiye had become the oldest brother in their hearts; the prime disciple of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

At the moment Li Qiye finally started his lecture, the disciples immediately lost their thoughts, and they listened with great pleasure.

Not mentioning the three hundred disciples, even Li Shuangyan, who was known as a genius and standing next to Li Qiye, was also carefully listening; she would not regain her flippant thoughts for a long time.

The Jade Spiral Merit Law was the most basic merit law of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; it could refine the Life Wheel and Fate Palace, and it belonged to an all-purpose type of merit law. It was well received in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. In reality, this merit law in the sect was not considered confidential or anything. Any disciple could spread this method – even to the mortal world – because this method was too ordinary; it was definitely an all-purpose common merit law.

This type of merit law, in the Grand Middle Territory, was as common as the hairs on an ox. This type of merit law, to the new disciples of many sects, was disdained as beneath contempt.

However, this most rudimentary foundational merit law, today, in the words of Li Qiye, was like the deluge of heavenly flowers and the golden spring rushing forth from the earth. Li Qiye continuously spoke, using simplicity to solve complications and shallow light to enter the profound darkness. From his mouth, profound truths came out in the form of words; this caused listeners to become dazed like they were intoxicated.[6]

If there was a person who was still completely showing conscious towards anything but the lesson, they would wonder whether this was only a rudimentary foundational merit law. The Jade Spiral Merit Law, under the preaching of Li Qiye, had become a true guiding principle of cultivation.

In fact, the Jade Spiral Merit Law was, indeed, a true guiding principle of merit laws. Even though it was coarse, it still contained the blood and thoughts of the human race in the long searched road of the grand Dao.

The merit law was inherited since the Desolate Era. During that era, ten thousand races were trying to find the grand Dao. One could say that the Jade Spiral Merit Law was one of the beginning merit laws of the many immortal sages – from the human race – at the start of their cultivation. Even though it was superficial, but this was an excellent merit law for new beginners. This merit law was fair and honest as well as gentle and mild; it was suitable for laying down the first foundation.

In that year, when Li Qiye and Immortal Emperor Min Ren had built the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, they had taught many disciples this merit law. However, later on, when the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect obtained Emperor merit laws, not many disciples were willing to learn this merit law any longer.

Currently, only the disciples who had not officially entered the sect was willing to study this method! In reality, it was because they had no other choices.

Once Li Qiye had finished his lecture, many disciples had still not regained their wits for a long time. Li Shuangyan was the first to regain her composure, and she couldn't help but quiver in astonishment!

Li Shuangyan stared at Li Qiye with amazement. The Jade Spiral Merit Law, this ordinary merit law that couldn't be any more ordinary, she had read it multiple times. For a genius like her, this foundational merit law, she had only needed to read it once to understand the profound truths within.

However, after having heard Li Qiye's lecture, she immediately thought that her understanding of this merit law, prior, was superficial and shallow. Under the teachings of Li Qiye, this coarse merit law became the general principle of the Dao.

These profound truths, these understandings – this was impossible to imagine. Even her master, Demon Emperor Lun Ri, wouldn't be able to preach such mysterious truths.

Moreover, these truths of Li Qiye were not unbending and stiff; these truths, from this merit law, in the words of Li Qiye, seemed to say that he was already a grand master of this merit law.[7]

How could Li Shuangyan know that, after Li Qiye had read the Jade Spiral Merit law, his memories regarding the method came back. The profound truths of this merit law, it wasn't only just Li Qiye's enlightenments throughout the ages, but it was also the combination of the blood and thoughts of countless human race ancestors in the Desolate Era. Li Qiye was simply combining the profound truths of this merit law in one place.

That year, this merit law was considered to be one of the most important foundational merit laws of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Immortal Emperor Min Ren's most powerful generals had all practiced this merit law.

Only later, when Immortal Emperor Min Ren had obtained the Heaven's Will, and the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, having an Emperor merit law, was the moment the descendants looked down on practicing this method.

Chapter 53 : Yin And Yang Sea Of Blood

(1)

Li Qiye's Dao lecture caused Li Shuangyan to be shocked; just the Jade Spiral Merit Law alone was enough for her to feel that it was impossible. Afterward, Li Qiye started to preach the other foundational merit laws of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. He spoke continuously like he had them memorized on the palm of his hand, from shallow to deep, and from simple to complex; indescribably wonderful, just like the deluge of heavenly flowers and the golden spring rushing forth from the earth.

Li Qiye, in one breath, explained several foundational merit laws of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. He spoke about the profound truths, he taught the mysterious meanings, and he left behind an everlasting impression without comparison, giving others a fresh feeling.

Since Li Shuangyan had read these foundational merit laws, before and after, she had meticulously understood them; it caused her to have an even greater surprise. Even though these merit laws were superficially simple; however, with her current cultivation and with her current Dao understanding, she wouldn't be able to preach such profound truths like Li Qiye.

This discovery impacted her and shook her very foundation. Li Shuangyan was the heaven's prideful daughter; she had an Emperor Physique and a Saint Fate Palace. It wasn't an undeserved reputation regarding her talents or Physique, or even her Dao understanding. Not eyeing just the whole Grand Middle Territory,

even the whole Mortal Emperor world, she would still be a named genius.

However, her explanation of the Dao truths and her understanding of the profound truths, even with her current cultivation, were left far behind by Li Qiye. This sort of thing, to appear in an ordinary person with a Mortal Physique, Mortal Life Wheel, and Mortal Fate Palace; it was never seen before. However, when things like this happened to Li Qiye, everything felt like it was a natural matter.

At this moment, Li Shuangyan couldn't help but lament over the fact that, regarding the spotting of geniuses, she was far inferior to her master, Demon Emperor Lun Ri. In the beginning, she had thought that her master had chosen Li Qiye because of the four Heavenly Guardian golems, but seeing what was before her eyes, this was far from the truth.

Li Qiye went from rotten to magical, and this caused Li Shuangyan to feel an incomparable astonishment. She couldn't see through Li Qiye, a young boy who was younger than her. His unfathomable existence has to be a miracle!

Li Qiye's Dao lesson was entering its closing stage; he originally wanted to correct the incomplete moves of these disciples, and that also served as a way to earn the respect of this arrogant and unruly group. After was the Dao instruction meant to create a complete foundation for their cultivation in order to avoid flaws within their merit laws; otherwise, it would have an adverse effect on the rest of their cultivation lives.

In fact, since the ancient ages, many cultivators only needed to practice the most powerful merit laws. In the future, they could step into the apex ranks. Many cultivators, ancient immortal heritages, and even major figures teaching their disciples had thought that this was the case.

However, after innumerable years of ups and downs, regarding the insights within Dao instructions, other people couldn't compare to Li Qiye. To Li Qiye – a cultivator, at the beginning of cultivation – the most important thing was not a world shattering method, but a proper understanding of morality and an awareness of the grand Dao foundation. If, in the beginning, one's morality and foundational Dao understanding had diverged from the main road, then in the future, it would be difficult to change; this negatively affected the ideals of Dao cultivation.[1]

Lastly, Li Qiye wanted to show direction to the three hundred disciples of the Cleansing Jade Peak. In reality, these disciples were limited in their foundational cultivations with the introductory merit laws, plus they were also in the early and superficial stages; it was difficult to spot flaws. However, Li Qiye did not take this matter lightly, and, without any carelessness, he examined all the individual disciples.

Physique, Life Wheel, Fate Palace, and the Dao willpower affected and reinforced each other; Li Qiye had his own insights. Regarding this matter, Li Qiye was absolutely the unparalleled grand master!

Thus, as he checked the base of each disciple, he could formulate the most exact explanations!

During Li Qiye's examination, Luo Feng Hua was the first leading horse; the first to stand out. He had greatly changed. Before, the most disrespectful towards Li Qiye was him; the one who opposed Li Qiye the most was also him; however, he was currently one of Li Qiye's biggest admirers.

Sectional Leader Zhou taught the Dao to him for several years, but it was not equal to Li Qiye's Dao instruction of a few days. With such an obvious gap, a talented person like Luo Feng Hua naturally understood who was a true mentor; he was not a fool.

Under Li Qiye's command, Luo Feng Hua was floating his Shou Life Wheel, Xuan Fate Palace, and Zhan Physique; he activated his Fate Palace and Life Wheel merit laws so that Li Qiye could thoroughly check them.[2]

"You practiced very thoroughly; the Dao foundation is without flaws. However, you were too anxious with ranking up; in the future, do not be hot-tempered and impatient. Step-by-step improvement is not a bad thing. Do not only see the cultivation rank ahead as you need to have a vision for the future."

Li Qiye was impressed with Luo Feng Hua since he indeed had some talents.

After hearing Li Qiye's view, Luo Feng Hua stepped back with joy.

"You belong to the Night Owl Physique. On the basis of Dao

foundation, with an emphasis on lightness. In the future, with your cultivation, emphasize flying bird types, and you should take the road of quick and violent.”

“There is an insufficient ferocious strength, but there is an abundance of yin; this seems to be the Early Form Fate Palace. You cannot single-mindedly pursue the ranks; it is as if you were just expanding your Fate Palace. You need to use your Fate Palace to revolve your Life Wheel in order to refine your Physique to its max potential. Slow down your cultivation speed, and you should use more time to rebuild your Physique.”

“A girl doesn’t necessarily have to practice a gentle yin method. Your blood qi is yang, and your Life Wheel is extremely fast. In the future, you should have a bias for firm and yang cultivational methods because your Life Wheel directly affects your Physique...”[3]

Li Qiye examined the Dao foundations for each disciple. After his examinations, he would give out the most exact advices.

Li Shuangyan was still by Li Qiye’s side, keeping him company, and she continued to be astonished by his suggestions. Li Qiye’s current achievements, once again, pushed her to a different door. Before, when Li Qiye was preaching, she assumed that Li Qiye’s Dao understandings were beyond comprehension.

However, with Li Qiye’s current explanations for Dao

cultivation, this was outside the realm of understanding cultivational methods. This matter, it didn't matter how high one's talents and aptitudes were, as one couldn't simply be enlightened with these explanations.

These explanations were accumulated through time, accumulated through the months and the years. These explanations, only someone who was very far along on the grand road of Dao would be able to accumulate.

If someone said that her master, Demon Emperor Lun Ri, would have this knowledge, she wouldn't be shocked because her master, as of today, had experienced countless grinding and polishing. With regards to cultivation, his understanding was truly deep.

However, the thing that was impossible to understand was that Li Qiye was only thirteen or fourteen years old. Right now, Li Qiye and his insightful form made Li Shuangyan question whether this was the first time that he had cultivated.

Taking ten thousand steps back, even if this was not Li Qiye's first time cultivating, as a thirteen or fourteen year old, how could his knowledge be so deep?[4]

The last person to step up for the examination was Zhang Yu. Zhang Yu stepped forward, and he couldn't help but rub his hands together; his voice was very soft, and he asked:

“Bro-brother, does my, my practice have any problems?”

The time since Zhang Yu had joined the sect was longer than Luo Feng Hua's group. One could even say that Zhang Yu was one of the longest running disciples. His age was high; however, no one knew why, in these recent years, his cultivation was always near the bottom.

This was not because Zhang Yu did not try. On the contrary, Zhang Yu was one of the hardest working and diligent disciples, but his cultivation, nevertheless, had always been in the back.

Zhang Yu was the type without many words. As his cultivation grew difficult to increase, even by a half step, he became even more silent, saying fewer words than before. Many disciples in the Cleansing Jade Peak had thought that his talents were not great, and even Sectional Leader Zhou thought this way. This was why Sectional Leader Zhou ignored him during Dao instruction, didn't question his cultivation, and left him to live and die by himself.[5]

When Zhang Yu showed his Shou Life Wheel, Xuan Fate Palace, and Zhan Physique, and showed Li Qiye his Dao foundation; one could see that his Life Wheel was faint, his Fate Palace was unstable, only the Physique had an indistinct sound of a cow mooing.

Li Qiye examined Zhang Yu's condition; he couldn't help but change his expression. He stared at Zhang Yu and said:

“Why are you practicing the Beneficence Water Longevity Law? This type of Life Wheel merit law, was it chosen by you?”

Zhang Yu scratched his head, and he said:

“I, I, I, Sectional Leader Zhou said, I am a Houtian Physique; a Water Ox Physique. So, he picked the Beneficence Water Longevity Law, and he said it would express the water affinity of the blood qi!”

“Truly not knowing east from west!”

Li Qiye coldly scowled, and he said:

“Hampering the student’s progress! Houtian Physique is not wrong, but this is not the Water Ox Physique. You have the Primordial Chaos Ox Physique!”[6]

A Houtian Physique was not like Xiantian Physique or Mortal Physique in that it could become an Emperor Physique, Saint Physique, or Immortal Physique. Although it couldn’t increase in rank, this didn’t mean that a Houtian Physique would be weak.

Houtian has its own evolution procedure. Normally, the Water Ox Physique, through the cultivation with a formidable Physique merit law, could evolve into the strongest Kui Ox Physique. When Kui Ox Physique was practiced to its strongest form, even someone with a Saint Physique would change their expression.

“Primordial Chaos Ox Physique? There, there is a physique like this?”

Zhang Yu was in a daze, he had never heard of this physique before.

“Of course there is.”

Li Qiye indifferently said:

“Your physique is it.”

In fact, the Primordial Chaos Physique was extremely rare, and there were many uses for this physique.

Li Qiye glanced at him once, and he said:

“You have practiced the wrong longevity law. If you continue, there will not be a half step of improvement.”

“Well, well, what should I do then?”

Zhang Yu’s face became pale with fear, and didn’t know what to do in the moment.

Li Qiye replied:

“Tear down everything and rebuild once more; practice the Jade Spiral Merit Law! This merit law is gentle, and it is the most basic foundational merit law. It reinforces the Life Wheel, Fate Palace,

and the Physique. This merit law is the most fitting for you!”

“However, the assessment is, is less than a year from now.”

Zhang Yu jumped up from being frightened, and he quickly said.

Li Qiye looked at him once, and he calmly responded:

“Is the assessment important? Or is the road of your future important? If you don’t pass the assessment, you could try to retake the test again. After another ten years, if you want to tear down your Dao foundation to rebuild it, I’m afraid you would have wasted your best years. It is best to carefully think about this.”

At this point, many disciples sympathetically looked at Zhang Yu. He practiced hard for five years, and now, he has to tear away everything and rebuild it. This was a matter that was difficult to accept for anyone. Just like this, five years of blood and tears were completely wasted.

For most people, they would not want to break and rebuild. If they missed this assessment, they would have to wait another five years; not everyone was willing to wait.

Chapter 54 : Yin And Yang Sea Of Blood

(2)

Zhang Yu's face was sometimes white and sometimes green. There were important intricacies; he understood this. Five years of sweat and blood was suddenly ruined since he had wasted these five years of cultivation.

“If you can't decide at the moment, you should go back and think it over. After you have figured it out, you can come find me.”

Li Qiye did not force him. One's road, in the end, had to be walked by the person personally; if he lacked this decisiveness, then wanting to polish a firm Dao willpower would just merely be empty words.

“I, I destroy! I, I will practice the Jade Spiral Merit Law!”

Li Qiye had only just finished his words before Zhang Yu had already gritted his teeth and firmly said what he had thought with strong determination.

Li Qiye only nodded his head, and he didn't say anything else. He told Li Shuangyan, who was standing by his side:

“Destroy his cultivation; he will start all over again.”

With regards to Li Qiye, the current Li Shuangyan was without the slightest hesitation, and she immediately took action.

Eventually, Li Qiye had finished examining the cultivation of the disciples. One could say that the majority of the disciples didn't have any major flaws. The only big flaw was the grave situation of Zhang Yu.

After the Dao examination of all of the disciples, everyone was on track. Li Qiye began to let go, allowing his disciples to self-cultivate, reaffirm their Dao foundation, clear their moral stance, and correct their merit laws. Then, the next step was for them to personally cultivate. Thinking up to this step, Li Qiye had already led the Cleansing Jade Peak on the road of cultivation. He would no longer support them one by one. He would let them go on their own cultivation path; however, once in awhile, he would take the time to pass on the Dao instructions for those disciples.

For countless moons and ages, even Immortal Emperors were groomed by him. Li Qiye was more clear than anyone that no matter how fantastic a disciple's talents were, if he didn't let go and held their hand the whole way, then those disciples, in the end, would not be able to grow. He would have no way of holding up a direction by them self! Without experiencing the rain and wind, how could one meet the rainbow?

After letting go, Li Qiye started to focus on his own cultivation. In reality, because of the Dao instructions for the Cleansing Jade Peak disciples, Li Qiye had really slowed down his own cultivation speed.

Currently, Li Qiye was at the Yun Physique rank, at the Blood Strengthening stage. Moreover, his Blood Strengthening stage had already reached grand perfection as he stepped towards the Body Tempering stage. To Li Qiye, this was a good time to temper his body one more time.

At this moment, Li Qiye took out an ancient box. If Li Shuangyan was here, maybe she would be able to recognize this ancient box. This was the ancient box taken from the Saint Cavern of the Nine Saint Demon Gate. In fact, the elders of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, as well as Demon Emperor Lun Ri, did not know what was inside the ancient box. In the end, Li Qiye had chosen this no-name mysterious box; what could be inside?

In principle, when a disciple reached the Yun Physique rank, at the Blood Strengthening stage, the sect would reward them with a Longevity Treasure! However, currently, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had been declining, and their treasure storage was limited. If they had to reward a Longevity Treasure for even the outer disciples, the treasure storage of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect would not be able to handle it!

A Longevity Treasure's major role was to prolong life and nourish the blood. Longevity Treasures and Fate Devices were the two major treasures of a cultivator; the majority of cultivators all have a Longevity Treasure and a Fate Device![1]

A Fate Device, whether it was a Life Treasure or True Treasure, its main effects would be to protect the Fate Palace and attack the enemy. Under the majority of situations, only on the battlefield would there be a need for a Fate Device.

A Longevity Treasure was different, it was necessary at any moment. A Longevity Treasure could prolong the life of a cultivator, but it could also strengthen the flesh and strength of its possessor; it could even refine the longevity blood of a cultivator.

A Longevity Treasure, in battle, could also have great effects. When the blood energy was depleted in a battle, one could activate the Longevity Treasure, and in a short time, it could replenish the missing blood energy. It could even provide a burst of strength for the cultivator, increasing his combat effectiveness!

Li Qiye opened the ancient box, and inside the box were two objects, lying down like blood pearls; two drops of blood pearl, seemingly ordinary. They were formed by the condensation of two drops of fresh blood.

However, with meticulous observation, one would find that the two blood pearls seemingly hid an endless amount of blood energy; it was as if they were two huge seas of blood. Plus, these two blood pearls were different, one blood pearl seemingly had a circular Golden Sun, slowly ascending, while the other blood pearl was akin to a circular Mysterious Moon, floating up and down without break!

“Yin Yang Sea of Blood...”

He grasped the two seemingly ordinary blood pearls in his palm. Li Qiye gently sighed, reminiscing; the bloody battle that year seemed like it was just yesterday.

That year, Immortal Emperor Min Ren's grand Dao had been completed, shouldering the Heaven's Will, commanding countless heavenly generals, and sweeping through the nine heavens and ten earths; nothing could have blocked his path! Immortal Emperor Min Ren's first battlefield, he became an Immortal Emperor while shouldering the Heaven's Will, it was an ancient Forbidden Burial Ground with tremendous viciousness!

As the Dark Crow during that moment, his form was becoming unstable; however, he still hoped to see Min Ren's first battle. To any Immortal Emperor, the first battle was very important; it was an opportunity to refine the Heaven's Will.

Li Qiye chose an ancient Forbidden Burial Ground for Min Ren! Even though, at that moment, Li Qiye did not personally lead the army; however, he still watched this battle's murderous scene as the heaven fell and the earth was rended, killing to the point where the sun and moon no longer shined.

That year during this battle, the heaven's dome was broken, and ten thousand fields were stamped out! In the end, Immortal Emperor Min Ren, with his horse leading the charge, penetrated into the deepest depths of the ancient Forbidden Burial Ground.

That year in the deepest depths of the Forbidden Burial Ground, one of the spoils was this ancient box currently in front of him! That year, Li Qiye was approaching his deep slumber. From his personal perspective, he had hoped that Immortal Emperor Min Ren would use the Yin Yang Sea of Blood to craft an Immortal Emperor Longevity Treasure that belonged to just him.

However, because Immortal Emperor Min Ren had accepted the Heaven's Will, he had complete confidence in himself. He personally had a Longevity Treasure that was already frightening through the eons, so he was not willing to waste this treasure. In the end, he rewarded the treasure to Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon who exerted the most effort in this battle, as a praise.

Afterward, Li Qiye went into his deep slumber, and he didn't further inquire on this matter. He assumed that Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon had already used the Yin Yang Sea of Blood to create his own Longevity Treasure, until the moment that he opened the Saint Cavern. He now realized that Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon didn't use this treasure.

The moment that he opened the door, he finally understood that, when Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon told him to take care of the Nine Saint Demon Gate in the future and that he had left an indescribable treasure within, he was referring to the Yin Yang Sea of Blood.

“Dngggggg”

When Li Qiye dropped the two blood pearls into his Life Wheel, his whole body shook. Instantly, there were two seas of blood encompassing his whole Life Wheel. With the blink of an eye, his Life Wheel reddened with bright auras, and it flooded through his entire body.

Within the sea of blood, the highest formidable vital energy came

out; instantly, his Life Wheel was on the verge of fragmenting, and the Fate Palace became unstable. Even his physical body suffered from the impact. Countless amounts of vital energy pushed forward as if it wanted to break the body of Li Qiye!

“Bang... Bang... Bang...”

At this moment, the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law, with the most powerful gesture, pulled the two seas of blood, filled with vital energy, with its utmost potential to bring the vital energy from the seas of blood into the Life Wheel.

If it was any other longevity merit law, it essentially wouldn't be able to pull this type of vital energy. A small horse can't pull a large cart as, naturally, the pulling would be unsuccessful. However, the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law was heavenly defying. The stronger the blood energy, the more energy was used to pull even harder. Instantly, the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law had brought a large amount of vital energy into the Life Wheel.

However, the Yin Yang Sea of Blood origin could flood the whole sky. Even an Immortal Emperor would be interested. The Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law, at this current cultivation, couldn't use all of the vital energy; thus, it couldn't move all of it into the Life Wheel!

Suddenly, monstrous waves of vital energy drowned out Li Qiye's body and Fate Palace. This extreme vital energy was on the verge of destroying his body and Fate Palace in the blink of an eye.

In this very dangerous moment, Li Qiye's Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique finally bursted. The sound of "Bang, Bang, Bang" rang aloud as if the the heavenly chains of hell were dragged. Each heavenly chain was akin to one million soldiers in power, and each of them suppressed this vital energy that had covered the sky. Using an extremely oppressive presence to forcefully bring the energy into the physical body of Li Qiye, he pressured it into the Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique!

Meanwhile, inside the Fate Palace of Li Qiye, the Kun Peng's Six Variants turned into a gigantic Kun Peng. It opened its mouth and sucked a large portion of vital energy. This swallowing process was as if the Kun Peng could suck in an endless sea. The Dao foundation turned into a Kun Peng, countless vital energies were absorbed, and sent to the True Fate! Instantly, the True Fate inside the Fate Palace became blindingly bright, extremely spectacular!

Under the suppression of the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law, Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique, and Kun Peng's Six Variants, in the end, the two seas of blood inside the Life Wheel of Li Qiye finally calmed down. The two seas of blood combined together into one, one yin one yang, and, like a Yin Yang fish, it swam without breaks inside the sea of blood.

At this time, the Yin Yang Sea of Blood was feeding the Life Wheel of Li Qiye, strengthening him with vital energy. The Life Wheel, in turn, with vital blood, washed the muscles and bones of Li Qiye's entire body. Each strand of vital blood was spread throughout the bone marrow of Li Qiye; it gave him the feeling of a new body – he was reborn!

Unknowingly, Li Qiye had achieved the stage of Body Tempering. Borrowing the Yin Yang Sea of Blood to refine his vital blood, he then used this to wash his Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique; this caused his Physique to have a minor improvement!

The Yin Yang sea was like the Yin Yang fish, they were moving constantly inside his Life Wheel. At this time, the sea of blood was seemingly calm; however, Li Qiye knew that with his current cultivation, he couldn't even utilize one part out of the ten thousands of the Yin Yang Sea of Blood! If he could truly activate the heavenly power of the Yin Yang Sea of Blood, this would frighten the heaven and shake the earth, the blood would penetrate the nine firmaments, and the Gods and Demons would tremble!

When Li Qiye withdrew his cultivation, without realizing it, Li Shuangyan was outside of his door. At this moment, Li Shuangyan's beautiful pair of eyes stared at Li Qiye intensely.

“What devil merit law are you cultivating?”

At this point, Li Shuangyan's countenance was incomparably emotional. She originally was inside her own pavilion sitting down, but suddenly, she felt an ancient and vast vital energy beginning to flow; however, all of a sudden, it disappeared.

This change was only for a moment, but it didn't escape the heavenly sense of Li Shuangyan; she knew this fluctuation was from the body of Li Qiye.

Because the vital energy and blood energy was too powerful, it raised Li Shuangyan's suspicion. She thought that he was practicing a devil merit law!

“Do I need to cultivate a devil merit law?”

Facing Li Shuangyan's question, Li Qiye was only smiling, and he then said calmly.

Li Shuangyan, with a surprise look, glanced at Li Qiye for a split moment. In the end, she didn't inquire any further, and she then turned around and left.

[1] Longevity Treasure and Fate Device are the sub-categories for Life Treasures/True Treasures

Bao: Since a friend brought this up, when Li Shuangyan was asking if Li Qiye was using a devil merit law, she was implying that he was using an evil technique in order to have such power. Devil merit law is akin to selling your soul to the devil for great power, almost like a forbidden technique of sorts.

Chapter 55 : Heavenly Cauldron (1)

Li Qiye's Dao instruction and his own cultivation were going well in an orderly manner. Another month had quickly passed. This whole time Nan Huai Ren had never appeared, and Protector Mo had not showed up either.

During that time, Nan Huai Ren was an ambassador of another sect, so even with his lack of presence, Li Qiye was not surprised. However, as for Protector Mo, it was a bit outside of Li Qiye's expectations.

“Oh, oh, oh, big brother! You stand tall and see far with penetrating insights, and you understand the grand Dao so well! You could teach any mysterious sacred technique!”

Seeing Li Qiye, Nan Huai Ren rubbed his palms together, and he smiled cheerfully.

Li Qiye glared at him, and he said:

“Since you already stay by my side to handle matters, stop tapping the horse's butt. If you have gas, just hurry up and fart.”[1]

Nan Huai Ren's face became red, but his expression was still natural. He was indeed a person that believes long sleeves would help one dance beautifully.[2] He smiled, and he said:

“This younger brother requests for older brother to give my cultivation some pointers.”

Li Qiye looked at Nan Huai Ren, then Protector Mo to the side, then calmly said:

“This was Protector Mo’s idea.”

Being figured out by Li Qiye, Protector Mo’s face became red. He couldn’t help but to forcefully smile, he said:

“I’m just interested in hearing your wise opinion.”

In reality, during the days of Li Qiye’s Dao instruction, Nan Huai Ren was outside of the sect. Protector Mo, on the other hand, was still here and inadvertently heard Li Qiye’s Dao instruction. He was startled because an elementary merit law like the Jade Spiral Merit Law, even his master wouldn’t be able to preach with such resonance with the grand Dao. His accidental hearing of Li Qiye’s preaching granted him great benefits.

So, this intrigued Protector Mo; right now, from his perspective, Li Qiye had a peerless perception regarding Dao instruction. He was afraid that there was no one that could compare to him in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. He wanted to be examined like Li Qiye as well, just like he did with the disciples at the Cleansing Jade Peak. However, in the end, he was a protector. Because he personally was a person of few words, he did not know how to deal with people; thus, he didn’t know how to ask Li Qiye.

This was why, after Nan Huai Ren's return, he immediately asked Nan Huai Ren to come here for advice.

Nan Huai Ren quickly smoothed things over for his master, smiled "heh heh", and he said:

"Master said that big brother's cultivation is high, so your little brother will thick-facedly ask for your advice."

Li Qiye didn't look at Nan Huai Ren. He glared at Protector Mo, and he coldly said:

"We're on the same side; if there is a matter, just be frank about it."

Here, he didn't have any other words. The rest was up for them to contemplate.

Protector Mo could see his future from these words. The moment they had joined Li Qiye, with one sentence to Yu He, Li Qiye had propelled their status. Right now, Li Qiye was saying this; even if Protector Mo was foolish, he would still be able to understand the implications behind them.

"What you both are practicing is the minor Emperor merit law 'Purple Red Cloud' right?"

Li Qiye looked at the master and disciple, as he said this.

“This is correct.”

Protector Mo repeatedly nodded his head, and he said:

“I presently have climbed to the Heaven’s Primal rank, but reaching the heaven’s will Primal God seems to be a bit too strenuous.”[3]

As a protector of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, Protector Mo’s aptitude, within the protectors, wasn’t the highest; however, he unendingly cultivated without break, so his cultivation had ascended to the Heaven’s Primal rank.

“A minor merit law, in the end, is still minor; in order to cultivate the heaven’s will Primal God, it is completely true that this isn’t such an easy matter.”

Heaven Primal rank was a boundary for cultivators. Once they have reached this rank, to take an extra step, it was harder than grabbing the sky. At this rank, it was not just dependent on one’s aptitude and talents, but it also depended on one’s merit law, Heavenly Magnificent Treasures, and etcetera...

Li Qiye spoke:

“Purple Red Cloud is a minor merit law originating from the main Emperor merit law ‘Purple Yang Ten Sun’ of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Reaching the Heaven’s Primal rank, if one

also cultivates the Purple Yang Ten Sun, it would be akin to a dragon coming together with a tiger, water and fire combining strengths, and their cultivation will increase!”

“If the sect still has the Purple Yang Ten Sun Merit Law, would I be like this?”

Protector Mo dejectedly laughed, and he then gently sighed.

“Big brother, there is something you aren’t aware of; I heard from my great master that our Purple Yang Ten Sun Merit Law, in the sect, is flawed with incompleteness and it is not completed to formidability. No one simply dared to just cultivate it. My great master switched to a different Virtuous Paragon merit law once he reached the Heaven’s Primal rank that year, just to reach a higher level.”

Nan Huai Ren busily said.

Having heard this, Li Qiye was in contemplation. The Purple Yang Ten Sun Merit Law was created by Immortal Min Ren, and it was extremely powerful. Right now, this Emperor merit law was even lost by the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

In reality, Li Qiye could, once again, find the memory of the Purple Yang Ten Sun Merit Law – this was not a difficult matter. He didn’t even need to see the Purple Yang Ten Sun incompleteness manual as just the minor Emperor merit law Purple Red Cloud was enough in order to regain his memory.

However, in the current moment, Li Qiye had a different plan. He didn't have the capability right now to give the master and disciple the entire Purple Yang Ten Sun Merit Law.

“The Purple Yang Ten Sun Law.”

Li Qiye smiled with a determined expression, and he said:

“I'm willing to bet, within just one year, that you both will be able to practice a completed Purple Yang Ten Sun Merit Law. As for you guys...”

Pausing here, Li Qiye looked at the disciple and master, and he smilingly said:

“As for the Purple Red Cloud Merit Law, there is no complaints here. Before, I had already observed your vital situations. Protector Mo's Dao foundation is solid, and little brother Ren is a little shallow. Continue to practice this law; once the foundation becomes fortified, then you will practice the Purple Yang Ten Sun Merit Law. This would be like doing less, yet you reaping greater benefits.”

Li Qiye's words made the master and disciple indefinitely shocked. Those words were with extreme confidence; they couldn't understand the reason for his confidence in stating that, within one year, they could cultivate the completed Purple Yang Ten Sun Merit Law. One had to know that the current Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect essentially did not have a complete Purple Yang Ten Sun Merit Law!

If this was a different person, they definitely would say that these words were crazy, and only meant to console them. However, having seen Li Qiye's frightening demonic demonstration, Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren didn't doubt Li Qiye. The only thing that was surprising to them was how Li Qiye will obtain the complete Purple Yang Ten Sun Merit Law.

Li Qiye, to the anxious master and disciple, said:

“Even though Protector Mo has reached a bottleneck, there is a method to break this bottleneck. When you are practicing the Purple Red Cloud Merit Law, in the morning, absorb the sun, in the late afternoon, extract the essence in the clouds. Extreme Yang Vital Flame from the sun and the afternoon vital essence combined together with the world natural energy, and then turn them into Longevity Blood. This is a different shortcut for the Purple Red Cloud Merit Law; both of you could do this practice.”

The merit laws of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect were either left behind by him or created by Immortal Emperor Min Ren. There was no one who was more familiar with them than him. Even if he couldn't find his memories of the Purple Red Cloud Merit Law, he would still know the essentials of this merit law.

“We will try a little bit.”

The master and disciple pair agreed to Li Qiye's suggestion.

Sure enough, not even in a few days, even though Protector Mo

didn't come, Nan Huai Ren excitedly jumped up and down; he happily told Li Qiye:

“Big brother, this matter was too mysterious! I followed your instruction on how to practice this merit law. It was truly doing less while reaping more benefits. One day of practice was more than my normal five or six days of cultivation. Big brother, how did you come up with this method? You don't practice the Purple Red Cloud Merit Law.”

Such a result left Nan Huai Ren with disbelief. In reality, his master also felt that it was impossible. This result left them in amazement. Li Qiye was only pointed out one or two sentences, but those words gave them a road that they had never heard of before.

“I was only picking my finger to calculate.”[4]

Li Qiye said with ease.

Nan Huai Ren, of course, didn't believe the picking of fingers calculation. This matter was essentially impossible. Even his grand master, Elder Sun, didn't know this method; why was it that Li Qiye knew such specific details? However, if Li Qiye didn't want to reveal any more, then Nan Huai Ren wouldn't dare to inquire further. Being with Li Qiye for this long, he slowly began to understand Li Qiye's temperament.

Li Qiye pointed out some advice for the master and disciple; he didn't think that not even a month had passed and Protector Mo

had already recommended someone else to come to Li Qiye for Dao instruction. This person was the master of Protector Mo, and he was also known as Elder Sun, one of the Six Elders. His cultivation was enough to be bestowed the title of Named Hero!

If one was to say that an elder of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, a big character with the qualification to be a Named Hero, was asking a third generation disciple for pointers, this matter was essentially inconceivable.

In fact, recently, Elder Sun's cultivation had a problem. Protector Mo, as his disciple, naturally had to help his master, so the first thing that came up in his mind was Li Qiye.

Of course, Elder Sun thought that his disciple's idea was too outrageous. If it was before, Elder Sun would have scolded Protector Mo right away; however, today, Protector Mo's status was different. Elder Sun, as the master, had been more protective and caring for his disciple.

Protector Mo brought up the pointers from Li Qiye regarding the Purple Red Cloud Merit Law to Elder Sun. Elder Sun tried it once and he saw its effectiveness, surprising him. In the end, under the nagging of Protector Mo, Elder Sun eventually put away his pride, and went to the Lonely Peak to let Li Qiye look at him a little bit.[5]

Even with the arrival of an elder, Li Qiye was still nonchalant. Elder Sun wasn't happy about it, but he could still endure. Currently, even the descendant of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, princess of the Old Ox country, was very attentive of Li Qiye; he, as an elder, couldn't afford to put on too much air.

Li Qiye examined the Life Wheel, Fate Palace, and Physique of Elder Sun, and he then said:

“Elder’s Dao foundation can be considered solid; however, that year, during the Purified Rebirth rank, you were too eager for success, and you left behind defects on your Dao foundation. When you were at the Heaven’s Primal rank, you swapped from the Purple Red Cloud Merit Law to a different Virtuous Paragon merit law; this isn’t a big problem. Even though the two merit laws combining is not extremely perfect, but, at the point of Life Reduction and Fate Calamity, it will not be fatal.”

Li Qiye’s words, once they got out, shook Elder Sun. At first, he didn’t think too highly of Li Qiye, but, right now, Li Qiye diagnosed him like a doctor treating a sick horse.

Chapter 56 : Heavenly Cauldron (2)

Currently, Li Qiye, with one sentence, had revealed his situation – how could he not be frightened? When he was at the Purified Rebirth rank, with a heart that rushed for success, defects were left behind. This was something he had never told a stranger, he didn't think that Li Qiye could find out by just examining his Dao foundation. This was such a precise pair of eyes.

This type of vision, this type of knowledge; it was not something a thirteen or fourteen year old boy could have. Even as an elder, Elder Sun's eyes were not as clear and perceptive. At the same cultivation level as a Named Hero, he wouldn't be able to judge the Life Wheel and Fate Palace of his opponent and know their hidden depths!

This type of vision and knowledge required an accumulation through time, and a high cultivation to gather! However, the boy in front of him was not this type of person.

While Elder Sun was stunned, Li Qiye looked at him and said:

“Your cultivation is the Scarlet Refined Physique, also known as the Scarlet Refined Serpent Physique. You want to turn your Scarlet Refined Physique into the Scarlet Dragon Physique.”

Having heard Li Qiye's words, Elder Sun's face became red and embarrassingly coughed, then he said:

“I do want to attempt it once or twice.”

Elder Sun was a natural Houtian Physique, a natural Scarlet Refined Serpent Physique; however, he wants to change his physique into its highest form... the Scarlet Dragon Physique!

“The issue is in your Heavenly Cauldron.”

Li Qiye said, it was as if he had already known.

“My Heavenly Cauldron?”

After he heard Li Qiye’s words in this situation, Elder Sun immediately shook his head, and he denied:

“That is impossible, my Heavenly Cauldron has followed me for hundreds of years. I had this Heavenly Cauldron since I was at the Yun Physique rank, and still am using it now. It has accompanied countless pill creations, and there had never been any problems.”

“Your physique, the fire affinity flourishes, and sometimes when you absorb Yin energy, your blood does not travel unhindered through your vessel – correct?”

Li Qiye nonchalantly said:

“If you don’t believe me, take out your Heavenly Cauldron so I could judge.”

Li Qiye's words shocked Elder Sun because he said he didn't have any problems; however, Li Qiye spewed out words contrary to his belief. How could he not be scared?

While anxious and doubtful, Elder Sun finally took out his Heavenly Cauldron. His Heavenly Cauldron was as small as a fist and had three serpents intersect at the mouth of the cauldron.

“Three Serpents Fire Cauldron, I have seen quite a few of these Heavenly Cauldrons.”

After he made contact with Elder Sun's Heavenly Cauldron, Li Qiye smilingly said.

A Heavenly Cauldron was essential to all alchemy masters. Even if one wasn't an alchemy master, the majority of cultivators would still try to find a personal Heavenly Cauldron.

The Heavenly Cauldron, to put it simply, was a cauldron to refine pills. However, when mortals refined pills, they would use metal and stone to forge the cauldron. A cultivator's pills had their own spiritual nature, and could not be made by metal and stone cauldrons.

Cultivators must use Heavenly Cauldrons to refine pills. In reality, these Heavenly Cauldrons were nature's cauldrons; these cauldrons had their own spirits, and even their own life. This was why, only the cauldrons of cultivators could be called Heavenly Cauldrons.

Regarding the true origin of Heavenly Cauldrons, there were many different beliefs. One belief dictated that during the long lost legendary past, Heavenly Cauldrons were used by Immortals for their alchemy.

Of course, this belief couldn't be trusted. Many more people believed in a different legend where the Heavenly Cauldron was a metal plant born from the heaven and earth. Because it was bathed in natural world energy, it gained its own spirit, and after it suffered from Heavenly Tribulations, it finally gained the fire origin. Thus, it turned into a treasure cauldron, becoming the Heavenly Cauldron that was known by cultivators.

Therefore, each Heavenly Cauldron was a treasure cauldron with the essence of the heaven and earth, as well as the Origin Flame. After refinement by cultivators or alchemy masters which used spirit medicines and treasure plants, the Heavenly Cauldron gained its medicinal property, and the Origin Flame was used to create Physique pastes, Life medicines, and Fate Pills!

Li Qiye carefully observed the Three Serpents Fire Cauldron of Elder Sun once! In the end, both of his hands were placed on the top of the cauldron, and he shouted:

“Open!”

The word just came out and the Three Serpents Fire Cauldron appeared.

Once it fell to the floor, it wasn't just as big as a fist, but a huge cauldron appeared in the room. This was a cauldron as big as a desk; the top of the cauldron contained the natural world energy in the shape of revolving spirit serpents. Even though they weren't real serpents, they still felt very much alive.

Three serpents opened their big mouths and placed them on top of the cauldron. At this time, the cauldron's mouth gushed out a burst of heat, and the three serpents' mouths also released a medicinal aroma.

The Three Serpents Fire Cauldron, this was the Heavenly Cauldron of Elder Sun. One did not know how many countless Physique pastes, Life medicines, and Fate Pills were refined in this cauldron.

The mouth of the cauldron continuously released waves of heat; this was the Origin Flame emitted from the body of the Heavenly Cauldron. This was an essential process of pill refining. The medicinal aroma was the Medicinal Treasure hidden within the cauldron's body, the quality of the pill refinement was heavily dependent on this Medicinal Treasure.

Li Qiye looked around the cauldron, then said afterwards:

“This cauldron of Elder, its natural disposition is a Yan flame; this flame is a commonly seen Origin Flame.”

Here, Li Qiye's eyes moved, and continued to observe.

“This Heavenly Cauldron usually absorbed the Earth Flame, to strengthen its original flame. You also usually throw in miscellaneous spirit medicines to grow the Medicinal Treasure. From my observation, the most common medicine that you have fed to it is the Yin Yan Hawk Plant, am I correct so far?”[1]

“How did you know?”

After Li Qiye had finished speaking, Elder Sun’s body couldn’t help but tremble!

“It was only the picking of my fingers to calculate it.”

Li Qiye coldly said, and continued to look inside the cauldron, then he spoke:

“However, it is clear, Elder Sun recently didn’t throw in the Yin Yan Hawk Plant. If my conjecture is not wrong, Elder Sun recently had fed the cauldron with exactly the Fire Dragon Plant, am I correct, Elder Sun?”

“You... you, how could you know this?”

Elder Sun stunned, words couldn’t come out clearly. Because he recently wanted to improve his Physique with a big leap forward in order to cultivate the Scarlet Dragon Physique as the foundation, he had paid a great price to buy the Fire Dragon Plant, and fed it to the cauldron in order to greatly strengthen the Medicinal Treasure!

Many cultivators who weren't considered to be alchemy masters would personally carry a Heavenly Cauldron, because inside the Heavenly Cauldron was a natural Origin Flame. After little fire sparks were fed to it, the origin fire would continue to grow. At the same time, the Heavenly Cauldron would require a great amount of spirit plants in order to refine the hidden Medicinal Treasure inside.

A suitable Heavenly Cauldron, was very useful to a cultivator. For example, some natural Heavenly Cauldrons had the Extreme Tai Yang Origin Flame. Then, if the cultivator had a natural born Young Yang Physique – one of the twenty-four Emperor Physiques, they could borrow the Extreme Tai Yang Origin Flame of the Heavenly Cauldron to refine their Physique.

At the same time, the Medicinal Treasure inside the body of the Heavenly Cauldron could also grow the Physique, replenish the blood energy, and even restore wounds and cure illnesses.

Because there were so many uses for a Heavenly Cauldron, even if one was not an alchemy master, they would still bring a Heavenly Cauldron along.

As for Elder Sun, one did not need to say more. He was not only an alchemy master, but also one of the two grand alchemy masters of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, so he was even more likely to have a Heavenly Cauldron with him.

For an alchemy master, the spirit medicines they usually fed

their Heavenly Cauldron normally would not be easily revealed to others.

However, currently, Li Qiye only needed one glance to know what his Heavenly Cauldron had eaten; how could Elder Sun not be alarmed? This was such knowledge of medicinal properties, this was such knowledge of Heavenly Cauldron refinement!

Li Qiye didn't answer Elder Sun, he only said:

“The issue lies in this matter. Correct – if you want to cultivate the Scarlet Dragon Physique, a Fire Dragon Plant truly has an appropriate advantage. However, Elder Sun, your Heavenly Cauldron had always eaten Yin Yan Hawk Plants for hundreds of years. The Medicinal Treasure of your Heavenly Cauldron had accumulated a large amount of Yin Yan medicinal properties, and the essence inside the Medicinal Treasure is the Yan Flame energy, but the Fire Dragon Plant belongs to the powerful Yang energy...”

“... Like this, you suddenly fed it with the Fire Dragon Plant. The powerful Yang energy of the Fire Dragon Plant directly impacted your Heavenly Cauldron's Medicinal Treasure. If the situation was serious, then it would damage your Heavenly Cauldron, and later it would greatly impact the quality of pill refinement! Even more importantly, your Physique had always been refined by using this treasure cauldron, and it was used to the Yan Flame energy. But now, the cauldron suddenly exuded powerful Yang energy to refine your Physique, this immediately suppressed your Yan Fire Physique, stopping your blood flow!

Li Qiye spoke without breaks, as if he had it memorized like the

palm of his hand – as if he was a grand master on this subject. This not only made Protector Mo become wide-mouthed with a foolish face, but even Elder Sun was the same.

Eventually, Li Qiye casually determined:

“Elder Sun, you are considered one of the two grand alchemy masters of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. You must be aware, an alchemy master shouldn’t only focus on the power of your medicines, but, to one’s Heavenly Cauldron, should be very protective. Natural, a Heavenly Cauldron with its Origin Flame and which flame sparks you need to feed it, this is a deep area of Dao study. At the same time, once the Medicinal Treasure is formed, whatever spirit plants you feed it afterward, this and the medicinal properties of the Medicinal Treasure is directly related...”

“... The quality of the Fate Pills and Physique pastes aren’t determined by only the skills of the alchemy master, but also whether the Heavenly Cauldron is good or bad. The other important thing is the affinity of the Origin Flame, the essence of the Medicinal Treasure, as well as the future medicinal materials; whether they conflict with each other or not is essential.”

“Medicinal materials and a Heavenly Cauldron’s planning, this is a profound area of study; this requires time to accumulate. As long as you consider the Heavenly Cauldron as a second life, then you would be a qualified alchemy master.”

Li Qiye, all at once, preached about the Heavenly Cauldron, up to the point where Elder Sun’s mouth was twisted and eyes turned

crazy. At this moment, this disciple in front didn't look like a thirteen to fourteen year old disciple that had just joined the sect, but instead, a grand alchemy master. His preaching regarding the Heavenly Cauldron, it was definitely not crazy and nonsensical words.

“Well, then what should I do to correct it?”

It was unknown when Elder Sun was convinced by Li Qiye. Inadvertently, he was an elder, but he still couldn't help but to respectfully ask for Li Qiye's advice.

Li Qiye smiled, and he said:

“Elder Sun's problem is not serious, it is easy to fix. Elder Sun has to stop feeding it the Fire Dragon Plant. If Elder Sun truly wants to obtain the Scarlet Dragon Physique, I recommend Elder Sun to use the Amiable River Fire Plant. The medicinal property of the Amiable River Fire Plant is very similar to the Yin Yan Hawk Plant. Plus, it is also one rank higher; but the most important thing is that the Amiable River Fire Plant is very familiar with the Scarlet Dragon Physique!”

Chapter 57 : Alchemy Master, This Was Only A Hobby (1)

In the end, Elder Sun had followed Li Qiye's suggestion, and he stopped feeding his Heavenly Cauldron with the Fire Dragon Plant; he started paying a high price for Amicable River Fire Plant, instead.

Sure enough, after one month, Elder Sun excitedly came to the Lonely Peak. At this moment, he had forgotten his status as an elder, and he was like a little boy; extremely happy, he said:

“Done, it's truly done. Currently, the blood energy is flowing, and the medicinal property of the Heavenly Cauldron is stronger as well.”

Regarding this result, Li Qiye only had a smile. Medicinal properties, Heavenly Cauldrons, the Dao of alchemy... This area, if he claimed to be number two, then since the beginning of time, no one would dare claim to be number one!

Li Qiye's nonchalant expression caused Elder Sun to change his demeanor. If this was another disciple that were to be praised by an elder like this, they would surely be extremely pleased; however, to Li Qiye, this form of appreciation was only the daily norms.

“When you first joined the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, you had already learned the Dao of alchemy?”

Elder Sun couldn't help but change his expression, and his heart became appreciative of his talents. At this point, he was reminded of the first elder. In recent times, the disheartened first elder had suddenly regained his fiery ambition and supported Li Qiye. It seemed as if Li Qiye was truly worth grooming. Before, they underestimated Li Qiye, or, towards this disciple with a Mortal Physique, Mortal Life Wheel, and Mortal Face Palace; they thought he was essentially worthless!

Li Qiye only smiled once, and he said:

“I only accidentally read some manuals; it was not enough for the Dao.”

“This still isn't enough for the Dao?”

Elder Sun immediately became silent. Li Qiye, regarding medicinal properties, had a complete understanding. Regarding his Heavenly Cauldron, his explanation could be considered to be uniquely exhaustive! Even Elder Sun would be ashamed of being compared to Li Qiye!

Elder Sun couldn't help but say:

“If you meet any difficulties with cultivation, you could think about practicing the Dao of alchemy a little bit. With your insight of medicinal properties, I truly think highly of you. Who knows, you could even be the second Alchemy God!”

Elder Sun was extremely optimistic of Li Qiye's outcome. From his perspective, Li Qiye might be a cultivation piece of trash; however, if he was willing to step into the Dao of alchemy, he could be a genius medicinist!

“Alchemy God?”

Another familiar name was mentioned by others, and Li Qiye couldn't help but smirk.

Elder Sun was afraid that Li Qiye didn't know who the “Alchemy God” was, so he hastily added:

“The Alchemy God could be called the Primogenitor of all alchemists; one could say, the majority of dan refinement processes were created by him. Some even said, the name ‘Heavenly Cauldron’ was coined by him. During the Desolate Era, it all began with him creating a completed dan refining process; his contribution to the Dao of alchemy is incomparable by anyone else. It would not be an exaggeration to say that, since the ancient past to now, he has one of the highest achievements regarding the Dao of alchemy!”

As Elder Sun talked about the Alchemy God, Li Qiye couldn't help but reveal a small smile. Alchemy God eh? He couldn't be more familiar as this was a very good part of his memory.

That old little boy was indeed a genius at the Dao of alchemy; this point, no matter how much time had passed, even when Li Qiye

was the Dark Crow, he would still have to admit.

Li Qiye with a smiling face; Elder Sun bringing up the Alchemy God caused him to reminisce some of the past during the Desolate Era. It was a time of many moons that were worthy of remembrance. During this era, he brought this old little boy to invade the Nine Worlds, going across the Forbidden Ground and Immortal Land. During those many moons, they used to eat so many pills for the sake of pill creations; they had created countless methods of dan refinement, and they had brought to light countless pill formulas. They had grown so many spirit plants that other people wouldn't even dare to think about...

There were many moons brimming with excitement and danger. During those years, there were many creations, there many dangerous pill testing, there were even more explorations! During those many moons, when he was the Dark Crow, he had planned countless of times against the Heaven and Earth, countless of times ambushed powerful giants, and countless of times bathed the nine heavens and ten earths in blood! However, there were not many moons that could make him as sentimental like those years spent with the Alchemy Master.[1]

During those many years, there was a lot more love for learning; the time of killing and the scent of blood was a lot less.

Since the ancient ages till now, whether it was alchemists or cultivators, they both thought that the Alchemy God was the pinnacle of the Dao of alchemy. This wasn't only because he was peerless regarding pill creation, but more importantly, he created a complete system of the Alchemy Dao! For the Alchemy Dao, he

created an immortal foundation!

In reality, no one knew; the foundation of the Alchemy Dao wasn't just formulated by the Alchemy God alone. In this matter, there was also a Dark Crow that no one knew about, innovating new paths in the Alchemy Dao, and creating rules for the Alchemy Dao; the Dark Crow no one knew about had a huge contribution!

One could say that, without this Dark Crow, there would be no Alchemy God. Of course, this secret, no descendants knew about.

Thinking about those years, Li Qiye's heart couldn't help but let out a long sigh. If he had any regrets, his biggest regret would be that he had lost his memories regarding the world's most precious alchemy manual. Once these memories were erased, there was no way to get it back. The reason was simple, he couldn't find this alchemy manual later on. Even if it was only an incomplete part, he still couldn't find it.

Regarding this matter, Li Qiye discretely shook his head. The old little boy, that year, was a madman. After becoming the Alchemy God, Li Qiye had reminded him to find a disciple in order to pass down his heritage. However, this old little boy went crazy; even though he left behind many valuable dan manuals for his descendants, but the most valuable one that was coveted by people was missing!

Li Qiye knew, this crazy old man did it intentionally. He, in the end, did not want to pass down this alchemy manual!

As Li Qiye was reminiscing, his stunned expression made Elder Sun mistake that Li Qiye was thinking about being an Alchemy God; that he had been successfully convinced by Elder Sun.

“How about switching to the Alchemy Dao? If you really want to switch to the Alchemy Dao, I will teach you my entire life’s knowledge! In the future, you will become the strongest alchemy master in our sect. Later on, you could climb to the elder’s seat, or even the sect master’s seat; this matter would be as easy as turning your palm!”

Elder Sun couldn’t help but to urge Li Qiye even more because he saw the potential of Li Qiye!

If this was a different disciple, having just heard the elder wanting to take them in as a disciple, they would naturally be extremely excited; they would wish that they could immediately kowtow on the spot to formally become a disciple to the elder, but Li Qiye was acting unimpressed.

Li Qiye smiled, and he said:

“Thank you, elder, for your support, but the Dao of alchemy is only a hobby of mine.”

Li Qiye’s words silenced Elder Sun. Black lines appeared on his forehead. If this was someone else, they would definitely think Li Qiye was being arrogant; however, at this moment, Elder Sun didn’t have this thought. In his heart, Elder Sun was crazy because Li Qiye was wasting his aptitude![2]

Elder Sun was truly enraged; he actually wanted to go on a rampage, but he still calmed himself down. In the end, he said in a very lovingly manner:

“You can think about this carefully again; if one day you change your mind, you can find me at any time.”

Regarding the good intentions of Elder Sun, Li Qiye could only smile back. Seeing Li Qiye’s attitude, Elder Sun could only sigh as he left.

In reality, Elder Sun’s hope didn’t die. Not a few days had passed, Protector Mo also appeared at the Lonely Peak. After his arrival and seeing Li Qiye, he opened his mouth and only stutterings came out. He wanted to speak but couldn’t. After half a day, he couldn’t say anything.

“Elder Sun wants you to convince me to practice the Dao of alchemy, right?”

Facing Protector’s Mo hesitated speech, Li Qiye was aware; he smiled as he said.

Protector Mo was a little embarrassed; he awkwardly smiled and had to say:

“My master indeed has this thought. Although, whether to practice or to not practice, in the end, it is still up to you. No one

dares to force the matter.”

In fact, Protector Mo’s heart was clear that Li Qiye was a headstrong person, with his own path. He just didn’t have a choice to reject his master’s request.

“The Dao of alchemy is only a hobby to me; if I have time, I will think about it a little bit.”

Li Qiye smiled, and he said.

Regarding this result, Protector Mo was mentally prepared; thus, he didn’t try to convince Li Qiye, and he went to report to his master.

With the blink of an eye, another three months had passed. The three hundred disciples in the Cleansing Jade Peak didn’t require a lot of Li Qiye’s attention. Li Qiye had also reached the grand completion of the Yun Physique rank, he was now at the Body Strengthening stage. He was ready to breakthrough to the third level of Yun Physique, Body Baptism!

This baptism, to cultivators, was extremely important. This was especially true for the geniuses with Xiantian Physiques and Emperor Physiques; this level was even more crucial.

This level was an opportunity for all cultivators to mold their bodies for the first time! Body Baptism was not only based on cultivation; in order to mold one’s physique, the more crucial

matter was the Physique paste!

Of course, for cultivators in terms of principle, the higher the Physique paste ranking was, the better it was for the body molding. However, within the process of cultivation, there were various restrictions.

As an example, one Xiantian Physique, for its first body molding, a Xiantian Physique paste would be the best. First, it would be easy to absorb the essence of the paste; second, because it was the first body molding, having the same rank of Physique paste as your own Physique was the most suitable.

In reality, within the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, at this rank, the majority of disciples during their first body molding did not have a choice; they could only choose a Houtian Physique paste.

The reason was simple, because no one had a different option. The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was declining; regarding the matter of materials, it was highly limited. The disciples that could use a Xiantian Physique paste were the direct disciples of the elders!

Li Qiye pondered for a moment. The time he wanted the Physique paste was soon approaching, so he went to find the first elder.

In fact, he could have used the Physique paste earlier; however, because he wanted to stabilize the Yin Yang blood energy inside his

Life Wheel, he pushed the matter of the Physique paste back.

Hearing Li Qiye's intention, the first elder couldn't help but be surprised. He looked at Li Qiye, and he asked:

“You have reached the Body Baptism level of the Yun Physique rank?”

He calculated the time with his fingers. Li Qiye joining the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and his start of cultivation have not reached a year, but he had already reached the Yun Physique rank, at the level of Body Baptism.

With this kind of achievement, in any sect, he would be considered a genius. One has to know, Li Qiye had a Mortal Physique, Mortal Life Wheel, and Mortal Fate Palace. This was an impossible matter.

This, when First Elder responded, he looked at Li Qiye again; he asked:

“You practiced the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law?”

Chapter 58 : Alchemy Master, This Was Only A Hobby (2)

With Li Qiye's constitution, to reach this stage within a year, the only explanation was that Li Qiye practiced the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law.

“That's right.”

This was not a secret within the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, Li Qiye also didn't have anything to hide, and only calmly said.

Having heard this, the first elder went silent for a moment. If this was another disciple, he certain would ask him to not practice this merit law, but did Li Qiye still have another choice? Mortal Physique, Mortal Life Wheel, Mortal Fate Palace. With this constitution, no matter which merit law was chosen, the end result would not be any different.

Eventually, the first elder said:

“This King Physique paste, the sect has finished preparing. However, you need to be mentally prepared, the medicinal parts of this physique paste, outside of the leading beast marrow, the rest were spirit medicines of around one hundred thousand years old; the better ones are one hundred and ten thousand or one hundred and twenty thousand years old. However, the leading beast marrow was only lacking one bit, it is slightly off from one hundred thousand years. Therefore, when you use this physique

paste, you need to be mentally prepared.”

In reality, regarding this physique paste matter, the first elder had tried his best and exerted his whole hard-earned savings. Just so that Li Qiye could marry Li Shuangyan, it could be said that he was willing to give up everything!

“This matter, elder can rest assured.”

Li Qiye smiled once.

In reality, Li Qiye was already prepared. Today, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had declined. To be able to gather the medicinal materials for a King Physique paste, this was already very difficult.

First Elder paused for a moment, then he continued:

“There is another thing that is considerably hard to deal with, this is the alchemy matter. In our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, regarding alchemy skills, there are two people at the top: Elder Cao and Elder Sun, respectively.”

Here, the first elder stared at Li Qiye, and he said:

“Regarding the alchemy creation skill, Elder Cao is better than Elder Sun by one part. For Elder Sun to refine the physique paste, six times wouldn’t be a problem; seven refinements, I’m afraid that is out of his reach. Elder Cao refining seven times, this is no

problem.”[1]

“Elder Cao isn’t necessarily willing to refine the physique paste for me.”

Li Qiye smiled, his mind was confident.

First Elder wasn’t willing to speak further on this matter, so he only said:

“Regarding the matter of the physique paste, Elder Sun is very willing to refine it for you, the only thing is, he is not too certain of the medicinal strength.”

“This physique paste matter, First Elder doesn’t need to worry about it. How about this, First Elder can prepare the medicinal materials; this physique paste matter, I will take care of it?”

Li Qiye already knew that Cao Xiong wouldn’t be willing to refine the physique paste for him, this was a matter within his expectations. However, he wouldn’t need to go beg Cao Xiong either.

“This should be fine.”

After First Elder saw Li Qiye’s complete confidence, he could only affirm by nodding his head, and he said:

“I will let a disciple guard the medicinal materials for you. When you want to refine them, just say one word and I’ll send a disciple to bring the materials to you.”

Li Qiye thanked the elder, then left for Lonely Peak.

“Older brother, this is not good, not good.”

Li Qiye didn’t make it back to Lonely Peak yet when he saw that Nan Huai Ren’s expression wasn’t good. Nan Huai Ren quickly went down and urgently said.

Following Nan Huai Ren were the people from the Cleansing Jade Peak, such as Xu Pei; their expressions did not look good.

“Did the sky fall down?”

Li Qiye stared at Nan Huai Ren, and asked.

Nan Huai Ren hastily said:

“Older brother, the sky didn’t fall down, but, your courtyard is being destroyed by others.”

“Destroying my courtyard?”

Having heard this, Li Qiye’s eyes couldn’t help but squint, then

he beamingly smiled:

“Who has the sudden interest to come and destroy my courtyard like this?”

Seeing Li Qiye’s squinted eyes made Nan Huai Ren and even the Xu Pei crowd’s hearts to panic; this smiling demeanor of Li Qiye, in their eyes, when compared to the visage of a demon, made their hearts even colder.

“It was, was older brother Leng Shi Zhi.”

Xu Pei quietly whispered to Li Qiye.

“First brother, I hea-heard that older brother Leng was court-courting goddess Li.”

A disciple became bold, and he said.

Even though the disciples of the Cleansing Jade Peak were all from the Cleansing Jade Mountain, currently, all three hundred disciples were on the side of Li Qiye, and were in the same faction.

“I had also heard that older brother Leng had given goddess Li treasures...”

“First brother, older brother Leng is a genius of our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. He, he is a powerful love rival of yours.”

A disciple, not without worries, said.

At this moment, even though these disciples were all saying different things, but all of them had the same anger against a common enemy as Li Qiye. However, they were not without worries for Li Qiye, because in the end, Leng Shi Zhi was the genius of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect – a direct disciple of Elder Cao.

It could be said that regarding the appearance, Leng Shi Zhi had it; regarding talents, he had it as well; regarding a backing, he is not without; regarding his origin, he has the origin. Personally, they wanted Li Qiye to marry Li Shuangyan. After all, Li Shuangyan and Li Qiye had been together in the recent days, and they would be glad to see it happen.

However, with a powerful love rival like Leng Shi Zhi, the disciples, like Xu Pei, were not without worries for Li Qiye.

“A powerful love rival?”

Having heard this sentence, Li Qiye found it really ridiculous, and the corner of his lips couldn't help but become angled. His smiling expression rippled uncontrollably.

Nan Huai Ren reminded him:

“First brother, this thing, Leng Shi Zhi had been granted tacit

permission from Cao Xiong, maybe even strong support from him. It is easier to hide from a bright spear than it is to guard from a hidden arrow. First brother might as well be careful, just in case.”

Nan Huai Ren, too, knew about Li Qiye’s situation – a powerful love rival? Nan Huai Ren, of course, wouldn’t consider Leng Shi Zhi being qualified as a love rival of Li Qiye; Leng Shi Zhi was worth how much? Even at the Nine Saint Demon Gate, Li Qiye was still roaring, let alone Leng Shi Zhi?

Why did Li Shuangyan come to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect? Simply put, it was because of Li Qiye. No matter how excellent Leng Shi Zhi was, he wouldn’t be comparable to Li Qiye. These two essentially weren’t at the same level; what qualifications did Leng Shi Zhi have to become a rival in love of Li Qiye?

“Come, we will go to see how my strongest love rival is destroying my courtyard.”

Li Qiye leisurely said these words, as if the courtyard being destroyed wasn’t his.

When Li Qiye, along with Nan Huai Ren, climbed to the top of Lonely Peak, many rumbling sounds occurred. “Boom Boom.” At this moment, Leng Shi Zhi was commanding some disciples to destroy the courtyard of Li Qiye. It was seven or eight parts destroyed.

However, standing in front of her pavilion adjacent to the

courtyard, Li Shuangyan was only coldly observing, without saying a word.

“Li Qiye, you came back at the perfect time.”

Seeing Li Qiye along with the Nan Huai Ren’s group returning, Leng Shi Zhi arrogantly raised his chin and said:

“Starting from today, you will move to Small Spring Peak to live!”

Leng Shi Zhi used a commanding tone towards Li Qiye, as if Li Qiye would definitely have to listen to him.

“Why should I move to Small Spring Peak?”

Li Qiye looked at the destroyed courtyard, still smiling wholeheartedly, as if there was not even a hint of anger within him.

Leng Shi Zhi became a bit impatient, and he coldly said:

“If I tell you to go, then go; why is there so much chatter! Starting from today, I will live at Lonely Peak! The little courtyard here was in the way, so after it is destroyed, I will build a spirit pavilion here!”

Here, Leng Shi Zhi started to ignore Li Qiye, and put on the

expression that he considered the most handsome and charming, and smiled at Li Shuangyan in the far distance:

“Lonely Peak overlooks the entirety of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, the view is very good. Goddess Li choosing to stay at this place, it could be considered as having an incomparable insights. I, fortunately, have the honor to be next to Goddess Li, discussing the Dao, investigating the profound mysteries – this would be a beautiful story!”[2]

After Li Shuangyan’s arrival at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, this was not Leng Shi Zhi’s first time courting her. However, each time, he was met with a locked door; Li Shuangyan essentially was too lazy to care for him at all.

Pursuing without an entrance, Leng Shi Zhi decisively chose to move to Lonely Peak, wanting to be closer to Li Shuangyan, and use this opportunity to earn her favor. As the proverb dictates, the pavilion closest to the water enjoys the moonlight first![3]

Leng Shi Zhi publicly revealed this particular attitude, which caused the hearts of Nan Huai Ren’s crowd to be annoyed. Goddess Li and first brother were engaged – this was a matter the entire Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was aware of. Currently, Leng Shi Zhi, in front of Li Qiye, was courting Li Shuangyan; this was basically not placing Li Qiye in his eyes.

As for Li Shuangyan, she was only staring at Leng Shi Zhi. This was the type of person that, after death, wouldn’t know how they had died. With only abilities like his, yet he still dared to stroke the tiger’s whiskers and provoke Li Qiye? This was simply being tired

of living! Back when Li Qiye was at the Nine Saint Demon Gate, even her master, Demon Emperor Lun Ri, was three parts restrained; an insignificant person like Leng Shi Zhi would be worth what?

Leng Shi Zhi, in front of Li Qiye's presence, selling flirtatious behavior, rendered Li Qiye unable to withhold his laughter. The matter of Leng Shi Zhi courting Li Shuangyan, he of course knew about! With the women around him, Li Qiye had absolute confidence! This sort of insignificant trifling matter, he didn't want to bother to intervene with.[4]

Now, Leng Shi Zhi actually went to touch his head, Li Qiye couldn't help but smile and pitifully glance at Leng Shi Zhi, and afterwards said to Li Shuangyan:[5]

"You stood here and watched the small courtyard being demolished?"

"Isn't this an internal affair of your Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect?"

Li Shuangyan let off a slight smile; this smiling expression was capable of causing the downfall of a nation.

Li Shuangyan slight smile was enough to cause Leng Shi Zhi's spirit and soul to be flipped upside down. Once his mind came around, his heart was encompassed with jealousy. He intended to be closer to Li Shuangyan many times, but Li Shuangyan, until now, still didn't sell him any colors, much less a laugh; this matter

suddenly made him hate Li Qiye even more.[6]

“Why are you still foolishly dawdling here, quickly take leave! Lonely Peak is an area that you can be foolish around? In the future, Lonely Peak will be the place where I cultivate the heart and nurture the character; if you dare to rush in and cause a commotion here, we will use the sect’s rules to deal with you.”

At this point, Leng Shi Zhi’s expression became cold, and he loudly reprimanded.

With Leng Shi Zhi acting like this, Li Qiye still wasn’t angry, but the group of Nan Huai Ren was indignant, especially Nan Huai Ren. Lonely Peak was assigned to Li Qiye by the elders, but now, Leng Shi Zhi was seizing Li Qiye’s peak, and even destroyed his place. And even worse, he even used the sect’s rules to threaten him. This was too arrogant, this was not giving anyone face!

Chapter 59 : Conspiracy (1)

“Lonely Peak was assigned, by the elders, as the living quarters for first brother.”

Nan Huai Ren spoke up against the injustice towards Li Qiye.

Hearing Nan Huai Ren’s words, Leng Shi Zhi shot out a cold glare at him, and he coldly said:

“At this moment, I am reassigning the Lonely Peak – you have something to say?”

Here, Leng Shi Zhi paused for a moment, then he continued:

“Nan Huai Ren, in the sect, you are somewhat considered an intelligent man. Don’t spend your whole days sticking together with this bag of straws, this is akin to destroying your own future! Following a piece of trash like him, you, at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, will not achieve even a half step forward!”

These words of Leng Shi Zhi, they weren’t just to simply sneer at Nan Huai Ren, but also to threaten him!

Nan Huai Ren was one who understood that long sleeves helped one dance beautifully; he was smooth and slick at establishing social relations, so how could he not understand the overtone? Following who, Nan Huai Ren’s heart already had its own ideas.

Regarding Leng Shi Zhi's words, Nan Huai Ren said in a grave manner without hesitation:

“Senior doesn't need to worry about this. First brother is the outstanding talent of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. I will be like the heavenly thunder; where he commands, I will strike there!”

“Willing to fall from grace!”

Nan Huai Ren, in front of him, denied his request, so Leng Shi Zhi coldly scowled.

Li Qiye did not care for these political dealings, he only stared at Leng Shi Zhi, and he said:

“For the sect's comradery, I will give you one chance. Do a good job at fixing the little courtyard; otherwise, tomorrow, you wouldn't be able to stand up even if you wanted to!”

Li Qiye saying this caused Leng Shi Zhi's eyes to exert coldness, his killing intent became higher. He coldly smiled once, and then he said:

“You don't know the immensity of the heaven and earth, do you truly think you are the first brother of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect? Dare you to say this to my face! Hmph, just with you and these bunch of scrap metals in front, yet you still dare to say arrogant things! A group of clowns has the qualifications to be my

enemies?”

Leng Shi Zhi's words immediately made the hearts of Xu Pei's group angry. These words of Leng Shi Zhi had not only dishonored Li Qiye, but also them as well.

Facing a Leng Shi Zhi that did not know the correct boundaries, Li Qiye was too lazy to pay attention to him. He turned around and left.

“So? Weren't you spouting arrogant words earlier, saying that I wouldn't be able to stand up tomorrow? Currently, why are you trying to flee now? Being a coward even before the battle begins, this bag of straws like you still dared to jump around in front of me...”

Seeing Li Qiye's turning around, Leng Shi Zhi coldly laughed as he said this.

“Beat him down from the peak; beat him until his father and mother can't recognize him anymore. If he doesn't want to repair my courtyard, cut off his third leg as well for me!”

Li Qiye essentially didn't want to waste too many words with Leng Shi Zhi. He only went to the front of Li Shuangyan's pavilion, and commanded her.

“Ha ha, ha ha...”

Li Qiye's sudden command for Li Shuang Ya made Leng Shi Zhi act as if he had heard the funniest story in the world. He laughed until his body was arched, pointed at Li Qiye with tears in his eyes, and he said:

“Who do you think you are, do you think you are the Demon Emperor? Or a Mortal Emperor? Only a bag of straws like you, yet you still dare to be arrogant and bossy towards goddess Li? Goddess Li, this idiot, I will discipline him for yo-”

However, before Leng Shi Zhi could finish his sentence, Li Shuangyan had stood up, looked at him as if she was looking at an idiot, and she coldly said:

“I will give you one opportunity to make a move.”

Suddenly, Leng Shi Zhi's smile was frozen in the same place. His expression was even more exaggerated than eating shit. His whole body was frozen, and couldn't have any other expressions.

“Bang”, during the moment when Leng Shi Zhi was still in a daze, Li Shuangyan, with one kick, made him fly outside of Lonely Peak. Afterwards, an agonizing scream from below Lonely Peak echoed; without a doubt, Li Shuangyan used an appropriate amount of force.

At this point, the disciples that had destroyed the courtyard were standing still. Li Shuangyan taught Leng Shi Zhi a lesson; in the blink of an eye, she had already beaten him till he screamed! This scene shattered the other disciples' courage.

Even the group of Xu Pei – the disciples from the Cleansing Jade Peak – couldn't help but look at each other. Even though in the recent days, Li Shuangyan had always been by Li Qiye's side, but they rarely talked to each other. From the group's understandings, Li Shuangyan staying was because the two sects had a marital pact, so she had to stay with the first brother.

However, they didn't expect that the heaven's proud daughter, goddess Li, princess of the Old Ox country that was on top of ten thousands people, would listen to their first brother. If this matter was to be spread, others would find it hard to believe.[1]

What was the Nine Saint Demon Gate, what was the current Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect? Right now, Li Shuangyan's status was high beyond imagination. Even the elders of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect didn't have the qualification to compare to her; such a grand unreachable character, yet she still listened to their first brother – this matter was too impossible to think about.

After Li Shuangyan taught Leng Shi Zhi a lesson, like the most loyal hound of Li Qiye, Nan Huai Ren coldly smiled, stared at the disciples whom destroyed the courtyard, and he said:

“Still haven't roll out? Maybe waiting for us to take care of you all as well? Hmph, we're all disciples of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; don't cross the boundaries, don't think that just because you hug the legs of Elder Cao that you could ignore the laws...”

“... First brother’s heavenly aura is something that you guys could provoke? Hmph, such narrow-mindedness, even for the Demon Emperor, first brother would still be an esteemed guest! Don’t think that just because you all have found some backings that you could challenge big brother! Big brother is merciful and won’t bother with you all; otherwise, there would only be death, no matter which backings you have!”

Nan Huai Ren was wily and meticulous. He knew exactly which words to say, and which actions to take. This time, it looked as if he was using Li Qiye to act arrogant, but these words were not only for the courtyard-destroying disciples, but also for the group of Xu Pei to hear – these words were meant to wake them up!

These disciples regained their wits, and their bodies shivered. Without two words, they threw away the equipment in their hands and turned around to flee. Right now, their boss had already been beaten to the point of screaming like a butchered pig. Even if they were ten times more courageous, they still wouldn’t dare to challenge Li Qiye.

When the group of Xu Pei was still surprised, Li Shuangyan had flew down in front of the pavilion. To teach Leng Shi Zhi a rough lesson, to someone with her cultivation, it was like the lifting of one’s hand.

Even if Leng Shi Zhi was the genius of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, versus someone like Li Shuangyan, the heaven’s proud daughter, it was not enough to reach the apex!

“Not taking the sect’s order into consideration, remember your

own responsibility. To anyone who blocks my road, no matter who it is, kill them without mercy!”

Once Li Shuangyan had returned, Li Qiye stared at her once, then he said.

Li Qiye’s words made Xu Pei and her group confused, but Nan Huai Ren’s heart was moved! The group of Xu Pei didn’t know the intricacies inside, but, Nan Huai Ren did.

Because Li Qiye had previously said that Li Shuangyan would just be a maid! Currently, Li Qiye had commanded Li Shuangyan like this; this matter, Nan Huai Ren had suddenly understood; this matter, how could it not shock Nan Huai Ren.

Li Shuangyan, the princess of Old Ox country, the descendant of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, but today, she was only a maid for first brother!

During the moment when the crowd was still dazed, Li Qiye turned around and went inside the pavilion of Li Shuangyan. His words resonated from the inside, he was always as nonchalant and carefree like this:

“This time, you had failed your duty. I will temporarily stay in your bedroom, you stay in the next room to protect my Dao for me.”[2]

As Li Qiye said this, Li Shuangyan was both angry and dejected.

In the end, she could only stomp her foot, and came inside afterward, without saying anything.

Such a scene turned Xu Pei and others into stone statues; this scene was too dominating, right? This scene was the most aggressive and domineering event they had ever seen.

Li Shuangyan, in their minds, was an unreachable character, a generational Heavenly Goddess, a descendant of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, the princess of Old Ox country, her master was Demon Emperor Lun Ri, and she also had a natural born Emperor Physique and Saint Fate Palace. Only one of these matters was enough to shock others. A heaven's proud daughter like Li Shuangyan, no matter the place, would be the moon that all the stars revolved themselves around.

However, today, this heaven's proud daughter, Li Shuangyan, could only be in the room to service their first brother. This thing, this scene, it was too dominating; this type of domination, even a Mortal Emperor could just be like this, no more!

Inside the treasure pavilion of Li Shuangyan, inside her lady's chamber, Li Qiye lied down on her elegant bed, and he glimpsed at Li Shuangyan's annoyed expression. Both of his hands padded the back of his head, comfortably and he casually said:

"I know you are upset. However, you have truly failed your duty. Being my maid, you should know what to do. If you feel that I am not worthy of your service, then you could leave at any time, This type of matter, I don't like to force you; picking a stubborn melon will make it not sweet."

Li Shuangyan was only staring at Li Qiye in silence, and she didn't say anything no matter what.

“Your silence, I will consider it as you are willing to stay here.”

Li Qiye nonchalantly said, and dropped this matter. He spoke with Li Shuangyan:

“Send these words to Demon Emperor Lun Ri in place of me, tell him that I require an alchemy master. The higher the skill, the better.”

“I will send the message to master, but as for the person sent by master, it is not for me to decide.”

After a while, Li Shuangyan's anger subsided. In the end, she was used to being the heaven's proud daughter; this sudden change in status, she was not used to. After her mind had calmed down, she truly faced herself once more.

“Regarding this matter, I'm sure if Demon Emperor Lun Ri will have his own opinion.”

Li Qiye smiled, and after everything was decided, he stopped caring and went into a deep sleep.

Such a scene, Li Shuangyan didn't know whether to be annoyed,

or silent. This thirteen to fourteen year old boy, he was more domineering than any other man she had met previously. Today, he even took her bed, and even felt that it was such a natural thing, complacently lying there and snoring! This arrogant man was something she had seen for the first time, but what made her even more quiet was that this man sleeping on her bed, was just a little boy much younger than she was, a thirteen to fourteen year old little boy!

Sure enough, the next day, the courtyard was rebuilt by others; this new courtyard was not lesser than the old one.

Leng Shi Zhi was unable to stand up from Li Shuangyan's beating, which caused Cao Xiong, his master, to have no place to vent his anger at the moment!

His idea was to hope that his disciple could climb up Li Shuangyan. He did not think that his genius disciple, whom he was most proud about, not only didn't receive Li Shuangyan's favor, but also had been beaten to the point of not being able to move on his bed!

This matter made Cao Xiong angry to the point of vomiting blood. His disciple was beaten by the descendant of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, princess of Old Ox country; what was he gonna do? Kill to the door and find Li Shuangyan to even the score?"

Chapter 60 : Conspiracy (2)

This matter, even if Cao Xiong was ten times braver, he still wouldn't dare. Not just him; even the entire Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect wouldn't dare to offend Li Shuangyan. To offend her, was akin to offending the entire Nine Saint Demon Gate. To offend a giant monster like the Nine Saint Demon Gate, this was the same as seeking for death!

“To hell with it!”

Cao Xiong couldn't help but scream out this sentence. His genius disciple did not get into Li Shuangyan's eyes, but a bag of straws like Li Qiye was winning Li Shuangyan's favor; this was like meeting a ghost.

This event, the only explanation was that Li Qiye was a spy from the Nine Saint Demon Gate. However, this type of explanation was even more like meeting a ghost and even less plausible than Li Shuangyan favoring Li Qiye.

If the Nine Saint Demon Gate sent a disciple with a Mortal Physique, Mortal Life Wheel, and Mortal Fate Palace to infiltrate the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, then that would truly be like meeting a ghost. What was even worse was that Li Qiye would be the most unqualified spy; had anyone ever seen such an arrogant spy?

To say that Li Qiye was a spy of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, even

Cao Xiong himself didn't believe it. This was merely only a scheme to attack Li Qiye.

If Li Qiye wasn't a spy from the Nine Saint Demon Gate, then what was the reason for Li Shuangyan's favor towards him? Could it be because the two sects have a marital pact? Or maybe it was because Li Shuangyan really liked him?

Regarding this matter, Cao Xiong had almost broken his head from continuous thinking. Cao Xiong's expression was extremely hard to see; in the end, he went to visit a certain place in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

On top of a main peak in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was a peak with the densest natural world energy in the sect; however, today, inside the main hall of this peak, was not an elder nor a protector of the sect, but Guest Adviser Dong Sheng Long!

Guest adviser; this seat was present in many sects and even in many countries. To be a guest adviser was to benefit from the resources of the sect or nation, and they did not need to worry about the sect's matters; only when the sects or nations met a disaster would the guest adviser need to take action!

Dong Sheng Long was a guest adviser of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, plus, he was the only guest adviser of the sect!

Inside the ancient hall, the breath of a Royal Noble – like mercury – discharged into the air; without a single opening. This caused others to not dare to come closer! An old man wearing a blue robe

with a suppressing pressure; his whole body absorbed and exerted the frightening energy of a Royal Noble. Without a doubt, he was a powerful Royal Noble; a Royal Noble that was highly experienced.

Dong Sheng Long, guest adviser of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, was a powerful Royal Noble that could change other people's expression. His cultivation, compared to the Six Elders of the sect, was even stronger.

At this moment, Dong Sheng Long and Cao Xiong were sharing a table. Even though they were sitting together, Cao Xiong was still showing a respectful and cautious manner.

“Brother Cao's mood recently has not been good, ah.”

Dong Sheng Long poured wine into Cao Xiong's bowl. As a Royal Noble, he appeared to be very approachable; however, his fathomless eyes carried coldness that could swallow others!

Cao Xiong drank the wine in silence, and he didn't say anything in the moment. Naturally, he came here with many expectations, but he was not willing to open his mouth first. He was waiting for Dong Sheng Long to name the price.

“Brother Cao is worried because of the sect master's seat?”

Dong Sheng Long was still pouring wine for Cao Xiong; his face still wore the same hidden smile, but the cold intentions in his eyes were extremely frightening.

Dong Sheng Long was a guest adviser for the sect, but in reality, his origin was formidable. His Royal Noble title was not self proclaimed; it was bestowed to him by the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom.

Dong Sheng Long's background was from the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom's nobility. This noble family had complex ties with the Heavenly God Sect, and it could even be considered a sub-sect of the Heavenly God Sect.

Also, even Dong Sheng Long's family was not weak; it was many times stronger than the current Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!

Dong Sheng Long being a guest adviser at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, naturally, was not from an invitation by the sect. Don't jest, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and the Heavenly God Sect were considered enemies.

Thirty thousand years ago, when the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had declined, the Heavenly God Sect went on the offensive against them. The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect did not only lose their kingdom that they had ruled for many generations, but they had also lost all of their Grand Elders, more or less, in this war!

After this war, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had never recovered. The Heavenly God Sect erected the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom on the remains of the collapsed kingdom of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!

Dong Sheng Long was a noble at the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, and he was bestowed Royal Noble by this kingdom; why would the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect invite him to be a guest adviser? He was assigned here as an adviser by the Mortal Emperor of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom.

Regarding this particular guest adviser, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect could not decline. Today, the sect was no longer able to compete with the Heavenly God Sect or the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom. With this guest adviser sent by the kingdom, the sect could only accept him inside.

Dong Sheng Long, as a guest adviser at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, had his own mission – he kept a very low profile during his time here. Besides cultivating, he rarely went outside, and he, even less, interfered with the matters of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; thus, Dong Sheng Long had not made that many protectors and elders to outright reject him.

Cao Xiong was an elder of the sect. In the past, he, similar to the other protectors and elders, had great animosity towards Dong Sheng Long. However, Cao Xiong, in his heart, also had many things that he wanted to change since he always had an ambition towards the sect master's seat.

During that year, regarding the passing down of the sect master's seat and taking into consideration of order according to status, the sect master's seat should have went to the first elder or to him!

However, inexplicably, Su Yong Huang appeared, and this made him painfully lose the sect master's seat! In these recent passing

years, Cao Xiong had lost the idea of becoming Sect Master himself; he instead placed all of his aspirations into his disciple, Leng Shi Zhi.

This was also the reason why Cao Xiong had so often tried to turn his disciple, Leng Shi Zhi, into the prime disciple, but this progress was not so smooth.

With this result, Cao Xiong became disconsolate, and his magnificent aspiration was difficult to achieve. Under these conditions, with Dong Sheng Long intentionally acting friendly towards him, Cao Xiong inadvertently became closer to Dong Sheng Long; his previous hostility towards Dong Sheng Long had dissipated by a lot.

Later, Dong Sheng Long had implied many times that him and his backing would be able to assist Cao Xiong in climbing to the sect master's position of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!

With such a tempting offer from Dong Sheng Long, it would be strange if Cao Xiong was not interested! Cao Xiong knew the people that were behind Dong Sheng Long were powerful, but he also knew what Dong Sheng Long wanted.

If he truly joined Dong Sheng Long, Cao Xiong knew that him becoming the sect master was not a difficult matter. The problem was, once he joined Dong Sheng Long, he had to put in great effort afterwards. The backing of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom was not easily bestowed upon, and this deal would symbolize his betrayal of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and the ancestors.

Even though Cao Xiong truly coveted the sect master's seat and was tempted by Dong Sheng Long's offer, but as an elder of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and a disciple that grew up here, he ultimately couldn't cross this bottom line in his heart. In the end, for him, to betray the sect and the ancestors would be something that will torture his conscience!

Of course, Dong Sheng Long was not in a rush either. The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had declined, and the items of this sect, one day, would fall into his hands; he had enough patience. Naturally, if Cao Xiong would join him, then it would be even better.

Facing Dong Sheng Long, Cao Xiong was just drinking without replying while Dong Sheng Long maintained his smile. It was a smile on the outside, but inside, it wasn't.

Finally, Cao Xiong placed down the bowl in his hand, and he said.

“The sect master is not present, so I do not need to worry.”

Dong Sheng Long, with his pretentious smile, said:

“Brother Cao is an elder of the sect, and you have truly contributed to it with your blood and courage. Brother Cao should be more aware of the current situation of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.”

Cao Xiong was waiting for Dong Sheng Long to say these words; he looked at Dong Sheng Long, and he said:

“My mind is dark; please give me a few pointers.”

Dong Sheng Long, still maintaining a smile, said:

“Brother Cao, even though the Nine Saint Demon Gate is here because of the marital matter; however, have you thought about this? I’m afraid that they are only here because of a certain thing in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.”

“Is that so?”

Cao Xiong did not answer directly; in reality, he knew clearly what he meant in his heart.

Dong Sheng Long did not care for Cao Xiong’s attitude. He was afraid of the fish not biting the bait. As long as he took the bait, everything would be easy. He wouldn’t be afraid of Cao Xiong’s hesitation anymore.

“Has Brother Cao thought more about this? The truth is, in the end, the only thing that can protect the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect is still the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom. The Nine Saint Demon Gate is far out in the other corner of the world; they only want the things that belong to them. As for whether the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect’s living or dying, I’m afraid they do not care at all.”

Dong Sheng Long sincerely said.

“The marriage between the two sects, I don’t see it as a bad thing entirely.”

Cao Xiong still replied in a patient manner.

Dong Sheng Long let out a laugh, and then said with hidden meanings:

“Of course, from your point of view, the marriage pact between the two sects is a happy thing, worthy of celebration. However, the marriage of the two sects; from my perspective, if your disciple Leng Shi Zhi could marry princess Li, then it would be ten parts perfect.”

“Unfortunately, my disciple is not the prime disciple!”

“This marital pact; it doesn’t necessarily have to be the prime disciple, right?”

The fish had taken the bait, so Dong Sheng Long smiled. Cao Xiong, in the end, couldn’t escape his palm, and his confidence rose; he then, with a beaming smile, said:

“The two sects have the pact. However, what if something unexpectedly happens to the prime disciple, or what if your prime disciple commits a grave sin?”

“What is the meaning behind brother Dong’s words?”

Cao Xiong’s eyes concentrated, and he said.

Dong Sheng Long answered with a smile:

“Brother Cao, there are some people that have achieved a few accomplishments, and they couldn’t help but become arrogant and disrespectful toward their seniors. They then committed wrongful acts against the sect’s rules? Tell me I am right? For example, if your prime disciple, Li Qiye, commits a crime, then the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect would have to deal with it fairly. This type of horse that causes trouble to its herd; if not dealt with, it would cause detrimental harm to the sect.”

Cao Xiong’s eyes were focused, but he did not say anything for a long time.

Finally, Dong Sheng Long, still staring at Cao Xiong, slowly opened his mouth:

“Brother Cao, since you came to confide in this little brother, this little brother will naturally help a friend; even if it would risk my life. If brother Cao has any ideas, just go and do it. Even if the sky falls down, isn’t this little brother still here to console brother Cao?”

“Brother Dong is so affectionate and helpful; this Cao is very

appreciative.”

In the end, Cao Xiong stood up and clasped his hands together before taking his leave.

After Cao Xiong’s departure, Dong Sheng Long smiled, and he slowly said:

“As long as you have stepped on this boat, I’m not afraid that you won’t betray the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Cao Xiong, ah Cao Xiong; if you want to fight with that old Gu, you definitely will request my help!”

Chapter 61 : Godly Might (1)

After teaching Leng Shi Zhi a lesson, Li Qiye originally thought that there would be peace for some time. However, not many days had passed and trouble had come to his door again.

“First brother, first brother, not good, not good.”

As Li Qiye was cultivating in the courtyard, Luo Feng Hua and several panicked disciples rushed in.

The appearances of Luo Feng Hua, along with his fellow disciples, was extremely scruffy; especially when there were purple bruises all over their bodies. From just a glance, it was clear that they had been taught a lesson.

Seeing their current shapes, Li Qiye furrowed his brows, and he asked:

“What actually happened?”

“Sectional Leader Zhou went to the Cleansing Jade Peak. He, he found reasons... to teach us a lesson.”

A disciple explained the current situation with two or three sentences.

So it was earlier this morning, Sectional Leader Zhou who was no longer teaching the Dao at the Cleansing Jade Peak suddenly returned. He gathered all three hundred disciples and decided to check their cultivations.

Before Li Qiye become an instructor, Sectional Leader Zhou was the one who instructed the Dao for the three hundred disciples; the opinion of the disciples regarding him wasn't great, but it wasn't terrible either. Normally, Sectional Leader Zhou just routinely taught the Dao, and after the lesson was over, he quickly left. Outside of these lectures, the disciples normally had a difficult time finding him.

On top of this, his lecture was nothing out of the ordinary and didn't give special attention to any disciples; to him, Dao instruction was merely a mission from the sect.

This was precisely why the three hundred disciples, regarding Sectional Leader Zhou, didn't have a good affinity towards him. However, it also was not bad, it could only be considered the affinity between a senior and a disciple.

Today, Sectional Leader Zhou suddenly came to check on their cultivation. From the beginning, the disciples didn't think anything of it; after all, before, it was only Sectional Leader Zhou whom taught them the Dao. His wanting to examine the disciples of the Cleansing Jade Peak would be viewed as a normal occurrence.

However, the moment the examination took place, his attitude completely changed. After a period of time, he said that this

disciple was practicing a qi deviation merit law, then another was practicing a completely wrong style, then he scolded a different disciple for acting on his own initiative at picking a merit law...

The one that was scolded the worst by Sectional Leader Zhou was Zhang Yu. Zhang Yu had previously destroyed his cultivation to re-practice the Jade Spiral Merit Law; this matter caused Sectional Leader Zhou to personally gave him a good beating.

Not only Zhang Yu, but other disciples, such as Luo Feng Hua who brought up a few objections, also received a beating.

Li Qiye's Dao instruction, compared to the Sectional Leader Zhou's, was much more mysterious and profound. This was something that the three hundred disciples had unanimously agreed upon. After experiencing Li Qiye's lessons, many disciples' cultivations increased by not a small amount; some had even experienced exceptional leaps. There were even disciples whose cultivation had frozen, but after Li Qiye's lesson, their Dao was like the water flowing into the river.

One could say, regarding Li Qiye's Dao instruction, all of the disciples at the Cleansing Jade Peak were completely convinced; especially the ones with great talents like Luo Feng Hua, they were clear regarding excellence and mediocrity.

So, at the moment when Sectional Leader Zhou said that Li Qiye Dao's instruction was not worth a coin; Luo Feng Hua and his fellow disciples couldn't hold back and immediately objected, so they were ruthlessly beaten by Sectional Leader Zhou.

With this result, the intelligent group of Luo Feng Hua suddenly realized that something was amiss. In the past, Sectional Leader Zhou had never disciplined them, but now he suddenly raged a storm, without knowing right from wrong. They now knew that Zhou was here not for the sake of examination, but to cause trouble. On top of that, the targets weren't them, but their first brother Li Qiye, they were merely cannon fodders.

This was why Luo Feng Hua and his group decided to take advantage of Sectional Leader Zhou's inattentiveness while raging a storm; they sneaked to Li Qiye's place to report. Maybe, Sectional Leader Zhou had intentionally let them go.

Hearing the narrative from Luo Feng Hua's group, Li Qiye's gaze gave off a feeling of concentration; the corner of his mouth tilted deviously and revealed a cold smile.

He had no grievances with Sectional Leader Zhou. In theory, Sectional Leader Zhou did not need to find faults with him like this, not to mention, examining the cultivations of the Cleansing Jade Peak disciples was no longer Zhou's responsibility! Most importantly, currently, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and the Nine Saint Demon Gate have an in law's relationship, and Li Qiye was a crucial piece. At the sect, even the protectors wouldn't want to look for trouble with him, let alone an ordinary sectional leader.

Presently, Sectional Leader Zhou suddenly jumped out to find faults with him. If there wasn't someone behind the scene planning, or if he didn't have a powerful backing, even if he was ten times more courageous, he wouldn't dare to do this.

“Come, we will go see. Let’s take a look at this extraordinary Sectional Leader Zhou’s ability to put forth stormy winds and waves.”

Li Qiye stretched his body downward, and smiled cheerfully.

Luo Feng Hua and the others didn’t dare to neglect the words, so they busily followed behind Li Qiye to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, with Li Shuangyan to the side!

Although Li Qiye was happily smiling the whole time on the way, but Luo Feng Hua’s group was a bit nerve-racked. These few were not stupid, they have faintly smelled the struggle within the upper echelon of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

The group of Li Qiye had arrived at the Cleansing Jade Peak, and sure enough, they were met with Sectional Leader Zhou causing a storm. The disciples didn’t dare to make noises; many of them were more or less wounded. At the moment of Li Qiye’s arrival, Zhou was still yelling at another disciple.

Seeing Li Qiye, the other disciples couldn’t help but to move their gazes towards Li Qiye, asking him for help.

“Li Qiye, these things you have taught!”

Li Qiye had just arrived, but he didn’t even have the chance to speak. Sectional Leader Zhou had already pointed at his face and

loudly yelled:

“As the Dao’s instructing senior, not only have you brought in heretical notions to teach to the ignorant disciples, but you also lead them into the devil’s path; what is your motive behind this? To poison the fellow disciples like this, this crime cannot be pardoned!”

Li Qiye hadn’t opened his mouth, but Sectional Leader Zhou already had an accusation ready for him.

“Sectional Leader Zhou, who the hell do you think you are?”[1]

To Sectional Leader Zhou’s accusation and yelling, Li Qiye didn’t want to look at him any further, and he slowly said:

“If you are sensible, then get the hell out of here. In my jurisdiction, it is not up to you to wave your hands and dance with your legs; what do you think you are worth?”

Li Qiye opened his mouth and immediately, the most arrogant and rudest words came out. Sectional Leader Zhou, whom had mentally prepared, was still shocked for a little bit. He thought that Li Qiye would retort him, and he had many words in his mind ready. No matter what, today he would indict Li Qiye the crime of teaching the devil Dao’s path. However, he didn’t expect for Li Qiye’s first words to be so unbridled and aggressive.

“Impudence!”

Sectional Leader Zhou returned to normal, and he angrily yelled:

“As a disciple of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, you are unfilial and rebellious, disrespectful to a senior, would cheat on your master and kill your ancestors, and rebel against the sect...”[2]

“You talk too much...”

Not waiting for Sectional Leader Zhou to finish his yelling, Li Qiye took out the Serpent Punishing stick and fiercely struck forward.

“This thing doesn’t know whether he wants to live or die!”

Sectional Leader Zhou saw that Li Qiye had made a move towards him. He became angry, screamed angrily once, and his big hand aimed towards Li Qiye. To him, for Li Qiye to make the first move, nothing could be better.

At the same time, Zhou did not put Li Qiye into his eyes. This was only a bag of straws disciple, once he actually made a move, it would be as easy as turning one’s own hand.

“Bang... Bang... Bang...”

However, the result was far from Sectional Leader Zhou’s

expectations. Within the blink of an eye, Zhou had been beaten by Li Qiye to the ground. The Serpent Punishing stick aimed for his face and unleashed a myriad of rains and winds until he was covered in blood.

Sectional Leader Zhou, within the sect's thirty-six leaders, could only be considered ordinary, with an average cultivation. He was no more than a Warrior Canopy cultivator.

Under the Heaven's Primal rank, any cultivator in front of the Serpent Punishing stick would only have one fate, to be beaten.

“Ahhh...”

Sectional Leader Zhou was a big character, but after a hard beating from the Serpent Punishing stick, he was unable to bear this agonizing pain, and couldn't help but to let out a miserable shriek. At this moment, Zhou's appearance was completely tattered, lying down on the ground. Tiredness encompassed his whole body along with blood. Especially his face, which was beaten to a mushy pulp by Li Qiye.

Seeing this domineering sight caused the disciples of the Cleansing Jade Peak to be in awe. Sectional Leader Zhou was one of the thirty-six leaders, as well as a second generation disciple, a senior of the third generation disciples.

Plus, Sectional Leader Zhou was already a Warrior Canopy expert, but in the end, he was still beaten and rolled on the ground because of Li Qiye. He was not able to defend himself against the

fury of the Serpent Punishing stick.

This time, the disciples couldn't help but shiver once. They were all beaten badly by the stick as well, but from seeing this, maybe it wasn't something to be ashamed about; even an expert like Zhou was still thrashed like he was a dead snake!

“Protector Hu, save me...”

In the end, Sectional Leader Zhou let out a pathetic bellow, calling for help.

“Impudence! What are you doing!”

After the scream for help, in the blink of an eye, a deafening roar echoed in the air, and a large group of men, that carried a menacing aura, entered the Cleansing Jade Peak!

This group that suddenly rushed in the peak was not small in size. Outside of the ordinary disciples, there were also three sectional leaders and one protector. Besides these men, Leng Shi Zhi was also part of this group.

A patrolling law enforcement team of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect suddenly appeared at the Cleansing Jade Peak, this was “too coincidental”!

Moreover, this patrol team for the sect... Was too luxurious. Outside of the normal law enforcement disciples, there were also

three sectional leaders led by a protector. Even the number one man of the younger generation, Leng Shi Zhi, was also in this group.

This type of team, if a disciple was found to do anything “illegal” and was caught by three sectional leaders, one protector, and a genius like Leng Shi Zhi, it would be evidence made out of steel. No matter what the “crime” would be, this would be irrefutable evidence and irrefutable proof; one couldn’t wash this suspicion clean!

“Protector, Li-Li Qiye was disrespectful to the elders, and planned to kill a senior. He conspired against me, h-he, he wants to rebel against the sect, and cheat the master as well as kill the ancestors...”

At this moment, Sectional Leader Zhou was pathetically lying on the ground and pitifully exclaimed.

Seeing this scene, even though Luo Feng Hua and his peers were young, but they weren’t dumb; especially the smart ones like Luo Feng Hua – everything suddenly became clear.

Luo Feng Hua and his peers felt their blood running cold, cold sweat overflowed their whole bodies. Currently, Sectional Leader Zhou was lying bloody on the ground, and Li Qiye was caught at the scene by Protector Hu and his enforcement group...

Chapter 62 : Godly Might (2)

Under these circumstances, right and wrong along with black and white were no longer important. Even if Li Qiye was able to speak with lotus flowers in his words, he still wouldn't be able to make things clear. Even if he had one hundred mouths, he still wouldn't be able to clear the accusation of master cheating ancestor killing, as well as the murder attempt of his senior.

The terrible thing was that Protector Hu was the first disciple of Elder Cao! The three sectional leaders were also from the camp of Elder Cao!

Luo Feng Hua's group immediately knew that this was a terrible trap when they thought back to a few days ago, where Li Qiye taught a lesson to Leng Shi Zhi. They broke out in cold sweat from worrying for Li Qiye. This time, even if Li Qiye jumped into the Yellow river, it still wouldn't be enough to cleanse the matter![1]

In the blink of an eye, the law enforcement group had surrounded Li Qiye, with the leader being Leng Shi Zhi.

“Disrespectful, master cheating ancestor killing, sect betrayal. Kill without mercy!”[2]

Leng Shi Zhi stared intensely at Li Qiye; his eyes quivered with frightening killing intent!

Li Qiye smirked; he hadn't made a move yet, but Li Shuangyan

coldly scowled and took a step forward. Once she was in front, her blood energy pierced the heavens as if a Heavenly King had woken up. Her body exuded a cold pressure that could freeze ten thousand miles in a flash.

Once Li Shuangyan walked forward, Leng Shi Zhi couldn't help but to tremble and he inadvertently took two steps back. Although he was the genius of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, but when he was compared to Li Shuangyan, the difference was too drastic.

It wasn't just Leng Shi Zhi, even the three sectional leaders and Protector Hu were shaking as well. In the end, this was the descendant and princess of Old Ox country. This wasn't someone with an undeserved reputation. She was a proud daughter of the heavens; even considering all of Grand Middle Territory, her reputation would still definitely be just as renowned.

“Princess Li, this is an internal matter of our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. We are dealing with a traitor, please reconsider and do not interfere with our sect's affair.”

Protector Hu's courage rose as he gravely said this. He licked his lips and thought about the backings behind him.

Li Shuangyan's elegant yet cold countenance suddenly flashed a sharp brilliance. She naturally didn't care about opposing the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

Right then, Li Qiye smiled, narrowed his eyes, and then said:

“It seems there is someone that wants me to step forward; I will step out to say a few words. My two hands aren’t stained with blood, so others actually think that I am a nice person. Shuang Yan, step back.”[3]

Li Shuangyan glanced at Li Qiye, then repositioned behind his back without saying a word.

Seeing Li Shuangyan listen to all of Li Qiye’s orders, Leng Shi Zhi’s jealousy could pierce the heaven. He was maddened with jealousy. In his heart, Li Shuangyan was a goddess, a heavenly immortal in his mind. Even though, towards a useless bag of straws, she was so obedient, she instead had never looked at him.

Li Qiye stepped forward, brightly smiled at Leng Shi Zhi, and then said:

“No matter what kind of plots and devious plans you all are scheming, or the backings behind all of you, since it has deteriorated to the situation today, if I don’t kill a certain few, people will truly think that I am a pushover.”

“Sect betrayal, master cheating ancestor killing; one deserving to be killed by all! Go, kill this traitor!”

Leng Shi Zhi coldly commanded, which signaled the law enforcement disciples that surrounded Li Qiye.

“Traitor, back down and accept your fate!”

The surrounding disciples simultaneously yelled, and in the blink of an eye, they summoned their Life Treasures and cut straight at Li Qiye.

Each law enforcement disciple's moves were fierce; their first move was to use their Life Treasures to slay Li Qiye. They essentially meant that they didn't want Li Qiye to survive, but to kill him on the spot.

“Roll...”

The smiling eyes of Li Qiye suddenly became cold. In the blink of an eye, he flew upward like a giant Peng, and propped himself up; the heavens allowed for this Peng to fly. His body was in the air, and he used unpredictable steps in order to escape the Life Treasures that came from the law enforcement disciples.

A loud “Bang” sounded, and just as Li Qiye had escaped the Life Treasures' fire and thunder rays, his whole body ferociously struck down. This power was no longer in the realm of speed; in the middle of the fire and thunder rays, Li Qiye was akin to a massive Kun. One swing of its tail was enough to splash an entire ocean across ten thousand miles![4]

The appearance of the Kun, with its heavenly aura, caused a deafening noise to ring in the skies. The law enforcement disciples essentially couldn't block the huge waves of the Kun. Under the assault of the powerful pressure, these disciples spewed out fresh blood and were all knocked away by giant waves.

“Kun Peng Minor Sixth Form, the last profound truth of the six moves...”

Li Qiye had finished his move, and the eyes of the three sectional leaders and the protector couldn't help but squint their eyes. Although the Kun Peng Minor Sixth Form was an incomplete Emperor merit law, to understand the last profound truth, even the most gifted disciple would still require decades in order to understand it!

Li Qiye jumped towards the middle, with the heavenly Peng and gigantic Kun in a state of constant transformation; this matter was too frightening.

Li Qiye, with one move, had knocked away the law enforcement disciples, and then he landed on the ground. He staringly smiled at Leng Shi Zhi and said:

“Do you want to come alone, or do you want to come with the sectional leaders and Protector Hu?”

“Don't be so arrogant; even if you understand the last profound truth, it is still only an insignificant technique.”

Leng Shi Zhi's eyes became cold, and he yelled:

“Today, I will enlighten you on these things; you will find out what is truly a grand technique!”

Finished speaking, he opened his mouth wide to let out a Thirty Six Celestial Deities Sword. It immediately became a murderous forest-like sword formation that trapped Li Qiye in the middle.

“Thirty Six Celestial Deities Sword formation...”

Seeing this sword formation, the Luo Feng Hua crowd that had heard of this technique expressions couldn't help but darken.

Thirty Six Celestial Deities Sword formation was a technique created by an elder with the ranking of Ancient Saint. It was not just a merit law of Ancient Saint ranking, but it was also an extremely powerful Ancient Saint formation.[5]

The Cleansing Jade Peak disciples didn't think that Leng Shi Zhi, who was only a third generation disciple, would have the qualification to cultivate this merit law!

Li Shuangyan's eyes also showed signs of concentration. She was staring intensely at Leng Shi Zhi's sword formation. She could be called an expert regarding this realm, and after an analysis, she knew that Leng Shi Zhi had not understood one tenth of this sword formation; the power was still considerable, however. Regardless, this was still an Ancient Saint sword formation.

Li Qiye suddenly was trapped in the sword formation. He smiled, and in the blink of an eye, he was as swift as a flying dragon and quick like a tiger's steps. With this speed, he successfully escaped the sharp winds of the more-than-thirty swords with the two

Invisible Dual Blades in his hands, which were flying out and creating “Whoosh, Whoosh” sounds, while also colliding and slashing the thirty six Celestial Deities Swords.

The sectional leaders and Protector Hu couldn’t believe their eyes. These Invisible Dual Blades, which were crafted from ordinary steel and collided with a Life Treasure, weren’t being damaged in the slightest. This was an unthinkable matter!

“Celestial Deities Imprisonment!”

Seeing this scene, Leng Shi Zhi became angry and let out a deafening roar. He then activated a lethal technique in the sword formation.

“Clank, clank, clank”

In a flash, the boundless sea of swords poured down in torrents that was accompanied by screams. At this moment when the sword struck down diagonally, it was unstoppable. Once anything came into contact with the sword’s tip, it would immediately be pierced into millions of holes. This sword’s tip, which had an unstoppable momentum, pierced straight towards Li Qiye.

The pressure of this sword, without even mentioning Li Qiye’s flesh body, but even someone with a Golden Body wouldn’t be able to resist it.[6]

At this moment, Li Qiye’s body moved at an inconceivable speed.

The sword edge that was going to behead him was dodged by his sudden jump into the air, as if his body was a Kun Peng and jumped out of the Thirty Six Celestial Deities Sword formation!

“Heavenly transformation! Kun Peng’s Six Variants...”

In just a flash, Li Qiye had jumped out from the formation. Protector Hu knew his stuff, and said with a horrified expression!

In the fire and thunder lights, Li Qiye had already jumped in front of Leng Shi Zhi. The Invisible Dual Blades’ cold reflection shimmered, and his left and right hands struck together straight for the head of Leng Shi Zhi!

Leng Shi Zhi was undoubtedly a genius of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. His expression darkened, and the sound of “Whoosh, whoosh” filled the air. In the face of life and death, his body was covered with a godly armor.

“Pluff.”

The godly armor which Leng Shi Zhi wore had a great origin, but against the Invisible Dual Blades, it was still penetrated. The neck of Leng Shi Zhi became cold; strand by strand, his blood dripped downward. Just a little bit deeper and his skull would have been separated from his neck!

If he wasn’t wearing the godly armor, with just this one blade, he would have definitely met his end. This time, Leng Shi Zhi was

extremely frightened.

“Impudence...”

Seeing the deteriorating situation, the three sectional leaders yelled in a deafening manner, and moved at the same time. They took out their Life Treasure and directly cut straight towards Li Qiye.

These three sectional leaders weren't just lazily sitting around. They were all at the Warrior Canopy and Purified Rebirth ranks.

“Roll...”

In a flash, Li Qiye's hostility soared with a crimson killing intent. He let out a loud roar, and his Life Wheel appeared, along with blood energy which seemed like a sea. With an all-destroying momentum, his blood energy burst forth. This type of domineering and overbearing power even made Li Shuangyan's expression change.

In the blink of an eye, Li Qiye lifted his legs and then stomped heavily to jump outside. The most simple technique, the most simple transformation was also the most oppressive move! One kick flew out, and the world was encompassed. The heavens and earth were suppressed, and Gods and Demons were screaming! Just this single heavy kick had the weight of millions of Jun behind it![7]

“Bang... Bang...Bang...”

Under this one kick, the three Life Treasures shattered. Life Treasures were just pieces of paper under this one kick of Li Qiye.

This was Li Shuangyan’s second time seeing such a kick. Her expression greatly changed, and at this moment, she was certain that Li Qiye was practicing a peerless Immortal Physique!

The three sectional leaders were frightened until their faces were deathly pale. They immediately shifted their positions, and were able to escape this horrible kick from Li Qiye.

The Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique of Li Qiye had the freedom to send and return whenever it wants, and even though the three sectional leaders could escape this kick, they still couldn’t escape the Kun Peng’s Six Variants of Li Qiye. While he was pulling back his feet, Li Qiye like a Kun Peng flew to the sky, and in a flash appeared before the three sectional leaders.[8]

“Heavenly transformation...”

This extreme speed caused the three sectional leaders to be frighteningly amazed. They suddenly recognized the technique, but it was too late.

Li Qiye’s kick was like the immortal poison of a scorpion’s stinger. Under the Kun Peng’s Six Variants, this kick was terribly fast. Under the Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique, this kick was

akin to ten thousand thunders that simultaneously roared together. The three sectional leaders fundamentally couldn't dodge this kick; it was simply too swift.

[1] Jumping into the Yellow river – a phrase originating from the belief that people who were indicted wrongfully would commit suicide using this river to prove their innocence

[2] I actually like master cheating ancestor killing more than the longer line in the last chapter, even though it looks weird in English

[3] Nice person here originally is – virtuous male trusting female – an idiom meaning a person that is too nice and trusting

[4] Peng = a giant eagle-like bird, Kun = a giant fish/whale, Kun Peng would be a transformation of both. In CN novels, this beast is usually top two in speed and top ten in power

[5] Glossary only has ten ranks so far from the narrative, Ancient Saint would be rank 13. Immortal Emperor would be 17

[6] Golden Body here to my knowledge, has nothing to do with the Physiques in this book. It is a description in Chinese literature/Daoism of an impervious body, so it is more of an expression

[7] Jun is a measurement in China, is equal to 30 catties, and 1 catty is equal to 1.33 pound

[8] The first sentence might be a bit confusing because it was an idiom, but basically Li Qiye's kick is literally a normal kick, there is no energy or preparation involved is the meaning of that first sentence

Chapter 63 : God of War Formula (1)

“Ahh...”

The three sectional leaders shrieked miserably. The sound of bones breaking into pieces was incomparably hard for people hear. Everyone couldn't help but feel their blood run cold. Without a doubt, the bones in the three sectional leaders' entire bodies were broken under this one kick.

Everyone shivered after they heard the sound of bones being fragmented. Warrior Canopy experts couldn't even stop one kick from Li Qiye, just how frightening was this kick?

“Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique!”

Li Shuangyan muttered to herself with a shocked expression. At this point, she had become clear on Li Qiye's peerless Immortal Physique. It was one of the twelve, the Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique.

The Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique's heaviness could suffocate Gods and Devils. Once the physique appeared, it could suppress all magical laws. One had to know, to cultivate a peerless Immortal Physique was simply impossible for a mortal body, unless he was in possession of a peerless Immortal Physique Merit Law.

Since the eternal past till now, many Immortal Emperors have

created peerless Immortal Physique Merit Laws, but if it was a mortal body, the chance of success at cultivating an Immortal Physique was still minuscule.

Without a doubt, Li Qiye's Immortal Physique was surely the original form. Reaching grand completion was only a matter of time! The meaning behind this was that Li Qiye's physique merit law was even above an Immortal Emperor physique merit law. To be above an Immortal Emperor merit law, just what kind of physique merit law was this?

As Li Shuangyan thought up to this point, her expression greatly changed. She knew the implication behind this. The weakness of the Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique was that its speed was too slow. However, the Kun Peng was an existence that possessed the fastest speed in this world. Li Qiye used the Kun Peng's Six Variants as his Fate merit law, which made up for the shortcoming of his Immortal Physique!

The Kun Peng's Six Variants synergized with the Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique; what kind of frightening existence was this? Li Qiye's body was truly the most domineering and violent weapon in this world!

“Celestial Deities Imprisonment!”

The moment Li Qiye had performed a mortal blow on the three sectional leaders, Leng Shi Zhi, who had escaped previously, sneaked an attack on Li Qiye. The Thirty Six Celestial Deities Swords formation slashed towards Li Qiye with torrential sword auras that destroyed everything in its path, but Li Qiye's body was

just like a Kun Peng, and he escaped the formation in the blink of an eye.

“Kun Peng’s Six Variants, be careful...”

Protector Hu became alarmed, he had seen this merit law before. Out of everyone in the entire Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, there was only the first elder that had practiced this law, which was the strongest Emperor merit law in the sect.

Li Qiye’s speed was too swift while Leng Shi Zhi was too slow to avoid. Two cold auras flashed. A “Phoosh” sound rang; the two Invisible Dual Blades pinned his body into the ground!

He was still wearing the godly armor on his body. One had to know, the godly armor on his body was crafted from Godly Gold metal, but under the Invisible Dual Blades, his godly armor was like a thin piece of paper which was suddenly nailed to the ground!

“Ah...”

With his body nailed to the ground, Leng Shi Zhi miserably bellowed.

“You couldn’t even understand one tenth of the sword formation’s profound truths, yet you still wanted to trap me.”

Li Qiye smiled insipidly with a severe gaze, that wanted to cut Leng Shi Zhi.

“Phoosh...”

In the blink of an eye, a gust of wind rushed forward with blood energy blazing chaotically like a storm. Suddenly, Protector Hu made a move and snuck an attack behind Li Qiye. He wanted to pierce through Li Qiye’s chest with one move.

However, this one move was stopped by a single palm. Protector Hu had to take a few steps back.

The person who stopped this blow for Li Qiye was not Li Shuangyan, but it was Tu Bu Yu, who was always wearing an amicable smile. Unknownst to all, second brother Tu Bu Yu had already stood to the side.

“Protector Hu, as a protector, sneaking an attack on a disciple can’t be considered part of the rules.”

No matter the occasion, Tu Bu Yu’s smile was always present.

“Die...”

Protector Hu let out a deafening roar. He didn’t want to waste any words and he let out a long roar. He opened his mouth and spat out a pagoda. The appearance of this pagoda exuded an unending and boundless killing aura. The sound of the ghosts which continuously wailed tortured the ears as if one was in hell.

The pagoda's appearance caused each magical law to descend. A loud "Bang" sound occurred, which caused endless magical laws to transform into a humongous whirlpool. Within this whirlpool, completed runes were absorbed and spat out as the incomplete runes interweaved with each other into a composition. Once this composition appeared, it could annihilate all existences and swallow their souls.

In the end, Protector Hu was a Heaven's Primal expert. This was the defining boundary for cultivators. Once a Heaven's Primal expert made a move, a strong and unyielding aura immediately would come to be.

"Protector Hu's Suppressing Evil Physique isn't bad."

Tu Bu Yu wore his smile again and suddenly emanated sword vibrations. In a flash, his entire body brought in and sent out the Sword's Spirit with his whole body that became a Sword Domain. Tu Bu Yu flew inside the Sword's Spirit – into the sky like a proud God of War.

"Clank..."

One sword slayed the whole nine worlds! One sword struck down! The universe's light came to an end! Under one sword, the entirety of Heaven and Earth were completely swept away! Tu Bu Yu's hand was not carrying a sword, but his Sword Spirit encompassed the whole of the Heavens and the Earth.

"Formula of the God of War!"

Seeing Tu Bu Yu's move, Li Qiye beamingly smiled. His expression became serious, and his eyes stared straight at Tu Bu Yu.

In reality, the moment when Tu Bu Yu's God of War Formula came out, Li Shuangyan was also shocked. She had suddenly remembered a legend regarding the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

Protector Hu cultivated the Suppressing Evil Physique. One could say that this was a powerful Heavenly King method! Even though the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had fallen and their Emperor laws were gone; as an Immortal Emperor Sect that had ruled over an ancient kingdom for millions of years, they still possessed many Ancient Saint, Heavenly Monarch, and Virtuous Paragon methods! These were also the powerful heritages of the sect, and even though they unfortunately had the methods, the Cleansing Incense Ancient sect lacked the inheritors!

The scenario of the God of War Formula that faced the Suppressing Evil Physique was not in the least suspenseful. In reality, Tu Bu Yu's cultivation was not shallow either.

One "Bang" sounded. Tu Bu Yu didn't have a physical sword, but once the God of War Formula was activated, the pagoda of Protector Hu couldn't stop it. The suppressed pagoda was struck away by the spiritual sword, and Protector Hu wasn't able to stabilize it. He was knocked away as well by the powerful sword's spirit, while he also violently sprayed a mouthful of fresh blood.

In a flash, Li Qiye disappeared. With his body like a Kun Peng, the heavenly transformation came into display – with shockingly absolute speed! The moment Protector Hu fell down from the sky, Li Qiye instantly appeared in front of him.

In this quick moment, Li Qiye's single kick ruthlessly struck downward like a whip. Protector Hu was already gravely wounded and was falling down from the sky; with Li Qiye suddenly making a move, he had no chance to escape, nor activate his Life Treasure. Li Qiye was too quick.

At this moment, Protector Hu raised his two hands like a heavenly king erecting a pagoda; he only wanted to stop the one kick of Li Qiye from thrashing down.

“Snap!”

The sound of bones being broken rang out. Without any doubt, the technique essentially couldn't stop this single kick from Li Qiye. A pitiful “Ahh” sound was soon heard. Li Qiye's kick ruthlessly struck Protector Hu's body, and the crackling sound of bones breaking sounded endlessly in the air.

“Bang”

The moment they fell to the ground, the earth trembled. Protector Hu's body was hammered by Li Qiye on top of the earth; at this moment, there was no saving Protector Hu. His whole body was deformed and had nearly become a fleshy paste.

The Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique: the supreme physique. Once the grand completion stage was reached, it was enough to make the Gods and Devils tremble in fear. The physical body alone was enough to crush the galaxy and suppress the heavenly skies!

Even though Li Qiye's body had not reached grand completion, the weight of his body could be calculated in the millions of Jun.

Protector Hu was extremely unlucky; he was a Heaven's Primal expert, yet still died in the hands of a Yun Physique disciple. No one could ever have the same misfortune as him.

Even if Li Qiye had the supreme physique, it wouldn't have been this easy for him to kill Protector Hu. It was a shame that Protector Hu had also met the mysterious Tu Bu Yu. Tu Bu Yu's move caused him to be mortally wounded, and facing Li Qiye in addition, he didn't have the strength for another fight. It would even be considered strange if he survived.

“Why the need to go this far.”

Tu Bu Yu shook his head smilingly after seeing Li Qiye kill Protector Hu. Still, he didn't try to stop Li Qiye.

At this point, no matter if it was Luo Feng Hua or a different disciple from the Cleansing Jade Peak, their hearts shivered. Even though Li Qiye normally disciplined them to the point of bloodiness, they had never seen Li Qiye radiate such terrible killing intent before.

However, Li Qiye's first move was killing all three sectional leaders and a protector. This vicious method was completely incongruous with a supposed thirteen year old boy.

Killing Protector Hu had no impact on Li Qiye. Li Qiye walked in front of Leng Shi Zhi, who was nailed down to the ground with fresh blood all over the place.

Even now, Leng Shi Zhi was still confused. He was a Warrior Canopy expert, so why did he lose to a new disciple that had only joined for less than one year? Li Qiye's cultivation was obviously far below him, but he was, on the contrary, no match for Li Qiye!

In many cases, with a lower cultivation rank, merit laws alone weren't enough to fill the gap. Even if he was practicing an Emperor merit law, there was no chance to be at the Yun Physique rank yet still be able to defeat someone at the Warrior Canopy rank.

Even then, Li Qiye was Li Qiye; other cultivators couldn't be compared to him. He understood the ultimate Dao truths of the Kun Peng's Six Variants!

"The sword formation was not bad; if you could have understood three parts, then maybe you could have actually trapped me. Unfortunately, you couldn't even understand one part, yet you dared to be arrogant in front of me. I can only say, you were courting death!"

Li Qiye looked at Leng Shi Zhi, and was smiling and talking at the

same time.

“You, don’t be rash. I, I, my master is an elder, yo-you, you...”

At this moment, Leng Shi Zhi’s courage was completely broken. He didn’t think of such a result as this. Shouldn’t it have been as easy as turning one’s hand for three sectional leaders and his older brother to kill a disciple like Li Qiye?

“I know...”

Leng Shi Zhi hadn’t finished his words when a “Snap” sound rang out. Li Qiye twisted his skull, with Leng Shi Zhi not even having a chance to scream.

“Even if your master was a Mortal Emperor, I would still kill without mercy.”

Li Qiye threw Leng Shi Zhi’s head to one side, then rubbed both of his palms together in a carefree and calm manner, as if nothing had happened.

At this point, the Cleansing Jade Peak disciples’ legs became weak. In their eyes, Li Qiye was a death god that killed three sectional leaders and a protector, as well as slaying Leng Shi Zhi in one breath. And while doing so, his expression didn’t change even once. One had to know, killing a sectional leader or a protector called for the death penalty in violation of the sectorial laws! To Li Qiye though, this matter was seemingly meaningless!

“Do you want me to personally take you out of the Cleansing Jade Peak or not?”

Li Qiye brilliantly smiled at the group of law enforcement disciples; his expression was both amicable and adorable.

Seeing the amicable and cute countenance of Li Qiye, the legs of these disciples greatly trembled. How was he merely a thirteen or fourteen year old boy? Li Qiye was clearly an evil butcher! Li Qiye didn't need to say a second sentence, these disciples immediately rushed out of the Cleansing Jade Peak.

Chapter 64 : God of War Formula (2)

Even Sectional Leader Zhou, who was lying on the ground, found strength from an unknown source, and he tumbled out of the Cleansing Jade Peak.

“First brother, yo-you should run away.”

After the law enforcement group, along with Sectional Leader Zhou, had escaped, the Luo Feng Hua group also regained their wits and immediately knew that this would be trouble. Killing sectional leaders and a protector – this matter, regardless of which sect it happened at, would be a huge crime that was punishable by death!

“Escape, why do I have to escape?”

Li Qiye nonchalantly said. His current appearance didn’t look like he had just killed people, it was exactly as if he just did some tiny trivial things.

“But, yo-you just killed Protector Hu and his group.”

Luo Feng Hua and his group felt fear and trepidation in the face of a disaster. At this moment, they finally realized what a vicious person was like. Luo Feng Hua’s heart was pounding; fortunately for him, that day when he had challenged his first brother, first brother didn’t care. Otherwise, the consequences would have been inconceivable! First brother killed protectors and sectional leaders

like they were nothing; for him to kill just a disciple, it was not a big deal.

“This is called self-defense, not murder.”

Li Qiye smilingly said.

The Cleansing Jade Peak disciples suddenly became silent. A calamity was about to come and the punishment was an inescapable death, yet first brother was still acting as if nothing had happened.

At this point, Li Qiye looked at Tu Bu Yu and said:

“Your God’s Fist was excellent.”

An unforgettable memory for Li Qiye, regarding the God of War Formula, appeared in his mind. Unexpectedly, Tu Bu Yu was practicing the God of War Formula! This was outside of Li Qiye’s expectations.

“Of course not, of course not. Compared to the immortal techniques of first brother, my ability is like an insignificant worm’s.”

Tu Bu Yu maintained his kind and cheerful smile while replying.

Li Shuangyan’s face became serious. Today, the God of War Formula might have been forgotten by the Cleansing Incense

Ancient Sect, or maybe they have never heard of it. However, she had heard of a legend. In his youth, Immortal Emperor Min Ren practiced the God of War Formula. He used this technique throughout his life. Moreover, this formula was rumored to be a renowned ancient method from the past; it was extremely heaven defying.

For unknown reasons, after Immortal Emperor Min Ren had shouldered the Heaven's Will and became an Immortal Emperor, he didn't pass down this formula. Out of all of Min Ren's disciples, none have practiced this technique.

Immortal Emperor Min Ren had even passed down his Heaven's Will secret techniques to his disciples and left them in the sect, but he never chose to pass down the God of War Formula; this matter left everyone perplexed.

Regarding Tu Bu Yu's ambiguous attitude, Li Qiye only smiled and said:

“The God of War Formula is fine, the God Slaughtering Formula is also fine, but your cultivation is not important. What is important is... Don't stand in my way, otherwise, death without mercy!”

“First brother said too much.”

Tu Bu Yu hurriedly said:

“First brother is wise and powerful like a god, your talents exceed the sky. This little brother has always wanted to be your heavenly thunder, and I will strike whenever you command. One word from older brother, and I will rush into the fires and smoke without any hesitation.”

Tu Bu Yu’s words rendered the Cleansing Jade Peak’s disciples speechless. Tu Bu Yu was clearly much, much older than Li Qiye, he could even be the grandfather of Li Qiye, but his ass kissing ability was without equal.

“I originally thought that Nan Huai Ren’s ability to ass kiss was matchless, but today, it seems like Nan Huai Ren has met his match.”

Li Qiye looked at Tu Bu Yu. In reality, to him, whether Tu Bu Yu’s words were true or not was not of importance.

Hearing Li Qiye’s words, Tu Bu Yu didn’t become angry and maintained his amicable smile, which caused others to be unable to predict his mysterious intentions.

“Traitor, accept your death!”

At this time, an angry roar exploded throughout the entire Cleansing Jade Peak. A gigantic hand traversed the heavens and came crashing down. It seemed capable of crushing the entire Cleansing Jade Peak into dust.

Cao Xiong had rushed to the scene after hearing about his disciples' deaths. His fiery rage soared and he hurried to the Cleansing Jade Peak in order to behead Li Qiye. Cao Xiong was like a furious lion with imposing momentum, his every strand of energy made others incapable to even breathe.

Cao Xiong's huge palm swatted downwards, carrying the power of tens of millions of Jun. This one palm could smash the entirety of the Cleansing Jade Peak! A Named Hero was still a Named Hero after all, and at this level, one stomp would cause the grand earth to shake three times! This was a lord of an entire region!

Cao Xiong's gigantic hand covered the whole sky. The Cleansing Jade Peak disciples lost their colors; their faces became pale and were without any signs of blood. An angry Named Hero could cause blood to flow for one thousand miles. One palm from a Named Hero was enough to destroy mountains and rivers.

“Open...”

Hearing the roar, Li Shuangyan, who was standing beside Li Qiye, immediately made her move. In a flash, Li Shuangyan was unyieldingly solitary; her whole body was like a flourishing lotus flower, with each of its petals being blindingly translucent. The worse part was that the petals were gigantic and were enough to uphold the heavens. The moment the lotus flower was in full bloom, it could support the nine heavens and ten earths.

“Bang!”

Li Shuangyan didn't make any visible movements, but she was able to easily deflect the gigantic palm from Cao Xiong; the palm could no longer reach the ground.

Li Shuangyan, with a natural born Pure Crystal Physique – one of the twenty four Emperor Physiques – had already reached grand completion after cultivation. She currently practiced one of the eighteen Saint Physiques, which was the Pure Jade Physique, with a little bit of success!

The Pure Crystal Physique when reaching grand completion could rank up into the Pure Jade Physique. Once this physique appeared it would be like a lotus in full bloom, and it utilized an incredibly powerful stance to obstruct Cao Xiong's one palm.

“Princess Li, this is our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect punishing a traitor, do not intervene!”

His disciples were killed, how could Cao Xiong remain without rage?

Even though Cao Xiong didn't dare to completely turn against Li Shuangyan, his speech was still full of confidence.

Li Shuangyan still hadn't said a word. Her blooming lotus physique blocked Cao Xiong, which had reddened his complexion to the point of shivering anger. As a Named Hero, he was still no match for Li Shuangyan.

One couldn't blame Cao Xiong for being weak, it was just that Li Shuangyan was too strong. Within the younger generation she was renowned; while even throughout the entire Mortal Emperor World, she would still be considered strong.

“The Nine Saint Demon Gate's reputation is naturally well deserved.”

At this moment, a cold voice spoke up. He took one step forward and the constellations immediately changed directions. His blood energy immediately enveloped the entire Cleansing Jade Peak. His Royal Noble pressure was like a sharp sword that caused pain and soreness to the bystanders.

“Guest adviser...!”

The Cleansing Jade Peak disciples were frightened, as one disciple involuntarily cried out.

Guest Adviser Dong Sheng Long: the number one character of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. As an experienced Royal Noble, the moment he stood forward, countless amounts of people drew cold breaths. At the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, a Royal Noble was truly unbeatable. That was not even mentioning that Dong Sheng Long was an experienced Royal Noble and even his title was bestowed upon him by the Mortal Emperor! It was exceedingly difficult to see through him.

Dong Sheng Long walked step by step, with the grand Dao crying out harmoniously. Under his feet was an interwoven grand Dao

formation, it carried the momentum of mountains and rivers, as well as the boundless world's spirit energy from under the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. This combination of powers pressed down upon Li Shuangyan; this vast energy was like the rolling vast ocean and an earthen bull, which capsized its gigantic body and caused the entire Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect to be caught up in its shocking momentum.[1]

Li Shuangyan's elegant countenance sent out bleak coldness, with her slender arms gently motioning. Under one dragon slaying technique, she had successfully blocked the advancing formation of Dong Sheng Long.

“Bang.”

Under this technique, the force went straight downwards into the Cleansing Jade Peak, which caused a chasm to form in the ground.

Dong Sheng Long's eyes couldn't help but become cold. After one move, he realized that he had met a worthy foe. What was frightening him inside was that Li Shuangyan was so young yet was an aspiring Royal Noble; this aptitude was too terrifying. One had to be aware that the difficult Dao era had just come to an end not too long ago, yet Li Shuangyan was already aspiring to be a Royal Noble; this talent could cause others to tremble.

“Brother Dong, what matter is worth troubling you!”

At this moment, a profound sound loudly rang out. Immediately

afterwards, five people came down from the sky. This was the first elder along with the other four elders!

The first elder had arrived, and Dong Sheng Long recovered his step and slowly said:

“Brother Gu, your traitor is fierce, I was only interested in helping your sect.”

Cao Xiong could come here, so the first elder had also received the news from a disciple. He knew an important matter had happened, so he brought the other elders along as well.

At this point, Li Shuangyan withdrew her physique's stance, and the lotus flower disappeared. Cao Xiong severely shouted:

“Traitor, accept your death!”

His yelling finished, and he sent one strike that was aimed to behead Li Qiye.

Regarding Cao Xiong's attack, Li Qiye didn't even twitch his brows once.

The first elder immediately stopped Cao Xiong, and he gravely said:

“Little brother Cao, don't be hasty. Let us hear what Li Qiye has

to say.”

“Older brother, he is a subordinate that offended his superiors, killed sectional leaders, and murdered a protector. These are sins of cheating one’s own master and destroying his ancestors; what else is there to say? This animal must be decapitated in order to cleanse the sect.”

Cao Xiong angrily yelled.

First Elder maintained his deep tone and said:

“Brother Cao, right or wrong, the sect will have an answer. If he had committed a great sin, then why do you feel the need to rush and take his life? Wait until a verdict is available, executing him then wouldn’t be too late.”

“Brother Gu, this person is vicious. Not only is he ruthless and cold-blooded, but he killed his own sect members. Moreover he conspired with outsiders, betrayed the sect, and planned to cause chaos. If this person is allowed to live for one more day, then it would bring greater risk to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.”

Dong Sheng Long, who was standing to the side, assisted Cao Xiong.

“This matter of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, when is it time for an outsider to point their finger!”

The moment when a storm was looming, Li Qiye, as the main character, was acting leisurely without any care. He continued:

“The business of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect is not up to an outsider to run their big mouth!”

Li Qiye gazed directly at Dong Sheng Long; he was clearly provoking him.

Li Qiye's words frightened Luo Feng Hua's group. First, he killed the sectional leaders and a protector, and now he was provoking a Royal Noble adviser; this was courting death! Luo Feng Hua's group was shocked and thought: didn't first brother think the matter was grave enough already? He was even going against Dong Sheng Long.

“If I am an outsider, then what about princess Li standing beside you?”

At this moment, Dong Sheng Long's gaze exuded a chilling aura that pressured others, and he coldly said:

“Junior, you conspire with an outsider, plotting to cause chaos, and still have the nerves to talk big?”

“Where did this old turtle come from to grumble in front of my presence?”

Li Qiye was utterly tired of Dong Sheng Long's appearance, and

he said:

“The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and the Nine Saint Demon Gate are in-laws, this is no secret. Princess Li is still considered part of our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect! What now? Our in-laws relationship is causing the Heavenly God Sect to feel pressured, so they sent a damned old man like you to break up the relationship of our two sects? Therefore it is clear that you, this old turtle, dispatched the traitors in our sect and wanted to murder me and destroy our marital pact.”

Chapter 65 : Causing Clouds And Rains by Turning One's Hand (1)

Regarding Li Qiye's statement, Dong Sheng Long's eyes became severe, and he deeply shouted:

“A bunch of nonsense and rubbish; you are spewing blood on my good name!”[1]

Li Qiye was unperturbed as could be; he faced towards the first elder and the other four elders, and he then said:

“Elders, my words are the truth. If our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and the Nine Saint Demon Gate becomes in-laws, who would be the most unwilling to see this? If one wants to break the marital pact, the most direct and effective method would be to slay me on false charges. What is cheating one's master and killing one's ancestor? What is disrespectful to seniors? These are all false accusations. The true goal is to destroy our two sect's marriage.”

These small schemes to Li Qiye, who had lived for countless years, were simply insufficient to reach the apex. If Dong Sheng Long didn't come, then he would need to waste his breath to justify everything. However, once Dong Sheng Long had actually arrived, this was the same as giving him a living target.

Li Qiye leisurely and comfortably said:

“Elders, protectors; I’m afraid the one wanting to betray the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect is not me. It is an entirely different person. There is a person here that conspires with the Heavenly God Sect... That person conspires both internally and externally in order to hurt and massacre disciples.”

At this point, since it was such a big matter, the other protectors were all rushing over. Now, the entire upper echelon of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect were gathered at the Cleansing Jade Peak.

Cao Xiong reddened with anger and loudly yelled:

“Traitor! Spewing blood on others is an unforgivable crime; one that can’t be redeemed even with ten thousand deaths!”

He wanted to cross over towards Li Qiye, but he was stopped by Elder Gu.

Cao Xiong furiously yelled:

“Older brother, could it be that you really want to protect a traitor that killed his own sect members?!”

At this moment, First Elder Gu Tie Shou’s expression became cold, and he unemotionally said:

“Little brother, the sect’s elders and protectors are all here. Regarding this matter, right or wrong, black or white, everyone

will discuss towards a conclusion! Why is there a need for little brother to be so hasty at this moment?!”

First Elder was not a fool. This matter was strange, and it was seemingly unordinary. Dong Sheng Long wouldn't bring this matter upon himself! At this moment, First Elder's complexion greatly soured.

Yet, at this time, Li Qiye interrupted and unhurriedly said:

“Elder Cao is in such a rush to kill me for the sake of silencing. Elder Cao and this old fellow Dong conspired together to do evil things. They planned to murder me, and destroy the marriage between the two sects. Respect to all of our elders and protectors, right or wrong, black or white, I trust that everyone's eyes are as bright as the snow; who is loyal and who is traitorous? It is easy to distinguish after one look.”

“Animal, since you are spewing blood on others, you cannot be left alive!”

Dong Sheng Long deafeningly roared, and, in the blink of an eye, his blood energy soared to the sky; his Royal Noble pressure ran rampant, aiming for Li Qiye.

“Brother Dong, please have some self control!”

At this moment, First Elder Gu Tie Shou's eyes shone fierce with killing intent. In this moment, the normally peaceful First Elder

had become a different person!

Dong Sheng Long's Royal Noble pressure hadn't decreased, but rather it increased; a "Bang Bang" sound reverberated in the air. The frightening true energy floated above his head like the unyielding roar of a dragon. His Royal Noble pressure caused all of the protectors and elders to lose their colors.

First Elder Gu Tie Shou scowled coldly; his blood energy immediately surged, and the sound of his longevity blood crashed against the shore, like a gigantic ancient thunderous Ming. The moment when his blood energy soared, there was the sound of a Kun Peng screaming. In the Fate Palace of the first elder, a Kun Peng jumped outside. The Kun Peng covered the sky, and it antagonized mother earth itself. At this moment, the body of First Elder had a continuous and powerful Royal Noble's pressure!

Royal Noble; that's right, First Elder Gu Tie Shou was indeed a Royal Noble. This matter not only shocked the disciples, but it even shocked Elder Sun's group. Cao Xiong especially squinted his eyes!

Right now, Gu Tie Shou was meeting Dong Sheng Long; each step was creating a new world. The Kun Peng floating on the peak of his head seemingly wanted to crack the earth and smash the sky. In the presence of a Kun Peng's heavenly pressure, all existences were its devout worshippers!

Everyone didn't expect First Elder Gu to be a hidden expert. Everyone had thought that he was just a Named Hero; a peak Named Hero at best. They didn't believe that his true strength was

that of a Royal Noble!

Right then Dong Sheng Long, as an experienced Royal Noble, immediately changed his expression. As both of them were Royal Nobles, he felt a certain sense of threat because Elder Gu practiced an Emperor merit law. On top of this, it was the strongest Emperor merit law left behind by Immortal Emperor Min Ren: the Kun Peng's Six Variants! This was the core Emperor merit law of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, and it was a great threat to Dong Sheng Long.

“Good, good, good! Brother Gu is very secretive with his power. It causes others to misunderstand! Today, it seems like I have meddled in others business, and my kindness is being treated as being two-faced! If this is the case, then this Dong will first take my leave!”[2]

Dong Sheng Long's eyes sunk. After speaking, he turned around and left.

Dong Sheng Long was a clever man. He knew that the current situation was disadvantageous to him. If he remained here any longer, he would be trapped inside. It was better to take a step back!

Cao Xiong's expression was hard to look at to the extreme. First Elder's hidden strength was able to repel Dong Sheng Long. This situation suddenly became much worse for him.

At this moment, Li Qiye casually said.

“It seems like there is someone who felt guilty and ran away first.”

This sudden reversal left Luo Feng Hua's group to be dumbfounded. What was called blocking the fierce waves? What was called repelling the powerful enemies with words? They finally experienced it today! First brother essentially had already expected this, and he naturally was not afraid of the powerful opponents.

Cao Xiong fiercely yelled:

“Traitor! You cheat your master and kill your ancestors, yet you still dare to say nonsensical words and spew blood on others?!”

“Today, I will obtain justice for my dead disciples!”

Li Qiye watched Cao Xiong, and he slowly spoke:

“Elder Cao, master cheating and ancestors killing? I have never done such a thing. If you want to frame someone, there are plenty of ways! Maybe Elder Cao is afraid that your schemes will be revealed, so you are hastily trying to silence me?”

“Animal, with these words of yours, this great seat can immediately kill you!”

Elder Cao let out a deafening roar, and he headed towards Li Qiye to make a move.

“Little brother, calm your mind; don’t be angry!”

First Elder Gu Tie Shou let out a roar. At this moment, Gu Tie Shou had finally let loose a storm, and his Royal Noble pressure directly suppressed Cao Xiong.

Under this pressure, Cao Xiong squinted his eyes and aggressively said:

“First brother, do you truly want to protect this animal? He is killing his own sect members; if this type of disciple isn’t punished, this will render the hearts of other disciples cold. We will be shunned by others. From now on, our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect’s rules will no longer be enforced!”

Li Qiye let out a laugh, and then said:

“Elder Cao had vowed that I had killed sect members. Please tell me then: how did I kill our own sect members? If you can’t, then using your position as an elder to conspire against a disciple, what is your plan and ambition!?”

Li Qiye instead returned a blow. The elders and protectors glanced at each other. In reality, everyone felt that this matter was not so simple. Dong Sheng Long’s appearance was a hint that this was the case.

“Good, good, good... You are good for an animal with a razor sharp tongue!”

Cao Xiong coldly smiled, and he said:

“Even if you could speak lotus-like and flowery words, it doesn’t erase the fact that you killed three sectional leaders, massacred Protector Hu, and murdered Zhi’er. The evidence is as visible as the mountains; how is this not killing one’s own sect members?”

Li Qiye spoke without any signs of panic or haste:

“It could only be said that the three sectional leaders, Protector Hu, and Leng Shi Zhi had it coming; I was only acting in self-defense.”

“Good, good, good! As you can see Brother Gu, he still dares to defensively quibble! The evidence is like the mountains in front of our eyes!”

First Elder Gu Tie Shou looked at Li Qiye, and he gravely said:

“What happened? For what reasons did you kill the three sectional leaders, Protector Hu, and Leng Shi Zhi for?”

Li Qiye innocently said:

“Dear elder, I was only acting in self-defense. Protector Hu brought along the law enforcement team, and they suddenly appeared at the Cleansing Jade Peak. They suddenly wanted to make a move on me; they wanted to kill, so I could only fight back. Their reasonings and Elder Cao’s were the same. What is cheating one’s master and killing one’s ancestors? What is disrespectful? This must be a conspiracy!”

“You fart!”

His face turning red, Cao Xiong yelled:

“From the report of the law enforcement disciples, Sectional Leader Zhou asked for help, so Protector Hu and the law enforcement team went to the Cleansing Jade Peak! You... This animal with the heart of a vile serpent only wants to cause chaos. After you had been seen through, you wanted to kill and silence everyone!”

At this moment, Sectional Leader Zhou, who was hiding behind Cao Xiong, came out and said:

“Dear elders and protectors, the truth was really just like this.”

“Li Qiye wanted to conspire against me. So I, I, I asked for help. Protector Hu and the law enforcement team ran here to help, but I didn’t think that this person’s heart was vile just like a serpent... He massacred Protector Hu’s group.”

Gu Tie Shou stared at Li Qiye, and he gravely asked:

“There was an event such as this?”

At this moment, the elders and protectors couldn't help but to glance at each other. Li Qiye, an ordinary disciple, wanted to murder Sectional Leader Zhou? This matter was just a little bit unreasonable.

Li Qiye smiled, and he slowly explained:

“Elder, I don't know what this conspiracy is about. Even if it is a conspiracy, then how could Sectional Leader Zhou survived until now? I was able to kill Protector Hu; if I truly wanted to murder him, I could kill him easily like it was nothing. I spared his one life; the disciples of the Cleansing Jade Peak all saw with their own eyes. I was only teaching Sectional Leader Zhou a little lesson. I didn't think that Sectional Leader Zhou was such a bag of straws to the point that even a Yun Physique disciple like me was stronger than him. Sectional Leader Zhou's skill was not refined; you can't blame this matter on me.”

Cao Xiong gravely said:

“Nonsense, you are clearly a spy sent by another sect with hidden cultivation! You wanted to conspire and cause chaos. You was found out by Sectional Leader Zhou, so you wanted to kill and suppress his voice!”

Li Qiye smilingly said:

“Elder Cao, you are the one spewing blood on others. Ask the Cleansing Jade Peak disciples: what was the reason behind my teaching Sectional Leader Zhou a lesson? From my perspective, I’m afraid that Sectional Leader Zhou was instructed by others, and conspired against me. I have the responsibilities of Dao instruction for the Cleansing Jade Peak. It could be said that I was nervous with trepidation. For Dao instruction, I exhausted much blood and sweat, but Sectional Leader Zhou was definite in his accusation that I was teaching the devil arts! He said that I brought the devil Dao to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect! Since he insulted my sweat and blood’s effort, as long as I have a single drop of courageous blood in me, how could I endure this?”

“You clearly brought the devil arts into the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect! I was afraid that the disciples would succumb to the devil Dao. In order to save them from your poisoning, I had to stop them.”

Sectional Leader Zhou contended with absolute confidence.

Li Qiye loudly laughed, and he said:

“Whether it is the devil Dao or not, everyone’s hearts know the truth. One person can lie, but the Cleansing Jade Peak’s three hundred disciples cannot all lie. Whether I was teaching the devil Dao or not, dear elders and protectors, don’t be hesitant to ask the disciples a little bit!”

Hearing Li Qiye's words, Gu Tie Shou examined the disciples currently present. He randomly called for one disciple and inquired:

“First brother taught you guys what method?”

Chapter 66 : Causing Clouds And Rains by Turning One's Hand (2)

The disciple busily said:

“My respect to the elder; first brother did not teach me any new methods. First brother was simply only deducing the defects in my Jade Spiral Merit Law and Flying Moth Swordplay that were present during my inception to the sect.”

“Repeat what your first brother had said regarding the methods, so I can hear a little of what he said.”

This disciple didn't dare to be disrespectful; he hastily recited the merit laws Li Qiye had revised, as well as the individual corrections in the techniques to First Elder.

Having heard the words of this disciple, First Elder Gu Tie Shou couldn't help but change his expression. In reality, the first elder wasn't the only one that was astonished, but the other elders and protectors were as well.

The first elder didn't dare to believe what the disciples had spoke:

“This is truly the method your first brother had said?”

The disciple sincerely replied:

“My respect to the elder; this disciple doesn’t dare to lie, thousands genuine innumerable truths.”

Gu Tie Shou couldn’t believe it. After he recovered from his astonishment, he picked a few random disciples from the three hundred. These disciples recited their merit laws and flawed techniques. This caused Gu Tie Shou and the elders, as well as the protectors, to be shocked.

Elder Qian, one of the six elders, inconceivably said:

“How is this a foundational merit law? Ah! This is an entirely complete grand Dao guiding principle!”

Elder Wu, who was shocked, also said:

“I have cultivated for more than one thousand years and have read the Jade Spirit Merit Law no less than one hundred times, but I have never thought that it was possible to understand this merit law like this. This interpretation, I’m afraid this is the ultimate profound truths of the Jade Spirit Merit Law, and this is the true essence of this method.”

Also supporting Li Qiye, Elder Sun said:

“If these were an evil sect’s devil Dao, then our practices must be the real evil sect’s devil Dao. I’m afraid there is no one in this

world that could create a foundational merit law and make it so mysterious with such an imposing grand Dao!”

This was not the first time Elder Sun had experienced the magic of Li Qiye; however, when he had heard these interpretations, he was still shaken. Elder Sun supported Li Qiye the most out of any other elders.

Even more elders and protectors were at a loss for words. Li Qiye’s interpretations of the foundational merit laws were mysteriously refined ten thousand times in a manner that lacked any defects. Li Qiye’s pointers on the flawed techniques could be said to hit the mark every time. They cultivated for hundreds and even thousands of years, but they still couldn’t interpret merit laws to this level. Today, they had finally found out that even the most basic foundational merit laws could be understood to this stage. Before, they thought they knew the essentials of the merit laws, but in reality, what they knew was only the skin and fur of the foundational merit laws.

A protector emotionally said:

“If I could have understood the Jade Spirit Merit Law to this level that year, then it would have been enough for my entire life!”

It took a while for Gu Tie Shou to regain his thoughts. Everyone knew that Li Qiye had a Mortal Physique, a Mortal Life Wheel, and a Mortal Fate Palace, yet he was able to deduced such fine interpretations. No one would ever believe this! Even a genius with talents as high as the sky still wouldn’t be able to have deductions at this level! It was unreachable!

Gu Tie Shou emotionally stared at Li Qiye, and doubtfully asked:

“These are really your meditation experiences?”

Li Qiye smiled, and he said:

“Dear elder: this is merely one tiny part of my understandings; this is just a little experience, and it can’t be considered profound.”

Li Qiye having said this caused First Elder Gue Tie Shou to suddenly choke on his words. If this was only a “tiny part of understanding and a little experience”, then the word genius was not enough to describe him. He could only be called “demon’s spawn”!

“Older brother, it seems like we had missed a genius. Li Qiye’s perception is extremely frightening. Some time ago, I had a little problem with my cultivation, and it was Li Qiye who gave me valuable advice.”

At this point, Elder Sun also revealed his matter in order to support Li Qiye.

The elders and protectors couldn’t help but become amazed after they heard Elder Sun’s story. This truly was unfathomable.

Elder Qian said with a changed expression:

“There was a rumor that a person’s Physique, Life Wheel, and Fate Palace were not the only criterion to measure talent. I didn’t believe it and considered it to be a load of crap. It seems like today, the ancient wise men didn’t fool me.”

Elder Wu of the six elders looked at Sectional Leader Zhou, and, at this moment, he said:

“Sectional Leader Zhou, if this was an evil sect’s devil Dao then there is no correct path in this world. If you were confused, don’t be confused to this extreme.”

“I...”

The sudden reversal of the situation caused Sectional Leader Zhou to be unable to react.

Li Qiye, at this point, said with indistinction:

“I’m afraid this wasn’t confusion, but a scheme to get rid of me. To Sectional Leader Zhou, what I instructed was not important. The important thing was to eliminate me.”

Gu Tie Shou’s eyes became fierce; his pressure immediately suppressed Sectional Leader Zhou, and he gravely said:

“Sectional Leader Zhou, what is going on?”

Li Qiye's understanding of the foundational merit laws alone was an extremely valuable treasure to the declining Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, and, at this time, Gu Tie Shou absolutely wanted to protect Li Qiye no matter the circumstances. He knew that Li Qiye was important not only because of the marital pact, but also because of his profound knowledge.

“I, I, I...”

Sectional Leader Zhou, at the moment, couldn't speak half a word, and he couldn't help but to stare at Cao Xiong.

Cao Xiong knew the situation was not good, so he immediately said:

“Sectional Leader Zhou was so foolish, and he couldn't even see through the profound merit laws! This is worthy of punishment, but the traitor remains to be rebellious against the Dao. He killed the three sectional leaders, Protector Hu, and Zhi'er! This is absolutely unforgivable!”

To Cao Xiong, today was the day where he lost his money and only became ill. Not only could he not kill Li Qiye, but both of his disciples were killed. Especially Leng Shi Zhi, who was the disciple meant to inherit his legacy. With such a highly valued disciple being killed, it made his heart bleed.

Li Qiye leisurely retorted:

“If I truly conspired to betray, then this was a crime worthy of ten thousand deaths. Unfortunately, I am a victim. Originally, it was Sectional Leader Zhou who couldn’t tell black from white, and he accused me of bringing evil sect devil Daos into the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. After this, it was Protector Hu who suddenly brought a big group of law enforcement disciples that wanted to join the fray and kill me. They didn’t give me a chance to defend myself; this was definitely an evil plan...”

“There were too many coincidences in this matter. Isn’t this just trying to push me towards my demise? Why were Elder Cao and old man Dong together? The two of you were even faster than the other elders. Just like before, you two didn’t differentiate black from white, and you also wanted to kill me. Isn’t this just wanting to kill me before I could talk? Elder Cao, are you not conspiring with the Heavenly God Sect, ah? Elder Cao, you betrayed the sect and conspired with outsiders. This is a capital crime, infamous throughout eternity!”

Li Qiye carefully conveyed, causing the disciples of the Cleansing Jade Peak to be frozen. First brother easily reversed the situation. Such meticulous and articulate plannings was just too dreadful. First brother’s intelligence was as vast as the sea.

Li Shuangyan, as an outsider observing the situation, was even more moved. Li Qiye killed the three leaders and Protector Hu without any restraint like it was just some minor inconvenience. Currently, his frank and confident explanation easily reversed the situation. This was simply one palm covering the clouds in the sky and one fist calming the torrential rains. Moreover, from the beginning to end, he was carefree. This matter to him was akin to

eating breakfast, leaving Li Shuangyan horrified.

Li Shuangyan realized that Li Qiye was not simply mysterious. Today, she witnessed his calculating means when dealing with others; he was killing without seeing blood.

Even Tu Bu Yu, who was standing to the side, had his eyes flash. Li Qiye's actions today, even after living for a thousand years, astonished him.

In reality, this trivial planning was essentially nothing to Li Qiye. Back when he schemed against the whole world; that was a truly grand plan.

“Animal, your death draws near, and you are still running your mouth...”

Cao Xiong was shivering from anger. This plan was formulated by his own hand, but right now, Li Qiye had put his king in checkmate. How could he not have his hands tied?

First Elder Gu Tie Shou coldly said:

“Little brother Cao, there are many doubts and unknowns. To say that Li Qiye is a traitor at this moment is just too simplistic.”

The thing he didn't want to see the most was Cao Xiong and Dong Sheng Long being together, but that was obvious at this point.

Aside from Gu Tie Shou, the other elders and protectors were all also biased for Li Qiye, but they didn't have any condemning evidence; they couldn't say much.

“Old brother wouldn't really trust this animal, right?”

Cao Xiong was vomiting blood from anger. All of his planning came to nothing, and his two disciples died in vain!

Gu Tie Shou coldly said:

“At the very least, there are some dubious suspicions in this matter.”

Without evidence, he couldn't punish Cao Xiong for conspiring with Dong Sheng Long, but this matter left him extremely unsatisfied.

Cao Xiong retorted severely:

“Good, good, Protector Hu and the others died for no reason then!”

At this point, he unleashed another hidden card, and he gravely spoke:

“Even if Sectional Leader Zhou was confused, this animal having

hidden intentions is the hard truth. This animal secretly stole the Kun Peng's Six Variants!"

"Stole the Kun Peng's Six Variants!"

The protectors and elders that were currently present were shocked.

First Elder Gu Tie Shou's face became tightly constricted, and he glared intensely at Li Qiye. The Kun Peng's Six Variants was the core Emperor merit law of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, and it was also the only Emperor merit law left behind that wasn't incomplete! This matter was of grave importance, and this couldn't be neglected.

Gu Tie Shou stared at Li Qiye, and he asked with a serious tone:

"Is this the truth?"

Regarding the Kun Peng's Six Variants, Gu Tie Shou couldn't afford to not be careful.

Li Qiye asked in a very innocent manner:

"What is the Kun Peng's Six Variants?"

"Elder, don't be fooled by him."

Sectional Leader Zhou found a chance to tie the board, so he loudly exclaimed:

“I saw with my own eyes his usage of the Heavenly Transformation to escape from the Thirty Six Celestial Deities Sword formation of nephew Leng. These are thousands of genuine innumerable truths!”

“Elders, are you talking about this?”

At this point, inside the Fate Palace of Li Qiye, a Kun Peng leapt out. The Kun Peng was as large as a fist and was extremely vibrant. The moment it jumped up, floating unstable magical runes gently followed the Kun Peng’s swaying back and forth. The galaxy rotated and brought the spectators to another universe. Each transformation of the Kun Peng was profoundly abstruse, with even the elders not being able to understand them!

Chapter 67 : Ten Violet Sun Merit Law (1)

“The Kun Peng’s Six Variants...”

Seeing this scene, the elders and protectors currently present couldn’t help but become greatly alarmed!

In the entire Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, only First Elder Gu Tie Shou had access to the complete Kun Peng’s Six Variants. When he was practicing it, it was the previous sect master that personally granted permission with the agreement of the other Grand Elders.

Besides First Elder Gu Tie Shou’s complete version, Elder Zhou also practiced the first three transformations of the Kun Peng’s Six Variants.

That year, Elder Zhou risked his life and achieved a great contribution for the sect, and, with the unanimous agreement from the elders and protectors, he was allowed to practice the first three transformations.

To the current sect, the Kun Peng’s Six Variants was an integral secret; even the elders couldn’t approach the method without the agreement of the upper echelon of the sect.

It was stored in the most safeguarded and secretive location in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. The location was unknown to all with the exception of the six elders.

After seeing this merit law in action, First Elder Gu Tie Shou's countenance was shaken. He practiced a complete version, so he had a higher understanding regarding it than anyone else. Seeing the Kun Peng floating up and down above Li Qiye's head, his heart was incomparably stirred; Li Qiye's Kun Peng was even more profound than his. This meant that regarding this method, Li Qiye had traveled farther than he had; this matter was inconceivable.

The Kun Peng's Six Variants was one of the strongest Emperor merit laws in the sect; it was extremely profound. He immersed himself for hundreds of years in this method before learning the six transformations. He wouldn't dare to say that he truly grasped the real mysteries of this method! However, this novice disciple was well-versed in its mysteries.

“How did you cultivate the Kun Peng's Six Variants?”

Gu Tie Shou kept staring at Li Qiye. At this moment, his eyes were extremely frightening with even a hint of killing intent being revealed.

Before, Gu Tie Shou's intention was to protect Li Qiye no matter what. Currently, if Li Qiye's Kun Peng's Six Variants was stolen from the sect, then he would have engaged in a taboo of the sect. Without any decisions from the other elders and protectors, he would still eliminate Li Qiye!

To Gu Tie Shou, if he secretly practiced any other methods, there was room for discussion. The Kun Peng's Six Variants was too

crucial to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, however.

“Stealing the core Emperor merit law, kill him without mercy...”

Cao Xiong was secretly ecstatic from seeing the change of the tides, and he said to Elder Gu:

“Older brother, this person cannot be left alone. Even one second longer, and he’ll bring more danger to our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!”

Gu Tie Shou ignored Cao Xiong, and directly asked Li Qiye:

“Qi Ye, how did you practice this method?”

Li Qiye opened with a smile, and he carefully spoke:

“Elder is calling this method the Kun Peng’s Six Variants?”

Cao Xiong continued to add wind to the fire by saying:

“Still playing the fool; older brother, we should first capture him, then him torture after!”

Gu Tie Shou suddenly snapped towards Cao Xiong and said:

“Shut your mouth!”

At this moment, Gu Tie Shou's entire body was akin to a fierce lion with frightening pressure; his heavenly aura burned. As the first brother, there was a line of respect that couldn't be overstepped.

Gu Tie Shou's sudden outburst caused Cao Xiong, the other elders, and the protectors to feel that his presence could not be provoked!

“Qi Ye, speak; how did you cultivate the Kun Peng's Six Variants?”

At this moment, Gu Tie Shou thunderously roared; this was the first time Gu Tie Shou had become angry. He was frighteningly serious.

Li Qiye slowly spoke:

“This matter began with the Kun Peng's Minor Six Forms.”

Regarding the heavenly aura of Gu Tie Shou, he was not afraid. He paused for a moment, and then he continued:

“That day when elder agreed to let me practice the Kun Peng's Minor Six Forms after my selection of the manuals, I immediately researched this method. During my meditation, I inadvertently fell asleep...”

“... At that moment, I experienced a strange dream. I dreamt of an old grandpa; this old grandpa told me our destinies were fated together, so he taught me a merit law close to the Kun Peng’s Minor Six Forms. I didn’t know the name of this merit law. Just now, since the elder had told me, I have finally learned its name...”

Li Qiye continuously spoke as if it was the truth; he made the elders and protectors, that were currently present, feel as if his story was too outrageous.

Cao Xiong yelled:

“Nonsense, there is no such ridiculous thing in this world! This story of Dao instruction in your dream could only fool a three year old child!”

Gu Tie Shou didn’t pay attention to Cao Xiong; he was still staring at Li Qiye. He then gravely said:

“What did this old grandpa look like?”

“Well, it was in my dream; I can’t remember it very well.”

Li Qiye tilted his head, pretended to ponder for a while, and then he finally described the image of Immortal Emperor Min Ren.

In this world, no one was more clear than him on what Immortal Emperor Min Ren looked like in his old age. He said a few lines, and this was enough to have Min Ren sketched out.

From Li Qiye's description, the group of elders were shocked. There was a statue of Min Ren at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, but this was made from the hands of others; it did not contain his godly presence.

However, the sect had secretly hidden a portrait of Immortal Emperor Min Ren. This portrait was personally painted by Min Ren. It was not just a simple painting as it carried the emperor's power and the immortal spirit of Immortal Emperor Min Ren. It was the bulwark treasure of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; when this portrait was respectfully summoned, it could expel powerful enemies.

This portrait could not be used carelessly. If activated often, then its power would greatly decrease; the emperor's power and immortal spirit would gradually disappear. Thus, unless it was a sect-destroying calamity, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect would not easily utilize it.

The six elders had all seen this portrait. The emperor aura of the Patriarch had left them an unerasable impression. Currently, with Li Qiye's few lines, they immediately realized that he described the heavenly aura of the Patriarch. Unless one had seen this portrait, they couldn't possibly describe the heavenly aura of the Patriarch like this.

Hearing Li Qiye's vivid details of the heavenly aura of Immortal Min Ren like this caused Gu Tie Shou's group to be shaken; could it really be that the patriarch had appeared in his dream?

In the end, First Elder issued this command:

“All the other disciples take leave; protectors and elders stay behind. Without my command, no disciple can come closer.”

After the departure of the disciples, only the protectors and elders remained on the scene. The atmosphere of the yard intensified.

At this moment, First Elder Gu Tie Shou had quarantined this location; no one was allowed to come close.

“Bring out your Kun Peng’s Six Variants in your dream so that I and Elder Zhou can see it for a bit.”

Finally, the first elder said with a deep tone.

At this time, Cao Xiong was extremely discontented, so he said:

“First brother, you wouldn’t really believe this irrational matter, right?”

Gu Tie Shou stared at Cao Xiong as Cao Xiong gravely said:

“This matter is definitely this animal secretly stealing the Kun Peng’s Six Variants!”

“The hidden location, aside from the six of us, is known by who? If one wants to open that place, brother Cao should know the entire process. Without our permission, how could others open it? It would take a Virtuous Paragon to personally come and use brute force to open it. Otherwise, who could take out the manual? Whether the manual is still there or not, we know the truth in our hearts!”

Elder Sun also seriously spoke:

“That is right; if that place was breached by others, our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect would already be in danger. Currently, we are fine without any losses; Brother Cao, do you really think that Li Qiye has the ability to steal the Kun Peng’s Six Variants from that location? Unless you are implying that First Brother secretly taught Li Qiye this method!”

Cao Xiong bitterly said:

“This little brother doesn’t dare to say that!”

Even if he wanted to make this implication, it was still an impossibility. The other elders and protectors wouldn’t believe in such an allusion.

Eventually, Li Qiye silently wrote down the incantations of the Kun Peng’s Six Variants. He also added his own profound knowledge.

This copy of the merit law, only First Elder and Elder Zhou were allowed to read it; with Zhou only being able to see the first three transformations. During their examinations, Gu Tie Shou and Elder Zhou were both surprised to see that this was not only a complete merit law, but it was also encompassed by mysterious truths that were more profound than their previous understandings!

To be able to understand to this level, not to mention just them, but even the Grand Elders from the past wouldn't be able to! To be able to understand to this level and have this accumulation of experience would be enough to reach the Virtuous Paragon rank!

At this moment, both First Elder and Elder Zhou were frightened. Maybe it was true that the Patriarch had reached out to Li Qiye in his dream? Otherwise, how would one explain this matter?

First Elder and Elder Zhou didn't say a word, and so the elders and protectors could not infer the current situation.

They glanced at each other; maybe this type of Dao instruction in one's dream was a real thing. However, this was so irrational and difficult to believe.

Finally, Gu Tie Shou asked Li Qiye:

“Did the old grandpa from the dream say anything else?”

Li Qiye seriously thought about it, and then he said:

“Hah, that’s right; old grandpa also said that I carry a great responsibility. In the future, the rise of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect will fall on my shoulders. Old grandpa also said that later on, if I wanted to learn even more profound merit laws, then I should use a similar merit law and call out for him. Then he might appear in my dream again...”

Cao Xiong loudly retorted:

“Ridiculous and shameless! To say that you alone could revitalize the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect...”

Gu Tie Shou interrupted Cao Xiong, and he told Li Qiye with a deep voice:

“Continue...”

Li Qiye scratched his head a couple of times, and then seriously said:

“What those similar merit laws are, I cannot understand. So recently, I am upset that I am not able to seek out old grandpa.”

At this moment, Elder Sun busily said:

“You have to call them minor Emperor merit laws!”

“You practiced the Kun Peng’s Minor Six Forms, so old grandpa taught you the Kun Peng’s Six Variants. If you practice the other minor Emperor merit laws, then maybe he will teach you other core Emperor merit laws.”

Cao Xiong coldly yelled in response:

“This matter is too ridiculous!”

“Little Brother Sun, you trust such ridiculous statements? These statements could only fool a three year old boy! Hmph, this argument cannot be proven, so he can say whatever he wants.”

Chapter 68 : Violet Yang Ten Sun (2)

“Perhaps it is possible to test this once.”

At this moment, Elder Wu, the youngest of the six elders, exclaimed:

“Let Li Qiye practice a different minor Emperor merit law; that way, we could see if he could call forth the person in his dreams again. If he could write a different core Emperor merit law down, then this is enough proof that his dreams contains Dao instruction.”

Elder Qian also agreed and said:

“This method is feasible.”

“If this works, then I’m afraid that what Li Qiye said was the truth.”

This narrative was so absurd; the elders and protectors couldn’t believe it! However, within this crazy narrative, there was a shining ray of hope for the elders and protectors of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect to grasp on to!

Currently, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was declining, and all of the other big sects were watching closely. It was like they were a flock of fat sheep that were surrounded by a pack of wolves.

To the elders and protectors, what they needed right now was a miracle; a miracle capable of reinvigorating the sect. If Patriarch Min Ren was watching from the heavens above, then maybe he would really appear in a disciple's dreams.

So, Cao Xiong paused for a moment, and then he ultimately said with a deep tone:

“If he is willing to prove it, then I would have no objections!”

“Are you willing?”

Gu Tie Shou stared at Li Qiye, and he asked in a serious manner. In reality, as the chief elder, he had experienced many winds and waves, he naturally knew that this matter was too irrational and too ridiculous; however, since he carried the burden of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, his heart yearned for such a miracle... A miracle where the Patriarch appeared in someone's dreams!

“Elders, I stand upright without the fear of having a crooked shadow. No matter what the elder's test will be, I am fearless.” [\[1\]](#)

Li Qiye's brave and confident rhetoric garnered favorable impressions from the rest of the elders and protectors.

Afterward was the selection of the merit laws. The elders glanced at each other, and, in the end, Elder Qian said:

“I believe we should pick the Violet Cloud Merit Law; regarding this matter, only Brother Wu has the most insight.”

It could be said that in the sect, Emperor merit laws were pathetically few in number. The only complete core Emperor merit law was the Kun Peng’s Six Variants, and it was also the strongest law in the sect. Outside of this, there were two other extremely formidable core Emperor merit laws. However, they were incomplete. One of these two incomplete Emperor merit laws was the Violet Yang Ten Sun Merit Law.

Even though this was the case, the elders did not dare to carelessly cultivate the two incomplete Emperor merit laws, because with one mistake, they would suffer Qi deviation – this was akin to throwing one’s entire cultivation away. So, the elders chose a Virtuous Paragon merit law instead.

Elder Wu’s first cultivation method was the Violet Cloud Merit Law – this method was too crucial to him. In the past, he wanted to cultivate the incomplete Violet Yang Ten Sun Merit Law, so he heavily researched the minor Emperor merit law. However, in the end, he realized that the incomplete Emperor merit law was too powerful, and he wouldn’t be able to cultivate it. He had no choice but to give up and cultivate a Virtuous Paragon method instead.

In order to test Li Qiye, they had to pick one of the two incomplete Emperor merit laws because Elder Wu had such a deep understanding of the Violet Yang Ten Sun Merit Law. After the elder’s deliberation, they unanimously decided to let Li Qiye cultivate the Violet Cloud Merit Law.

After the decision, Li Qiye went back to his Lonely Peak. At this moment, the six elders themselves were protecting Lonely Peak in order to watch over Li Qiye. The elders and protectors took this matter very seriously!

Cao Xiong was hell-bent on killing Li Qiye in order to avenge his two dead disciples. He wouldn't be able to sleep without obtaining this vengeance. However, he had no say in the current situation. More importantly, Cao Xiong also had a different plan, so this matter of vengeance had to take a back seat.

The six elders agreed for Li Qiye to practice the Violet Cloud Merit Law, so during this process, Li Qiye was not allowed to leave Lonely Peak; he had to only focus on cultivation.

The Violet Cloud Merit Law was only a corner of the Violet Yang Ten Sun Merit Law. This was also an Emperor merit law created by Min Ren, and even if its power was not as formidable compared to the Kun Peng's Six Variants, within the Emperor merit laws, it was still incomparably powerful.

Li Qiye understood the original form of the Violet Yang Ten Sun Merit Law more than anyone else. That year, the moment they first created this merit law, Li Qiye – as the Dark Crow – brought along Min Ren to the most dangerous of forbidden grounds, and they saw – with their own eyes – ten suns floating up and down, reenacting a grand Dao. After this scene, Min Ren was able to create this merit law.

During this entire process, Dark Crow Li Qiye gave Min Ren advice, and he helped him perfect this merit law several times

over.

During his deep slumber, the memories of this merit law were erased; however, from meticulous research of the Violet Cloud Merit Law, his previously erased memories and the profound truths of this method once again appeared in Li Qiye's mind.

Li Qiye instantly retrieved the memories of the Violet Yang Ten Sun Merit Law, but he was not in a rush to tell the elders. Days had passed, leaving the elders to become very anxious.

Day after day, month after month; at this moment, needless to mention other people, but even the elder's heart were wavering.

The elders craved for a miracle in their minds even though the matter was ridiculous; however, they truly hoped that such a matter would happen, that the sect would be watched over by the Patriarch.

“From my perspective, this animal was fooling all of us!”

Cao Xiong coldly said as he began to add wind to the fire.

Regarding Cao Xiong's instigation, Elder Wu fought back:

“Brother Cao, you appear to be too eager. This is not the last step, so how could you arbitrarily decide? It seems like Brother Cao needs to bring Li Qiye to his death just to be at ease.”

“Little Brother Wu, what do you mean by that? I am only committed to the protection of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect...”

Cao Xiong, with a grim countenance, gravely said.

“Okay, stop quarrelling. It doesn’t hurt to wait!”

First Elder Gu Tie Shou interjected the two of them, and he coldly said.

Finally, after three months had passed, Li Qiye came out from his small courtyard, excitedly saying:

“Got it, got it, got it...”

“Really?”

After hearing these words, all of the elders at this time had forgotten about their statuses, and they immediately rushed in! Even Cao Xiong couldn’t suppress this urge.

Li Qiye wrote the method down really well, and he handed it to First Elder. He then said:

“Elder, this is the method the old grandpa in my dream was teaching me. Is this the Violet Yang Ten Sun Merit Law that you

were talking about?”

First Elder excitedly accepted the method. In reality, the other elders were ecstatic as well, including Cao Xiong. However, he was excited for a different reason.

Eventually, the six elders personally took the method written by Li Qiye, and they carefully matched it with the incomplete merit law in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

“Truth! He spoke the truth! This is a completed copy of the Violet Yang Ten Sun Merit Law!”

After the verification, Elder Wu was too astonished. He had dreamt about cultivating this method, but it was without success. He couldn’t believe that during his lifetime, there would be a chance to see the complete Violet Yang Ten Sun Merit Law!

“This is not only the complete merit law, but it also contains mysterious interpretations. I think, outside of the Patriarch’s Dao instruction in his dream, I’m afraid that an ordinary disciple would have no chance of understanding this merit law to this level! Even a heavenly genius, given a complete merit law, wouldn’t be able to find profound truths like these!”

Finally, Elder Wu with a matchless emotional excitement said.

All of the elders were shocked; some were excited, and some were moved. This matter to them was just like a dream; this was so

ridiculous and impossible!

An elder couldn't help but exclaim.

“The blue heavens have eyes, and they pitied our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect! Our Patriarch is watching over us from the heavens, and he didn't wish to see the destruction of our sect! He had shown up in spirit to save us!!”

At this juncture, there was nothing in the world more reliable than the Dao instructions in Li Qiye's dreams!

Cao Xiong's eyes were restlessly flashing. Within the elders, he was the one to distrust this ridiculous Dao instruction in one's dreams the most; however, what if there was a one in ten thousand chance that this was the truth? This caused Cao Xiong to ponder without break.

Finally, the elders once again summoned Li Qiye. Seeing his calm expression as he sat in the seat, the elders had an unspeakable feeling in their hearts. Could it be that the Patriarch had truly chosen this disciple with a Mortal Physique, Mortal Life Wheel, and Mortal Fate Palace in front of their eyes? Otherwise, there would be no other explanation.

The elders couldn't help but to recall the Jade Spiral Merit Law; maybe Li Qiye didn't come up with it, but it was passed down to him by the Patriarch.

Whether this was the truth or not, it was no longer important to the elders. This was because they had seen a miracle. Li Qiye would be the key to the revitalization of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!

In the end, First Elder Gu Tie Shou deeply said:

“After the elder’s examination, we believe that you receiving Dao instruction in your dreams is the truth, so the Kun Peng’s Six Variants can’t be considered to be stolen by you. Also, the elders have decided that you will be allowed to practice the Violet Yang Ten Sun Merit Law.”

After living for one thousand years, this matter still felt like a dream to Gu Tie Shou. However, when it had reached this stage, he couldn’t not believe it. He hoped that this was the truth.

Li Qiye playfully smiled, and he said:

“I heard from the elders that the current Violet Yang Ten Sun Merit Law from the sect was extremely incomplete. Today, I have brought forth a complete version. I wonder, could this be considered a grand contribution or not?”

Li Qiye suddenly wanting credits caught the elders unprepared, and they had to glance at each other.

“You could say that it is a grand contribution.”

In the end, First Elder Gu Tie Shou couldn't deny this. For the sect, to find a core Emperor merit law, it was indeed a heavenly frightening contribution.

Li Qiye smilingly said:

“If you say so, then I want to make a request.”

The elders looked at each other, and the first elder nodded his head:

“We will allow for you to make a request; as long as the sect is capable, we will satisfy your desire.”

“My request is very simple. I heard that Nan Huai Ren and Protector Mo cultivate the Violet Cloud Merit Law. Since I have a grand contribution to use up, my request is for the sect to agree for them to cultivate the Violet Yang Ten Sun Merit Law!”

[\[1\]](#) First line – a morally upright man with nothing to hide won't have a crooked/slanted shadow

Chapter 69 : Scheming (1)

“Presumptuous and abusive for personal gains! This matter, the sect will never allow!”

Regarding Li Qiye’s request, the other elders remained silent; however, Cao Xiong immediately yelled.

Emperor merit laws; these were exclusive for the elders. Even a protector wouldn’t be able to practice a core Emperor merit law. Currently, a third generation disciple wanted to cultivate a core Emperor merit law... Cao Xiong was naturally discontent.

Li Qiye glanced at him, and he slowly said:

“Elder Cao, if you personally find and bring back a core Emperor merit law, not mentioning your disciples, even if your grand disciple wanted to practice this core Emperor merit law, I would still agree. Ah, I forgot, Elder Cao currently had lost your disciples, let alone a grand disciple.”

These words of Li Qiye seemingly pierced Cao Xiong; his face immediately became dark and twisted. He stood up, and he screamed:

“Little animal, do you want to die?!”

First Elder Gu Tie Shou thunderously roared:

“Little Brother Cao.”

“Qi Ye is only a little child; there is no need to stoop down to his level!”

In the past, Cao Xiong didn't think highly of Gu Tie Shou in his mind. However, now he knew that the first elder was not only a Royal Noble, but he was an experienced one at that. Moreover, he was also cultivating the Kun Peng's Six Variants which Cao Xiong dreaded facing. He definitely was not a match for Gu Tie Shou.

Cao Xiong bitterly said:

“Older Brother Gu, you are way too condoning of this animal! He sooner or later will be the calamity of our sect!”

“Children don't think before they speak; Brother Cao, you don't need to mind his words.”

At this moment, Gu Tie Shou was clearly partial towards Li Qiye. Even the other four elders were on his side; this caused Cao Xiong's heart to be hateful.

Regarding Li Qiye's request, after some deliberations by the elders, they agreed; thus, they told Li Qiye:

“Since you want to use your contribution to back this matter,

after our debate, we have decided to grant your request. Protector Mo has been loyal and with us for so long, and his loyalty is without question; he will be allowed to cultivate the Violet Yang Ten Sun Merit Law. As for Nan Huai Ren, ah, he can also cultivate it, but not now. After a few years of trials; if there aren't any problems, he will be allowed to cultivate this method."

No one could surpass Elder Wu's current cheerful mood; Protector Mo was his disciple, and Nan Huai Ren was his grand disciple. Now that they have the qualification to practice the Violet Yang Ten Sun Merit Law, as their master, how could he not be happy?

Cao Xiong's heart was full of hatred to the point of rage. Currently, he almost became an isolated loner. His disciples Protector Hu and Leng Shi Zhi both died at the hands of Li Qiye, and he regretted not being able to cut Li Qiye into pieces. However, at this important moment, Li Qiye had contributed greatly, and he became an important person, one to be heavily nurtured; he was protected by the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, so it would be difficult for him to get revenge for his disciples.

After hearing the message, Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren were left without words. At this moment, they recalled that Li Qiye had said that within a year, they would be able to cultivate the Violet Yang Ten Sun Merit Law. They didn't think this matter would come so early, it felt like a dream.

Currently, they felt that the day they chose to follow Li Qiye, it was the wisest decision they have made in their entire lives. At that moment, if other people knew about it, they would have

laughed and called them crazy. A protector following a third generation disciple, a mortal one on top of that.

Currently, through their efforts, they were reaping the results. Li Qiye had always been generous to his loyal followers!

After Nan Huai Ren had received the order, with their excitement at its peak, he and his master went to meet Li Qiye.

“Older brother, how did you do it?”

Li Qiye opened with a smile, and he said.

“It was only a small matter; it was not difficult.”

Nan Huai Ren was exceedingly ecstatic, an Emperor merit law! Ah!! And a core Emperor merit law at that!!! This would cause others to be reddened with greed. He asked:

“Older brother, you, how did you find an Emperor merit law? Was it really the Patriarch in your dreams?”

The Dao instruction within a dream was sealed off by the upper echelon of the sect. Nan Huai Ren only knew because his grand master, Elder Wu, told him about it.

Li Qiye smilingly said.

“Does lying to you do me any good?”

“I can’t repay all the favors you have done for me. As long as you command it, I will do anything you want without batting an eyelid.”

Li Qiye glared at him, and he said:

“Sucking up once again?! Humph! If you weren’t loyal to me, would I be rewarding you with an Emperor merit law?”

Being yelled at by Li Qiye, Nan Huai Ren didn’t mind, and he only laughed. As for Protector Mo, he was the type of person that was without many words, and he was not good in social politeness. He only turned towards Li Qiye and deeply bowed without saying another word.

Li Shuangyan, who was considered a maid of Li Qiye, simply maintained the cool eye of a bystander. Even till today, outside of silence, she was still silent. No matter what had happened recently, she was just watching as a spectator.

Li Qiye didn’t show amazing talents or an amazing aptitude for cultivation, but instead heaven rebelling tricks and schemes.

Being calm in any situation in order to reserve it, he suddenly became the most important resource of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. He killed five people, and he even got out of that unscathed; he also easily crushed Cao Xiong’s plot and dispelled all

dangers. He made it seem like it was as easy as turning one's hand, but in reality, it required an amazing foresight.

These experienced and resolute actions, as well as the smooth flow of procedures; this was only a thirteen year old boy? Everything this little boy did was impossible to imagine. Every step was without childish temperament; they were all like the flowing of the rivers and the drifting of the clouds. He was like a meticulous antelope, defending itself at night; he essentially did not resemble a little boy, but a wise master that was knowing of all things.

What shocked Li Shuangyan's heart was that before coming to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, she thought her master, Demon Emperor Lun Ri, valued Li Qiye because of his knowledge regarding a few secrets; however, now it seemed like this was definitely not the case.

Li Shuangyan thought of the proverb: on the road of cultivation, the most important things were not necessarily Physiques, Life Wheels, or Fate Palaces. This proverb was validated by Li Qiye.

Li Shuangyan remained taciturn – without words. The longer she was by Li Qiye's side, the more she felt how unfathomable Li Qiye was.

She was a genius and the heaven's proud daughter. She was prideful of her talents and aptitude. However, seeing Li Qiye's Mortal Physique, Mortal Life Wheel, and Mortal Fate Palace, she couldn't help but to remain silent! Even she wouldn't be able to have such means to control everything in the midst while

maintaining a clear view of the entire circumstance. A chess piece moves forward and a chess piece moves back, bringing someone to their death; this was not perception, or talents, but it was a grand wisdom, accumulated throughout the years.

On top of that, such accumulation of the many moons of the past appeared in a young boy, leaving the conceited Li Shuangyan feel helpless.

If Li Qiye was a natural born like her, with an Emperor Physique and a Saint Fate Palace, then where would he be now? She's afraid that he would have swept through the nine heavens and the ten earths already!

Li Qiye's killing of the three sectional leaders, one protector, and the genius disciple, Leng Shi Zhi; this matter, no matter what sect, would still be as grand as the sky.

In order to bring an end to this matter, the six elders of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect specially called for a meeting, and Li Qiye was especially allowed to attend.

Without a doubt, in the minds of the elders, Li Qiye was of the utmost importance. Outside of Cao Xiong, the other elders all considered that Li Qiye would be the key for the revitalization of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!

“This matter is only a big misunderstanding.”

In the end, First Elder Gu Tie Shou came to this conclusion. In reality, when this conclusion was achieved, the other elders had discussed secretly without the presence of Cao Xiong.

Before, the other four elders had doubts because of the first elder's depression; they were disappointed, and their confidence wavered. However, after this experience, the other four elder once again became a group that completely supported the first elder. Not only this, but this matter had caused the four elders to greatly suspect Cao Xiong. In this matter, Cao Xiong and Dong Sheng Long were too close to each other; this caused discomfort in the other elder's hearts.

The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and the Heavenly God Sect were mortal enemies. The two sects hadn't battled each other since the last war; however, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect still considered the Heavenly God Sect to be its biggest enemy!

Cao Xiong and Dong Sheng Long together brought on the dislikes of the other elders.

It was just a misunderstanding; however, if we end it there, I'm afraid the other disciples would not be convinced. Three sectional leaders, one protector, and one genius in the sect died tragically; this was a heavy loss to our sect!

At this moment, Cao Xiong's heart was bleeding blood, but he couldn't do anything else. He had lost everything from this matter, and he had burnt himself down. He also knew the other four elders had defected!

“What else does Brother Cao still want?”

Gu Tie Shou discontentedly said.

In reality, this entire situation, all of the elders and even the protectors suspected it was all part of Cao Xiong’s plan, but unfortunately, the dead cannot testify; they had no way to accuse Cao Xiong, and they could only say that it was just a misunderstanding.

Cao Xiong gravely said.

“Sect members killing each other, this is an unpleasant event for the sect. If Li Qiye doesn’t suffer a little bit of punishment, I’m afraid the disciples will be upset and think that we deal with matters carelessly; that we view human life as grass! If this is a misunderstanding, then we won’t harshly punish Li Qiye, but a lenient punishment cannot be avoided. Otherwise, we can’t convince the juniors.”

Cao Xiong’s words caused the other five elders to glance at each other. Even though they suspected Cao Xiong, they do admit that his words have some sense. They also had similar thoughts; using a misunderstanding as an excuse to kill three sectional leaders, a protector, and a genius disciple felt like a prevarication.

Gu Tie Shou’s group all thought about giving Li Qiye a little punishment of no significance in order to have something to show the junior sect members.

Chapter 70 : Scheming (2)

Seeing the silence of the other elders, Cao Xiong wanted to strike while the iron was still hot; he continued:

“If this was only a misunderstanding, it won’t be a grave punishment. We should sentence him to the Ghost Pavilion to meditate, facing a wall for half a year for being reckless and handling affairs impulsively!”

Hearing Cao Xiong’s words, Elder Sun grimaced, and he said:

“Ghost Pavilion?”

Cao Xiong went on:

“Even though the Ghost Pavilion appears to be sinister, but it is without danger. First Brother had experienced it himself, so I don’t need to say more. If we make him wall meditate in a different location, I’m afraid the other disciples will laugh at us for being too easy on him! Personally, I feel that the Ghost Pavilion is the most appropriate.”

At this point, Cao Xiong looked at Li Qiye, and he said:

“Plus, Li Qiye is protected by the Patriarch. Him going to the Ghost Pavilion is extremely fitting. The Ghost Pavilion was the area where the Patriarch suppressed evil ghosts and foreign Dao;

this is just in time to borrow the Patriarch's heavenly aura again to suppress the Ghost Pavilion!"

Within the elders, Elder Sun was the most supportive of Li Qiye. He said while he frowned:

"This... This matter is not fine."

During the moment when Gu Tie Shou was still hesitating, Li Qiye glanced at Cao Xiong, smiled, and he calmly said:

"Since I have the Patriarch's blessing, then what is there to be afraid of? Ghost Pavilion? So be it; this disciple is willing to accept this punishment!"

Staring at Li Qiye for a moment, Gu Tie Shou nodded his head in the end, and he said:

"Fine, since you are willing, then it will be the Ghost Pavilion. We'll sentence you to wall meditation in the Ghost Pavilion for half a year; Protector Mo will be the overseer!"

Gu Tie Shou's arrangement was simply excellent. Instead of saying that Protector Mo would be supervising Li Qiye, it is more accurate to say that Protector Mo would be protecting him.

After the verdict, Gu Tie Shou said in a serious manner:

“Li Qiye’s actions are reckless and completely deserving of punishment. Sectional Leader Zhou instigating the whole event, also needs to be punished. Without the ignorance and foolishness of Zhou, the group of Protector Hu wouldn’t have died in vain! So, take away his position, and he will no longer be assigned to any duties in the sect.”

Hearing this decision, Cao Xiong’s heart was bleeding blood. He had lost two disciples and three loyal sectional leaders. Currently at his side, there were few loyal hounds that were willing to do his bidding. The removal of Zhou’s sectional leader seat was a big loss to him. However, at this moment, he had no choice but to acquiesce; if one couldn’t bear the small matters, then it would ruin the grand scheme.

“Sectional Leader Zhou is ignorant and foolish, I also agree with big brother’s decision.”

Cao Xiong gritted his teeth, and he accepted Gu Tie Shou’s decision.

Even Cao Xiong had already accepted, so the other elders didn’t need to say anything. The decision became unanimously agreed upon.

The decision of the elders was quickly announced to all. In a flash, each and all of the disciples of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had heard news of this. Many couldn’t help but to be without words because this matter was incredible.

At the moment when Li Qiye had joined the sect, there were countless disciples that laughed at him with disdain. Now, Li Qiye had killed three sectional leaders, one protector, and even Leng Shi Zhi, who was considered the number one genius disciple of the sect. This was an unspeakable matter.

What was even more frightening was that even though Li Qiye committed such a huge crime, the punishment was very light. This changed the expressions of many disciples and sectional leaders. At this moment, they were able to feel a different atmosphere.

As for the elite disciples of the sect, they were warned by their masters and protectors to not openly discuss this matter. Regarding the Dao instruction in Li Qiye's dreams, this was a secret with a gag order from the elders. Outside of the elders and protectors, others didn't have the right to ask or know about this matter!

Regarding this matter, in reality, the five elders had secretly discussed about this. This was a decision made after the matter of Li Qiye's punishment; Cao Xiong was excluded.

This was not a formal meeting, but it was privately discussed. Before the meeting, all five of the elders secretly sneaked out.

At that moment, Elder Sun made this suggestion.

“We should let Li Qiye practice the Daylight Sky Merit Law!”

Elder Qian also nodded his head with agreement:

“This we can do. The Patriarch protects Li Qiye, and he teaches him the Dao in his dreams. If we let him practices the Daylight Sky Merit Law, maybe we could obtain our Heaven’s Will Secret Law again!”

When Immortal Emperor Min Ren carried the Heaven’s Will, he was able to create a Heaven’s Will Secret Law; it was one of a kind. A Heaven’s Will Secret Law was the highest achievement in the life of an Immortal Emperor, and its power greatly exceeded the other Emperor merit laws. Heaven’s Will Secret law, one could say that it carries the Heaven’s Will godly aura!

Immortal Emperor Min Ren had left behind his secret law to the sect; unfortunately, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect lost this invincible secret law later on.

Currently, Li Qiye could be taught by the Patriarch in his dream, so all of the elders were hoping that they could find the Heaven’s Will Secret Law through Li Qiye. If they could regain this secret law, to the declining sect, it would be – without a doubt – a heart saving medicine!

Elder Sun couldn’t help but to exclaim:

“I feel, that Li Qiye is currently the treasure of all treasures within our sect. We should let him learn anything that has to do with Emperor merit laws. With the Dao instruction in his dreams, we could regain all the Emperor merit laws that we have lost!”

“It is entirely true that we should let Li Qiye practice the Daylight Sky Merit Law; maybe it is the truth, that we could regain our secret law.”[\[1\]](#)

First Elder Gu Tie Shou nodded his head, and he carefully said:

“However, we cannot be too impatient and emotional. The proverbs say: we shouldn’t bite off more than we can chew. If presently, we ask for Li Qiye to practice the Daylight Sky Merit Law, there is a chance that he wouldn’t be able to understand it. Without this understanding, he wouldn’t be able to call for the Patriarch, so we should first let Li Qiye finish practicing the Violet Yang Ten Sun Merit Law. When he stabilizes this merit law, then we can let him practice the Daylight Sky Merit Law.”

In reality, Gu Tie Shou didn’t know that Li Qiye didn’t practice the Violet Yang Ten Sun Merit Law. He had already practiced the Kun Peng’s Six Variants along with the Revolving Crescent Sun Merit Law, so he didn’t need to practice the Violet Yang Ten Sun Merit Law.

Elder Sun felt that statement was logical, so he replied:

“First Brother makes a lot of sense. Li Qiye is the ultimate treasure of our sect; we have to slowly dig it out. If we are too hasty, then what if he suffers from Qi deviation? Isn’t this the same as destroying our future?”

After the secret deliberation, there was finally a decision. They

prepared for Li Qiye to practice any methods that had something to do with Emperor merit laws of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

In a main peak of the sect, Cao Xiong was secretly meeting with Dong Sheng Long. In the grand hall, there were only the two of them. The only difference was, Cao Xiong was no longer as calm as he was last time.

“Brother Dong, the plan has been implemented. At this moment, mistakes definitely cannot appear.”

Cao Xiong impatiently said in a cold manner.

His last plan suffered great losses. He lost two disciples and three sectional leaders, so he wished to cut Li Qiye into countless pieces.

“Brother Cao, you can rest assured about this matter. From now on, you and me are in the same boat. From now on, there will definitely be zero errors. Within three days, Fierce War Marquis will be here. I had turned towards His Royal Highness for commands. At that moment, the situation will be very favorable for Brother Cao.”

Dong Sheng Long smilingly said with his expression saying that victory was already at hand.

Having heard this, Cao Xiong couldn't help but to become shaken. Fierce War Marquis – this was a great general of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, and he was bestowed this title by the

Mortal Emperor of the Kingdom himself!

“Brother Cao, if the emperor sends down a command, this is a good opportunity for you to climb to the sect master’s position of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; you must grab on to this chance.”

Dong Sheng Long cheerfully smiled.

Cao Xiong couldn’t help but to become silent. Becoming the sect master was always his ambition; however, before this incident, he didn’t want to use these types of schemes to become the sect master. Now, he had no other choice. His hope that was placed in Leng Shi Zhi was destroyed by the hands of Li Qiye! To him, this was a grave blow, and it also broke his aspirations.

“Brother Dong, can you confirm that after the successful matter, Fierce War Marquis will leave and the Mortal Emperor won’t offend my Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect?”

Cao Xiong asked with a deep tone that was filled with worry.

Dong Sheng Long smiled, and he replied:

“Regarding this matter, Brother Cao can rest assured. Brother Cao, think about it for a little bit. With the power of the Heavenly God Sect and the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom today, wanting to destroy your Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect is an easy matter, don’t you think? However, His Majesty is kind, and he never

wanted to take action; what does this imply? What His Majesty wants is only the Heaven's Will Secret Law; as long as you could obtain this secret law, the other matters are not a problem.”

“Brother Dong, don't worry; obtaining the Heaven's Will Secret Law, I will take care of it.”

Cao Xiong gravely replied.

He didn't want to sell the Heaven's Will Secret Law of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. He had thought about this many times. Once he gained control of the situation, even if Fierce War Marquis wouldn't withdraw his troops, he wouldn't be afraid because he has the portrait of the Patriarch in his hand!

As for Li Qiye... Hmph! A frightening killing intent flashed from Cao Xiong's eyes.

Dong Sheng Long naturally couldn't read Cao Xiong's thoughts, and he also didn't know the matter of the Patriarch's portrait. However, since he had the backing of the Heavenly God Sect and the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, he was not afraid. Even if Cao Xiong could somehow flip over the torrential ocean waves, in front of a gigantic monster like the Heavenly God Sect, it wouldn't be enough to reach the apex.

On the other side, Nan Huai Ren had heard the news, and he was shocked.

“Brother, you really have to go to the Ghost Pavilion to meditate for half a year?”

Nan Huai Ren with an ugly expression loudly asked Li Qiye.

“Could this be fake?”

Li Qiye cheerfully smiled, and he said:

“The elders had all decided, what else can I do?”

Seeing Li Qiye’s relaxed appearance, Nan Huai Ren couldn’t help but to say:

“Brother, do you know what type of place the Ghost Pavilion is?”

Li Qiye still replied with a relax manner:

“Didn’t you talk about it before? It was previously the Zither Pavilion.”

Nan Huai Ren couldn’t bear it anymore, jumped up, and then he said:

“That was a long long time ago. In the past, it was called the Zither Pavilion, but a few ten thousand years ago, its name was changed; people called it the Ghost Pavilion! A coward would be

scared shitless. Currently, not to mention this Ghost Pavilion, even the peak over there, no one dared to venture to it.”

[\[1\]](#) Min Ren’s power comes from the sun, just a reminder to why all of his techniques are sun-related – Even his name means the sun

Chapter 71 : Ghost Pavilion (1)

“I heard there are ghosts there.”

Nan Huai Ren told Li Qiye with a mysterious manner.

“Since it is called the Ghost Pavilion, ghosts would be a normal thing. Without ghosts, how could it be called the Ghost Pavilion?”

Li Qiye laughed.

Seeing Li Qiye without any anxiety, Nan Huai Ren jumped anxiously and busily said:

“Brother, I’m not joking with you. There are really ghosts at that place! There are really ghosts there! If you don’t believe me, you can go ask my master!”

Protector Mo was also present. Hearing Nan Huai Ren, he pondered for a moment, and then he said:

“The Ghost Pavilion is indeed ominous. It is better to be careful even though I’ve never heard of anyone dying in the Ghost Pavilion. I did hear that the first elder was unbearably hurt, suffering many losses in there. Whether there are ghosts or not, a conclusion cannot be drawn, but there are definitely some ominous things at that place.”

“Ghosts, eh.”

Li Qiye gazed towards the far direction, farther than far, and he finally smiled cheerfully. He said:

“If there are actual ghosts, I would like it even more; why is there the need to be afraid of ghosts?”

At this moment, he couldn't help but to smirk, and he bursted out laughing.

Nan Huai Ren, regarding his first brother's “heavy taste”, became silent. Regarding these ominous ghosts, others just wanted to escape; however, first brother said that he liked them.

Nan Huai Ren was really concerned about Li Qiye, and he still wanted to persuade him; however, his master, Protector Mo, gently shook his head, so he became silent instead.

Protector Mo didn't try to convince Li Qiye. From his perspective, Li Qiye already had his own ideas. He trusted that Li Qiye's actions didn't warrant their worries.

In the end, Li Qiye smiled, and he said to Nan Huai Ren's group.

“Let us go! We will go see the Ghost Pavilion!”

Nan Huai Ren had no other options, and he had to resign to his

fate. He followed Li Qiye to see the Ghost Pavilion, but along the way, he was muttering:

“Brother, if you meet a ghost, do not say I didn’t warn you; there are real ghosts there.”

With Nan Huai Ren’s continuous verbose speech like a married housewife, Li Qiye could only smile.

In reality, the matter of Li Qiye heading to meditate at the Ghost Pavilion, the disciples at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had all heard. The moment the Ghost Pavilion was brought up, the disciples all shivered in fear.

A deadly pale disciple said:

“Staying half a year at the Ghost Pavilion? I wouldn’t do it, not even for a day. I would rather stay in a punishing frozen cave than the Ghost Pavilion!”

Another disciple shook his head and said:

“Don’t even mention the frozen cave, I would rather go to the Dark Dried Valley than the Ghost Pavilion.”

Other disciples started to speak:

“Regarding the Ghost Pavilion, even Uncle Da Dan was afraid of

it.”[\[1\]](#)

The disciple continued:

“Uncle Da Dan could be considered the most courageous person in our sect. Five years ago, he didn’t believe in the evil occult, so he made a bet with us to go into the Ghost Pavilion. The second day, the sun had not risen, and he escaped and even pissed his pants in terror.”

“Little bastard, revealing my shortcomings; do you want to be beaten?”

A middle-aged man, who was standing to the side, glared at him and yelled. This middle-aged man was incomparably rough looking; it was clear that this person was the uncouth fellow, Da Dan.

Even though this disciple was glared at, there were other disciples that curiously asked:

“Uncle, what happened at that time? What happened that night?”

This uncle, questioned by the disciples, gave in; he contemplated for a moment, shook his head, and then he said:

“The Ghost Pavilion has ghosts, frightening ghosts; maybe not just one, but many many ghosts.”

A disciple curiously asked.

“Li Qiye going to meditate in the Ghost Pavilion; how long do you guys think he can last?”

A disciple exclaimed.

“I’m willing to bet that he won’t make it through one night.”

Another disciple coldly scowled, and he said:

“A whole night, hmph! From my perspective, I’m afraid that once night falls, he would have peed in his pants. The Ghost Pavilion is not only notorious in name; there are definitely ghosts at that place!”

At the moment, many disciples in the sect were gossiping. All of them said that there were ghosts there, but what type of ghosts, no one knew.

In fact, regarding the Ghost Pavilion, even the protectors were afraid of it. First Elder went to the Ghost Pavilion once, and he tried to use his Emperor merit law to suppress the ominous aura of the Ghost Pavilion. No one could believe that on the second day, the first elder, wornout, came out of the pavilion. He couldn’t suppress the evil aura in the Ghost Pavilion.

Since then, no protectors or disciples dared to not know their own strengths and venture into the Ghost Pavilion. Originally, the world's spirit energy of this peak was quite good, but because of the Ghost Pavilion rumours, no one was willing to come to this peak to cultivate.

Currently, this peak was the scene of declination. The surrounding ten miles were declining as well. Even the flowers and trees were sickly looking; it was as if they were affected by the ominous aura of the pavilion.

It was said that a few ten thousand years ago, the disciples of this peak formed their own branch. This peak used to be prosperous for generations. However, later on it became haunted; this place started to decline until no disciples were willing to step into the place again.

When Li Qiye was standing on top of the peak, basking in the view of the mountains and rivers in this area, he couldn't help but become solemn. This fading scenery was not only because no disciples were willing to go there, but one could faintly feel uneasy; it was like there was something below, exerting evil energy.

In the last ten thousand years, all of the past disciples of the sect considered this place to be ominous; it seemed like this was not without reasons.

Also standing next to Li Qiye, Nan Huai Ren felt a cold chill behind his back, as if a ghost was staring at him. It gave him sudden goosebumps; if Li Qiye wasn't with him, he would never be willing to go to this evil place.

Regaining his wits, Li Qiye observed the big pavilion on the peak; the building named 'Ghost Pavilion' had begun to rot. Looking at the pavilion in front of his eyes, he couldn't help but to gently sigh.

The Ghost Pavilion, in reality, was meticulously crafted with many interesting charms. It was built on top of a peak; it was as if it was part of nature, causing others to feel that it and the peak was integrated into one.

From the decoration of the pavilion, it could be understood that the sect greatly valued it in the past. Unfortunately, because of the ominous aura, the sect had to forsake it.

The Ghost Pavilion was not large in size, but it was very detailed; it could be praised as it was beautifully refined. However, the current pavilion was covered in dust and spider webs, as well as wild grass and weeds. Even the wild squirrels and birds considered this place their home.

Entering the pavilion, stepping onto the floor made out of ten thousand year old Jade Pine caused a creaking sound. In the midst of the atmosphere inside, a coward would be scared shitless; especially since there were sounds of bats scurrying rampantly, increasing the evil atmosphere.

“This place used to be an important ground of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, but unfortunately, it is completely deserted and ruined now.”

Protector Mo nostalgically said.

It was not just Protector Mo reminiscing, even Li Qiye's heart was sighing softly. That year, on the long winding road of the Dao, before Immortal Emperor Min Ren carried the Heaven's Will and his sweeping of the nine heavens and ten earths, inside this pavilion, Li Qiye used to teach the zither Dao to little Min Ren!

Regarding this story, when he was still the Dark Crow, he used to tease Min Ren for his worthlessness at playing the zither. If he had to become a zither performer for his livelihood, Li Qiye was afraid that he would starve to death.

Back in those days, Min Ren regarding Li Qiye's ridicule, he also couldn't do anything besides bursting into loud laughter.

Without Li Qiye's command, Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren busily cleaned the inside and outside of the Ghost Pavilion. After they were finished, the pavilion seemed a lot brighter, the dark atmosphere was partly swept away; however, even then, the pavilion still felt quite sinister.

After preparing all the daily essentials for Li Qiye, they reported back to Li Qiye.

After seeing the preparations from the two, Li Qiye gently nodded his head; he finally said:

“This is fine, however, I will sleep in the grand hall; there is no

need to prepare a room specially for me. Also, Huai Ren, go bring me a zither.”

“Zither? What do you need a zither here for?”

Hearing Li Qiye’s words, Nan Huai Ren was surprised. Normally, very few cultivators would elegantly play the harp and watch the moon.

Li Qiye smilingly said:

“Over here used to be the Zither Pavilion with extremely beautiful sceneries. At night, to be able to enjoy the moon and play the zither, how wonderful is this matter?”

“Uhh...”

Nan Huai Ren couldn’t endure and gently whispered:

“Big brother, this place is the Ghost Pavilion. At night, there will be ghostly matters... Yo-you, you are still in the mood to play the zither?”

“Smelly brat, don’t ruin my mood; hurry up and go!”

Li Qiye, a thirteen year old boy, called Nan Huai Ren a brat, seemingly like an old grandpa, but Nan Huai Ren happily smiled and ran away.

At the moment when the two, master and disciple, were arranging matters, Li Shuangyan also followed and especially observed this Ghost Pavilion. She carefully analyzed it, without letting go of a single detail.

Li Shuangyan currently watched the four large pillars inside the grand hall, and she was in a daze. The four large pillars were made from ten thousand year old Jade Pine. After countless years of baptism, they were without any sign of deterioration. On top of that, each of these pillars were densely packed with veined patterns. Actually, not only the four pillars were covered with these patterns, the entire Zither Pavilion was covered in these patterns, but the pattern's colors were very faint. If one did not focus, it was essentially difficult to see.

Li Shuangyan, a genius with a Saint Fate Palace and Emperor Physique – no matter where she went, she would be the heaven's proud daughter. As she watched these patterns, she immediately felt that they were extraordinary. A genius like her was meticulously analyzing, wanting to see through the mysterious truths inside. However, during her observation, she found that these patterns were not Dao runewords or magical incantations. She couldn't shake off the feeling that there was a mystery indescribable by words inside.

“Do you see anything special?”

Li Qiye went next to her, and he comfortably smiled at Li Shuangyan who was observing the patterns.

[\[1\]](#) Da Dan means big courage

Chapter 72 : Ghost Pavilion (2)

Li Shuangyan couldn't help but to look at the little boy, who was younger and standing in front of her. With his calm demeanor and casual expression, she understood that this little boy had already knew what this was.

“What is it?”

Li Shuangyan couldn't help but to ask.

The genius heaven's proud daughter, Li Shuangyan, had never underestimated herself; however, after such a long observation, she was not able to clearly understand the mysteries of the patterns. Li Qiye already knew; this caused Li Shuangyan to feel a little helpless. Did this little boy in front of her really have a Mortal Physique, Mortal Life Wheel, and Mortal Face Palace?

Li Qiye stared at the numerous densely packed patterns. At this moment, his eyes became particularly abstruse, and gently whispered:

“Zither melodies.”

At this moment, Li Shuangyan felt that the little boy in front of her had become an entirely different person; it was as if he was the victim of countless vicissitudes, as if he was basked in countless moons.

“The most regrettable thing in this world is lacking an [intimate friend](#).”

In the end, the little boy in front of her spoke out such a subtle and ineffable line.

Li Shuangyan couldn't help but inquire:

“How do you know these are zither melodies? What are the mysteries inside these lines?”

“Ah, the mysteries inside are of an ancient story.”

The genius heaven's proud daughter was acting as if she was an eager student.

Li Qiye smilingly said:

“As for how I know, I calculated with my fingers.”

Li Shuangyan felt helpless once again. She couldn't see through this little boy. These zither melodies in front of her, she knew that her understanding would not be lesser than any other genius; however, this little boy, with just a glance, immediately knew what it was. This was too devilish! She couldn't help but to wonder if the little boy in front of her was still human?

Finally, Li Qiye told Protector Mo.

“All return, I want to be by myself in quiet contemplation.”

Nan Huai Ren didn't have an opinion, and as the observer of Li Qiye for his wall facing meditation as well as his protector, Protector Mo had the responsibilities to look after him. He hesitated, and then he said:

“But, you are not safe in this place.”

“If this place isn't safe, then other places are even more dangerous.”

Li Qiye bloomed a smile, and he arranged for Protector Mo:

“Your mission isn't to protect me; it is to watch over Cao Xiong carefully, understand?”

Protector Mo glanced at Li Qiye, and then finally nodded his head in agreement. Even though he was a man of few words, he was aware of the situation. At this moment, he immediately knew what to do with Li Qiye's command.

“You also go back; here, I alone am enough.”

In the end, he also told Li Shuangyan to go back. In this place, he didn't need Li Shuangyan's protection. The truth was, with Li

Shuangyan's presence, it wouldn't be convenient for him to catch the big fish.

Everyone had left, and only Li Qiye remained. He didn't do anything except meditate in the grand hall with his eyes closed.

Soon, the sun had set, and the moon had risen. The night curtain beckoned, and the entire peak was encompassed by a gloomy shadow. At this moment, the four directions were all silent. Outside of the peak, one could faintly hear the howls of the wolves.

Under the night sky, the mountains and trees, along with the vines, seemingly became ferocious. There was a transformation in this place; it was as if there was an evil aura emanating from the ground, like there was something ominous wanting to rise from the earth.

“Whoooooshh...” At this moment, inside the Ghost Pavilion was a howling fierce wind. In but a moment, a black fog appeared inside; it was as if this place was wanting to become hell.

“Hahahahaa...” Suddenly, inside the pavilion, waves of sinister laughs came to being like there was an evil ghost hiding in the shadows, staring at Li Qiye.

Li Qiye, who was sitting in the meditation pose, suddenly opened his eyes. He calmly smiled, and he gracefully said:

“I don't want to personally take action. I only want to ask one

thing, where is that zither?”

At this moment, Li Qiye was carrying the zither given to him by Nan Huai Ren, and his five fingers were hovering over the strings.

“Hahahaha....” The reply to Li Qiye’s question was even more sinister laughs. Afterward, the sounds of ghostly bones creaking filled the air.

At this time, Li Qiye focused his eyes and observed. The Ghost Pavilion was no longer here, and he was in an empty unknown wilderness. Looking as far as the eyes can see, it was an endless wasteland.

The more frightening matter was that below the ground, there were waves of skeletons crawling up. These skeletons had been here for who knows how many years; they slowly stood up, carried broken swords, and they motioned towards Li Qiye. In the midst of things, Li Qiye was surrounded by the endless sea of skeletons.

“This type of illusion, to me, is as simple as eating breakfast; it is without meaning.”

“Phoosh...” At this time, a skeleton struck at Li Qiye with his blade. Li Qiye remained motionless, this blade pierced his body, and blood immediately splattered; however, Li Qiye was still motionless, and he was still smiling.

“Creaking, creaking...”

Wave after wave, the friction of the bones caused creepy sounds that would frighten others and cause their scalps to tingle; anyone else would immediately turn and run.

At this moment, many skeletons had crawled up to Li Qiye. Some grabbed his hands and others his feet, they then lifted him up. They turned to the four directions, and they started to pull; seemingly, they wanted to dismember Li Qiye.

Being dismembered by so many skeletons, wave after wave of extreme pain came; it was followed by the spurting of blood.

“Phoosh”

Next, the arms and legs were removed by the skeletons. His body became two halves, blood came flying out from his body, along with his innards. His head rolled really far away.

For anyone else, they would have defended themselves earlier as well as destroy these skeletons, but Li Qiye was still calmly smiling as his head was rolling far away.

As his skull was rolling on the ground, Li Qiye, who was still smiling, said:

“I only ask one question, where is that zither located? For the sake of an old friend, I won’t make any moves. Once I take action, the consequences would be unimaginable.”

Suddenly, the scenery changed. There were no longer skeletons, and his body was without harm. Li Qiye was still sitting in the Ghost Pavilion like before.

“Boom...” Suddenly, Li Qiye’s entire body felt like a floating immortal, with wings extruding from his back. At this moment, in the sky, a heavenly gate was opened. Li Qiye, without another option, walked inside the heavenly gate.

Entering the heavenly gate, Li Qiye was immersed in the immortal sceneries. Within the immortal palace, he only saw immortal zithers flying, godly mountains floating up and down, brilliantly bright immortal palaces, heavenly weapons, godly treasures, countless materials... and godly stones that would cause countless cultivators to drool.

One would lose their senses in this paradise. Wave after wave, heavenly sounds filled the air. Two groups of heavenly fairies, slim and graceful, started to dance gracefully. The two groups surrounded Li Qiye, and they began to dance.

Each and all fairies were heavenly frightening beauties. Li Shuangyan could be considered a grand beauty, but to compare to this group of fairies, she would still lose her colors.

What was even more stirring to the will of people was that the fairies were only wearing a thin silk veil, draped over their incomparable and beautiful naked bodies; sometimes hidden and sometimes showing. The two group of fairies started to alluringly

dance faster; their dances were erotic and extraordinary, and they would cause others' blood to boil...

Under this dance, not mentioning the men, even women couldn't help but to waver in their minds!

“Wonderful Dancing Style...”

Li Qiye remained unmoved just as before, and he said:

“Seems to be an old friend!”

The dance became increasingly faster, and increasingly tantalizing. Even immortals would be attracted by this erotic dance, but Li Qiye was just silently sitting back and admiring the scenery.

Naturally, this illusion was useless against Li Qiye. Suddenly, the scenery changed again. Li Qiye was traveling in the desert, with the sun hovering over his head...

The illusions, one by one, kept on transforming. Each illusion was meant to attack the seven emotions and six desires of humans. Any cultivator, even if they could successfully pass one illusion, wouldn't be able to go through the second, the third, the fourth... As long as one was still human, they would naturally have seven emotions and six desires.

Unfortunately, these illusions were facing Li Qiye. Li Qiye's

willpower was unwavering; he floated throughout countless moons with endless ups and downs. What sufferings and transformations had he not experienced?

After the illusions transformed into different illusions, Li Qiye lost his patience; he finally he opened his mouth:

“It seems like you want me to make a move!”

“Zheng... Zheng... Zheng...” From the five fingers of Li Qiye, the sound of the zither started to play; the entire illusion suddenly collapsed into destruction.

“Zheng... Zheng... Zheng...” Waves of zither melodies rang in the air. At this moment, the dense melody patterns inside the Ghost Pavilion started to ripple with Li Qiye’s tune.

Once the illusion disappeared, a huge monster head appeared inside the pavilion. This head was gigantic; one could only see that it had a bull’s horn, bloody eyes, the body of a snake, and the wings of an eagle; it was dragging along a thick and long bloody tongue.

Li Qiye stared at this monster, and he comfortably said:

“Where is your real body?”

“Roar!”

The monster roared. Facing this roar, the five fingers of Li Qiye stroked down, and the sound of the zither immediately rang. The melody patterns inside the Ghost Pavilion became louder and stronger.

“Bang”

An explosion occurred. Suddenly, there was a crack in the ground of the main hall; an ancient zither, along with melody patterns, suddenly rushed up.

This ancient zither was extremely old with moving brilliance. It jumped up, and it suddenly fell into the hands of Li Qiye.

“Roar!”

Seeing the ancient zither falling into the hand of Li Qiye, the monster ferociously roared and rushed towards Li Qiye.

Li Qiye’s eyes concentrated, and he gravely said:

“Back...”

His five fingers started to pull at the strings of the ancient zither. Zhang... The zither melody was like a sword. In a flash, the melodic patterns in the entire Ghost Pavilion flashed brightly, becoming terrible sword energies.

“Phoosh”, the sword energy struck down towards the gigantic monster. After being struck, it flew away to the far distance. The two bloody eyes of the monster stared at Li Qiye, seemingly afraid.

[\[1\]](#) Intimate friend is made out of two words: “Comprehend” and “Sound”. The words have two meanings – one is someone who can understand your music, the other is your best friend

Chapter 73 : Su Yu He (1)

“If you don’t show your true body, you should be careful because I will cut you.”

Li Qiye hugged his ancient zither, and he comfortably smiled.

“Hahahaha...” The monster sinisterly laughed. The sound was hard to hear and deafening to the ears, causing others to shiver:

“You will never be able to kill me! No one can kill me!”

“Is that so? Wait until I dig up the Yearning Lunar Peak beneath the bones of the dead; can you say no one could kill you then?!”

Li Qiye smiled satisfyingly.

“Bang... Bang... Bang...”

After hearing Li Qiye’s words, the monster was frightened and retreated to the back.

“Show me your true body now; don’t pretend to be Gods and Devils in front of me.”

Li Qiye sat in a meditative posture on the floor, staring at the monster. He gently wiped the dust off his ancient zither.

“Zheng... Zheng... Zheng...” The zither started to play again. It was as smooth as the flow of water, it flowed inside the Ghost Pavilion. From the flow of the zither came the harmony of the melodic patterns, soft and smooth.

Inside the zither tunes, it was as if others could see that inside the blue mountain over yonder was a small bridge to cross the river. Through that, there would be a courtyard filled with the chickens’ crows in the morning; a small and tranquil village was appearing in front of their eyes.

This unfathomable monster, hearing this tune, noisily backed away. At this point, the layers of fogs dissipated from its body. In the end, the gigantic monster ultimately disappeared, and a shadowy figure appeared. It was only a slim and graceful figure; it was only a shadow of her back, but it was enough to topple the spirit of all living things. Just the shadow of her back was enough to cause all living things to unconditionally turned their heads for another look. This was a beauty capable of causing the downfall of nations; this was a beauty with incomparable and absolute peerlessness.

Who would have thought that a monster causing other people to be frightened would have such a peerless beauty as its true body.

“Flowing Water Mortal Home!”

The blurred shadow unfathomably stared at Li Qiye, and she murmured:

“Yo-you... How did you know this melody?!”

“Xiao He, it really is you.”[\[1\]](#)

Li Qiye stopped playing, and comfortably laughed while he stared at this peerless beauty’s shadow.

The peerless beauty, having heard Li Qiye’s words, immediately became frightened, and she continuously stepped backward. Aghast, she asked:

“Wh-who, who are you!?”

Li Qiye opened with a smile, and he said:

“That year, under the wutong tree, digging out the bones for you; besides little brat Min Ren, you tell me who else was there?”

“Yo-you, you are Your Excellency Divine Crow?!”

The peerless shadow, astonished, asked with her eyes wide opened.

“With the exception of that little brat Min Ren and I, who else would know what was under the wutong tree and Yearning Lunar Peak? Who else would know about the Flowing Water Mortal

Home? This melody, ‘Flowing Water Mortal Home’; I was the one who taught it to that little brat Min Ren.”

“It truly is you! Your Excellency Divine Crow!”

This peerless shadow was extremely ecstatic; she quickly stepped forward, and she surprisingly said:

“Your Excellency Divine Crow, you are truly still alive.”

Li Qiye smiled, and emotionally reminisced.

“I am eternal since the ancient past, this is nothing strange.”

The peerless figure drew closer; her shadow was transparent and unclear, but from the shape, one could tell that she was a peerless beauty.

Li Qiye finally looked at her, shook his head, and he said:

“You have not dissipated. What sins did you commit to suffer like this? Turning yourself into something that isn’t human nor ghost. You have to remember, that year I told you that you are not Su Yu He; you are not a ghost, but you are also not human. You are only a strand of yearning sentiments, not wanting to dissipate.”

The peerless figure heard Li Qiye words, and she bowed her head in silence.

“I know.”

Li Qiye shook his head, and he continued:

“You liked that little brat Min Ren, but you could not forget. Even that year, that little brat Min Ren couldn’t recreate you. You are a dead person in the end; plus, your souls and spirits have dissipated along with any hateful sentiments. You are not a ghost, you are not a hateful sentiment, and you are especially not Su Yu He’s soul, wandering in this world. In reality, you and Su Yu He no longer have any relations! You are just a yearning sentiment; a strand of yearning sentiment towards Min Ren, not willing to depart.”

The peerless shadow’s head remained in a bow; she didn’t say another word.

Li Qiye gravely said:

“Little brat Min Ren’s biggest flaw was being too gentle. That year, I had told him to use a melody to transcend your soul for it to find peace, but he couldn’t do it!”

The peerless shadow quietly whispered:

“Your Excellency, don’t blame Immortal Emperor Min Ren. This was because I, I was not willing to transcend. I, I only wanted to leave behind, behind a strand of yearning sentiment!”

Li Qiye shook his head, and he said:

“Little brat Min Ren is no longer here, do you feel like there is any meaning in leaving behind a strand of yearning sentiment? When little brat Min Ren was still in this world, he was too gentle and merciful; often, he came to play a melody for you! However, you know as well, this was not because of you. Little brat Min Ren passed away, so why do you still remain in this place?”

Hearing Li Qiye’s words, the shadow called Xiao He became sad, bowed her head really low, and finally she gently said:

“After he left, I hoped that one day I could be buried along with him under the peach tree, but it was impossible. I had no choice but to remain within this zither. Later, the zither sank into the ground by itself, and I fell into a deep slumber.”

Seeing this poor woman in front of him, Li Qiye gently sighed; in the end, he had to say:

“Fine, after I accomplish everything, I will go to Yearning Lunar Peak and dig out your remains. I will bury you together under the peach tree, to fulfill your last wish.”

Xiao He bowed to pay her respect, and she gratefully said:

“Thank you, Your Excellency.”

Seeing her, Li Qiye could only sigh. There were no words to describe the feelings in his heart. He could only say, this was mother nature mocking humans.

That year, he brought Immortal Emperor Min Ren onto the road of cultivation. He let Min Ren choose this place to establish the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect for a reason. During the Desolate Era, this place was a mysterious grand ground; many inexplicable things had happened here. In that era, countless races had examined this place.

Straight to the Beginning Era, there was a different race with heavenly piercing talents that rose up in this place; they created an empire without equals. This race, at this place, had a tyrant, and the tyrant was ferocious, just like the rest of his kind. This caused the entire human race, in the Mortal World, to be massacred by him.

Afterwards, a Virtuous Paragon of the human race rose up and rebelled against this tyrant. This Virtuous Paragon was an unequaled creation, and he towered over the eight desolates; he was the opponent of the other tyrant.

However, the tyrant used to explore the mysteries of this land. Each time, him and the Virtuous Paragon fought to the death; whenever he was in danger, he would borrow this mysterious land to defeat the Virtuous Paragon.

The Virtuous Paragon was not discouraged; again and again, he waged war against this mysterious land. However, defeat after defeat, from being a young courageous man filled with energy to

being a Mortal Emperor with white hair, in the end, this Virtuous Paragon became despaired. Unless he could carry the Heaven's Will, there was no way he could defeat this tyrant that was borrowing the strength of this mysterious land.

However, he didn't have this chance; he had given up his opportunity to carry the Heaven's Will! Before the last war, he came up with a new method!

This Virtuous Paragon had a daughter. His daughter, whether it was her talents or beauty, she was peerless beyond comparison; she was considered the number one beauty of that time! The Virtuous Paragon, wanting to figure out the mysterious land, had let his daughter marry this tyrant in the end.

The tyrant also knew the intentions of his mortal enemy. He lusted for the number one beauty, so he brought her inside his empire.

From then on, the number one beauty, that was admired by all, became the sole possession of the tyrant, and she became his toy. Fallen into his hands, the number one beauty accepted countless degradations and suffered from countless shameless acts, but in the end, she was able to obtain the secret of this land.

The Virtuous Paragon, using the secret found by his daughter, was able to defeat the tyrant in one last battle, and he destroyed his brutal empire.

However, the story didn't end there. Afterwards, the Virtuous

Paragon was not able to inherit the secret of this land. He forced his way up to the heavens, wanting to borrow the secret of this land to connect to the Heaven's Will, to carry the Heaven's Will, and to become the invincible number one in the Nine Worlds!

However, after the number one beauty suffered humiliations in order to accomplish her task, she died in the dark night curtain from sadness. Her hateful sentiment didn't disappear; it lingered on top of this land.

The moment when the Virtuous Paragon was trying to attack the Heaven's Will, the hateful sentiment was suddenly triggered; it went on a crazy rampage. Regarding his daughter, the Virtuous Paragon had always felt guilty. Due to his daughter dying from sadness, the Virtuous Paragon experienced an even greater blow, causing his Dao willpower to give birth to a will devil.[\[2\]](#)

During the crucial moment, the hateful sentiment of his daughter suddenly pierced the high heaven, and it went straight into the Heaven's Wrath, causing the devil will of the Virtuous Paragon to suddenly go crazy. In the end, he couldn't overcome the will devil's devouring, and he died under the power of the Heaven's Wrath.

In the end, the human race kingdom, established by this Virtuous Paragon, in this place, turned into ruins!

The daughter of this Virtuous Paragon, the number one beauty of that era, was Su Yu He!

Countless years had passed; Li Qiye, as the Dark Crow, led Immortal Emperor Min Ren to this place to establish the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. At that time, this place was still in ruins. However, the hateful sentiments of Su Yu He still existed, and it often caused chaos due to her hatred; the hateful sentiments pierced the heaven, and they turned this place into a Ghost Domain.

Later on, Immortal Emperor Min Ren, under the instruction of Li Qiye, had found the resting place of Su Yu He. He restored her corpse, and he buried her in a beautiful scenic area.

Immortal Emperor Min Ren played matchless tunes for her hateful sentiment in order for it to transcend. After many times, in the end, her hateful sentiment finally dissipated, and she closed her eyes within the burial.

However, after the hateful sentiments dissipated, the moment before closing her eyes and her traveling souls were still in this world, Su Yu He gave birth to a yearning sentiment towards Immortal Emperor Min Ren. Finally, she closed her eyes, and she rested in peace in an unknown location.

However, this yearning sentiment followed the ancient zither back to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Afterwards, when Li Qiye, as the Dark Crow, found out, she had already been staying in the sect.

For such a matter, Li Qiye did not agree. Su Yu He had died with no chance of revival. Plus, this strand of yearning sentiment was not Su Yu He. This was not a person, not a ghost, and especially

not an existence; this was merely a strand of yearning sentiment.

A strand of yearning sentiment remaining in this world, this was only a torture to her. She didn't have a chance of becoming a living existence, so she didn't have a way of following Immortal Emperor Min Ren; she was but a yearning sentiment in a mist of nothingness.

[1] Xiao means little, it is an affectionate way of calling someone

[2] Will devil = a flaw in one's Dao, might cause him to go berserk or lose emotions

Chapter 74 : Su Yu He (2)

Li Qiye allowed for Immortal Emperor Min Ren to perform a ceremony for her crossing, so that she could go in peace. However, unfortunately, this strand of yearning sentiment was unwilling to go, and Immortal Emperor Min Ren was too merciful to forcefully send her away. This was why she had always remained in this place, alongside the ancient zither, without a way of departure!

Recalling the past, even Li Qiye, who had experienced countless years, still couldn't help but to sentimentally sigh.

Thinking up to here, Li Qiye looked at the peerless shadow, and he said:

“You said that after the ancient zither sunk into the ground, you also went into a deep slumber; why are you now causing havoc? From my view, this is not a simple ghost matter. The world's spirit energy here has been contaminated. You are merely a yearning sentiment, so you don't have the power to have such a big influence; there must be a different reason.”

Su Yu He's yearning sentiment responded:

“After the ancient zither went into the ground, I also went into a deep slumber with it. I do not know how long I was asleep for. There was a commotion afterward; an evil energy pollution disturbed me, so I woke up. I was staying here, and I didn't want to be bothered; so I scared the disciples away from this place.”

Li Qiye's eyes became serious, and he asked:

“Evil energy invaded?”

The peerless shadow couldn't help but say:

“Your Excellency, from my point of view, there is a chance that the mysterious ground under the earth is the cause.”

Hearing these words, Li Qiye's expression greatly changed from his always calm demeanor and into a stern one. His eyes suddenly jumped, and he gravely stated:

“There is zero chance! That year, I brought along the little brat Min Ren with the Old Chicken Head's group to kill until the heaven falls and the earth rends in order to forcefully seal it. With little brat Min Ren carrying the Heaven's Will under my order; he came inside one more time in order to use a matchless sealing technique in that place. The mysterious land definitely cannot escape the sealing of little brat Min Ren; this I have the utmost confidence in.”

The peerless shadow frightenedly replied:

“I'm afraid that this is absolutely true; this evil energy is too familiar to me. This feeling, I know it all too well. After I had awoken, no matter the place, I always had this uneasy feeling; it was as if a small amount of evil energy was escaping from the

ground.”

The words of the peerless shadow caused Li Qiye’s heart to plummet. Even though she was only a yearning sentiment of Su Yu He, this matter, to her, had too much influence. If she said so, then it definitely would not be wrong.

He had confidence in Immortal Emperor Min Ren, plus this matter was related to the eternal inheritance of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; Min Ren must have been extremely cautious. With the unbeatable methods of Min Ren as an Immortal Emperor, Li Qiye had no reason to doubt him. As long as he suppressed and sealed this place, the evil energy had no chance of escaping the confinement of Min Ren.

However, now there was a strange occurrence; what actually happened below the earth? Li Qiye’s eyes focused, and after a while, he turned towards the peerless shadow, saying:

“It seems like there are some things that I need to change my plans around. When it is time, I will open your grave. If it is really necessary, I will bury you under the peach tree first.”

“Thank you, Your Excellency.”

The peerless shadow gently bowed. She was only a strand of yearning sentiment, and she existed only to be a pair to the ancient zither. She still had some mysterious power, but she had no way of burying herself.

Li Qiye gently stroked the ancient zither in his hands. This ancient zither, he was too familiar with it. The time when Min Ren had only started to practice the zither, he gave this ancient zither to Min Ren. Even though this zither was not an epic treasure, after experiencing Min Ren's touch throughout the years, especially after he had become an Immortal Emperor, its essence greatly changed.

Li Qiye properly put the ancient zither away, and then carefully observed the densely packed melodic patterns inside the Ghost Pavilion.

“Your Excellency, do want to borrow the melodic patterns?”

Seeing Li Qiye in a daze and looking at the patterns, she couldn't help but ask.

Li Qiye lightly shook his head, and he said:

“The descendants of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect are all bags of straws. This mountain of treasure is in front of them, yet they are unable to recognize it. The melodic patterns in this Ghost Pavilion have absorbed a large amount of emperor's power and immortal intent; this heavenly aura is enough for the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect to survive through many difficult moons, yet these people are putting all of their gazes on Immortal Emperor Life Treasures and Emperor merit laws!

The Zither Pavilion, even though this was not the resting place of Min Ren, but it was the place Min Ren had come to countless times

to play the zither, especially after he became an Immortal Emperor.

As an Immortal Emperor carrying the Heaven's Will, shouldering the universe, and exerting endless immortal pressure, any object that was touched by his heavenly aura would obtain amazing benefits. It can be imagined that after Min Ren had received the Heaven's Will, each of his heavenly melodies, with its godly aura, contained numerous profound truths.

This Zither Pavilion was basked in the sound of Immortal Emperor Min Ren's melodies again and again. The melodic patterns not only contained the aura of Min Ren, but it also contained the hidden profound truths of the grand Dao.

One could say, the densely packed melodic patterns in this pavilion contained a matchless Dao of zither melody. If one used these zither patterns to embark on the Dao, they could definitely achieve an incredible grand Dao cultivation.

However, Li Qiye was not interested in the Dao of the zither. He only wanted to borrow the emperor's power and immortal intent hidden within these patterns. The ancient zither in his hand, and the melodies played by Min Ren; he knew them like the back of his hand because he was the one that taught Min Ren. He could unleash a frightening power from this ancient zither using Min Ren's emperor's power and immortal intent.

The moment when Li Qiye was being punished at the Ghost Pavilion, there was also a heavenly frightening event happening at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

This day, outside of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, there was a huge ancient ship flying towards them. This ship was extremely big, it was the length of ten miles. When it flew in the sky, it casted a frightening shadow on the ground.

The ancient ship was resembled a mobile fortress. It absorbed and spat out ancient brilliant lights. The body of the ship was engraved with magical runes and formations that were moving continuously, emancipating the power of the grand Dao. Without a doubt, this ship could not only fly in the sky, but it could also defend itself against cultivators' attacks.

On this ancient ship, a crimson blood energy, along with an ancient Royal Noble aura, poured down freely without any intention of suppressing itself. The rolling power of the Royal Noble aura was felt by the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect disciples, even from afar.

This type of arrival, it was not a friendly visit; it was a clear provocation against the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!

The moment the ancient ship arrived at the outskirts of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, eight hundred soldiers from the ship simultaneously roared, it was as powerful as a rolling tsunami that encompassed the entire Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. It deafeningly shook the ears of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect disciples, and caused their blood energies to run amok!

In a flash, the sound of bells ringing echoed throughout the

entire sect, warning the disciples that enemies were approaching!

However, even though the ancient ship arrived at the sect, it didn't start its attack. The giant ancient ship simply stopped beyond the boundary of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

In the midst of everything, both the top and bottom of the sect were alarmed. It was not only the sectional leaders and protectors; even the six elders were unable to sit still in their chairs.

The moment First Elder left the main peak, he saw a flag on the ancient ship that was embroidered with the word "War", and he couldn't help but darken his expression! At the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, Royal Nobles that could have the word "War" on their ship like this could be counted on one's fingers. Currently, he didn't have to look; he already knew who the person was.

"Lie Zhan Hou!"

A Royal Noble whose title was bestowed upon by the Mortal Emperor of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, as well as one of the strongest Royal Nobles within the kingdom. Even though he did not originate from the Heavenly God Sect but from another big sect, he pledged his loyalty to the Mortal Emperor. He had accomplished many remarkable military achievements. At the frontier of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, there were countless smaller sects that were stamped out by his hands!

Lie Zhan Hou was not only a brave general of the kingdom, but he was also a renowned ruthless character.

Lie Zhan Hou brought along eight hundred soldiers to the outskirts of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. This matter did not simply just alarm the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, but it also alarmed the other sects within the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom; especially the closest ones to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. They became frightened with the appearance of the ancient ship.

“The warship of Lie Zhan Hou, could it be that the Marquis is personally going into battle?”

Seeing this ancient ship, countless cultivators were surprised.

A nearby sect master’s expression darkened, and he said:

“After his title bestowment, the Marquis rarely left the kingdom capital. Why did he suddenly appear here without any indications!”

The appearance of the ancient ship caused many cultivators to secretly follow. Seeing it stop right outside of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect made these cultivators glance at each other, filled with astonishment.

“Could it be that Lie Zhan Hou is personally attacking the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect?”

A sect master’s face changed its color, and he quietly mumbled. At the moment, the many powerful characters thought about

many different outcomes.

The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and the Heavenly God Sect were mortal enemies. Today, the Heavenly God Sect created the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom and it was erected on the remains of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect's old kingdom; the kingdom was even bigger in territory.

The war that occurred thirty thousand years ago, the ancestor of the Heavenly God Sect personally took action, and the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was utterly defeated. With their miserable defeat, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect couldn't do anything outside of returning to the ancestral land.

After the grand defeat, the Heavenly God Sect didn't use this opportunity to give chase; its ancestor also didn't personally slaughter the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. During the decline of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, both of the sects still had minor skirmishes; however, the Heavenly God Sect still did not destroy the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

Regarding this matter, within the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom and even the Grand Middle Territory, there were many different versions of rumors circulating. Some said that the Heavenly God Sect did not destroy the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect because it still had a living monstrous ancestor who was extremely powerful; even the ancestor of the Heavenly God Sect wasn't sure that he could destroy the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect in one breath.

There was another rumour that the Heavenly God Sect ancestor wasn't sure that he could destroy the emperor foundation of the

Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Even though the sect had declined, in the end, it was still a sect created by an Immortal Emperor. On top of this holy ground, the foundation built by an Immortal Emperor could not be shaken. The Heavenly God Sect was not confident in attacking this emperor foundation.

A different rumor had it that because the Immortal Emperor True Treasure of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect still existed, the Heavenly God Sect couldn't destroy it. As long as the Immortal Emperor True Treasure remained in their hands, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect would not be destroyed!

No matter what, to sum it up, after the Heavenly God Sect's victory over the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and the founding of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, the Heavenly God Sect had never directly attacked the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

A few ten thousand years quickly passed, and suddenly, the warship of Lie Zhan Hou appeared outside of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; how could others not be surprised?

Chapter 75 : Soldiers Approaching The City Walls (1)

The arrival of Lie Zhan Hou at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect caused quite a stir throughout the kingdom. Lie Zhan Hou's title was bestowed by the Mortal Emperor himself, so, to a certain extent, he represented the will of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom and the Heavenly God Sect.

Since Lie Zhan Hou was personally leading the troops, could it mean that the Heavenly God Sect had finally decided to make a move against the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect?

“It could be that the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect has fallen completely with no hope for revival, so the Heavenly God Sect finally turned the butcher knife against them.”

An elder from a different sect said.

There was an old monster that had some knowledge regarding the war that year, and he said:

“It seems like Liu San Jian is truly dead; the Heavenly God Sect finally wants to make a move.”

Liu San Jian, that year, was of illustrious prestige. In the legends, Liu San Jian was not an ordinary genius. Some people said that he was the disciple of Young Emperor Mu, but some also said that he

was the grand disciple of Young Emperor Mu. Rumors had it that in the last war thirty thousand years ago, Liu San Jian personally commanded and fought against the Heavenly God Sect ancestor. Even though the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect lost disastrously, the Heavenly God Sect was still in fear of Liu San Jian, and they did not want to attack the lair of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!

Lie Zhan Hou personally leading troops against the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect made other heritages and sects think about many things. The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was of Immortal Emperor heritage and contained Immortal Emperor Min Ren's merit laws and Emperor Treasures. Only one Emperor merit law or an Emperor Treasure stranded in the human world was enough for people's eyes to become reddened with greed.

Even though there were early rumors that many of the Emperor merit laws of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect were lost, it still had some Emperor merit laws and Virtuous Paragon merit laws; this was still enough for countless sects to be overwhelmed with avarice.

At this moment, many sects were privately discussing that the personal expedition of Lie Zhan Hou was for the Emperor merit laws, or even the Heaven's Will Secret Law of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

The warship stopping right outside of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect caused both the upper and lower ranks of the sect to be extremely alarmed. At this moment, the sect's atmosphere was extremely tense, and the disciples mentally prepared themselves

for war!

At this time, in the warship, a person stood up. This was a middle-aged man with a tall and majestic figure. He was adorned with battle armor like a general on an expedition.

This man wore a leopard and tiger ornamented headband, and his eyes beamed with ominous ferocity, full of threatening momentum. Once he stood up, he was like a golden mountain and jade pillar. He was filled with uncontrolled blood energy, like a gigantic tsunami soaring through the entire sky. Frightening blood energy floated around his body. Standing there, he was like a leopard covered in blood, wanting to devour humans; this caused others to smell the bloodthirst from afar.

Lie Zhan Hou, general of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, vicious underling of the Mortal Emperor. He was not only a powerful Royal Noble, but he was also a bloodthirsty warrior.

“Haha, Brother Gu, I heard that your sect was of an Immortal Emperor heritage. This general has always looked up to Emperor merit laws; hearing that your great sect has a peerless Emperor merit law, my curiosity couldn’t help but become tingly. So, today I came to learn, wanting to see the invincible style of Immortal Emperor Min Ren’s merit laws!”

Lie Zhan Hou stood on top of the warship, and he laughed with an arrogant and overbearing attitude.

Lie Zhan Hou cut straight to the point and bluntly called it

“wanting to learn”, causing the entire Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect’s expressions to become ugly. This presumptuous attitude was as if the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect didn’t have anyone of worth.

As for the majority of the cultivators from the other sects watching from outside, they glanced at each other. It was as they thought; Lie Zhan Hou indeed came for the Emperor merit laws of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

Against the provocation of Lie Zhan Hou, First Elder Gu Tie Shou had not yet accepted, but Second Elder Cao Xiong had jumped forward and fiercely shouted:

“Little Boy Lie, don’t be arrogant, our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect isn’t a place that will tolerate your impudence. Today, this seat will teach you a lesson!”

Finished speaking, Cao Xiong’s Fate Palace floated in the air along with true energy on top of his head, and he stepped on top of the warship.

Cao Xiong was the first one to accept the challenge, causing the elders of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect to glance at each other’s eyes.

Against Cao Xiong’s challenge, Lie Zhan Hou coldly glared at him once, and then presumptuously said:

“Only Cao Xiong, yet you still dare to talk big in front of this seat; roll away!”

After the words came out, a banner of blood on top of Lie Zhan Hou’s head cut straight down.

Once the blood banner appeared, it immediately cut across ten thousand miles. The blood banner up in the sky was like a curtain of oceanic blood hiding the sun. Within the blood banner, countless skulls floated up and down while their anguished wailings reaching a thousand miles away. It was unknown how many lives were taken and devoured by this blood banner.

“Blood banner; the true energy of Lie Zhan Hou!”

Seeing the blood banner cutting straight down, many people’s expressions greatly changed, and they lost their voice.

“Open...”

Cao Xiong loudly screamed, and his true energy pierced the heaven and met the blood banner. A “Boom” loudly rang. Even when Cao Xiong was borrowing the world’s pure energy, he still couldn’t block one attack from Lie Zhan Hou.

Cao Xiong was knocked away by the blood banner, and he sprayed out a mouthful of blood; he immediately retreated. Even though Cao Xiong’s cultivation was not shallow and could be considered the second strongest in the sect, but compared to a

Royal Noble, the difference was too great.

Lie Zhan Hou coldly glanced around, and he said with disdain:

“Little Named Hero, your talent is not enough to reach the apex; you are but an insect running his big mouth, wanting to die...”

Cao Xiong reddened from anger, and he shouted:

“Little Boy Lie, I will fight against you to the death...”

However, at this moment, First Elder Gu Tie Shou stopped Cao Xiong, and he told the other elders:

“Escort Brother Cao back and heal his wounds. Brother Cao, you are not his match; let Older Brother go.”

Cao Xiong still wanted to fight, but the other elders consoled and stopped him, so he had to unwillingly go back to heal.

At this moment, First Elder Gu Tie Shou coldly stared at Lie Zhan Hou with fierce eyes. A loud “boom” occurred, and the first elder’s blood energy was like the ocean, continuous without pauses. Each of his Dao incantations traveled around his body. The more frightening part was that on top of his head was a hovering Kun Peng. The moment the Kun Peng let out a loud roar, it flew to the sky’s dome, and the gigantic Kun Peng immediately crushed the dome.

At this moment, the Kun Peng looked down on the eight directions, encompassing all living beings, and the peerless frightening pressure crushed all its enemies. The Kun Peng was considered the strongest existence in this world; each strand of its energies was capable of suffocating the heavens and earths!

Against such a strong enemy, First Elder did not hold back anything, and he directly revealed his Royal Noble power.

“Kun Peng’s Six Variants...”

Seeing the Kun Peng collapsing the sky, many powerful cultivators’ hearts were shaken. Emperor merit laws were indeed worthy of their name, peerless in all generations. No matter how powerful a Virtuous Paragon merit law was, it could not compare to an Emperor merit law!

At this moment, the Kun Peng bullied the heavens, causing others to be unable to breathe. A complete Emperor merit law in the hands of a Royal Noble’s power was monstrous. At the same rank of Royal Noble, if the opponent did not also practice an Emperor merit law, he would want to avoid them and retreat!

“If you want to fight, this old man will fight you!”

At this moment, First Elder Gu Tie Shou was dominating the heavens. As a descendant of an Immortal Emperor heritage, even though his talents were not good, he definitely was not a coward.

Finished speaking, he took one step forward, and he invaded the space in front of Lie Zhan Hou. Lie Zhan Hou changed his expression, and he roared. The blood banner came crashing down – one banner to strike down and tear apart the fabric of space. The boundless sea of blood wanted to submerge Gu Tie Shou and dissolve him.

The Kun Peng jumped in the sky and flipped its tail, like a giant fish wanting to jump freely out of the vast sea. A loud “Thump” occurred. This giant tail easily shattered the sea of blood of Lie Zhan Hou. On top of the blood banner, Lie Zhan Hou immediately took a few steps back!

“Die...”

Lie Zhan Hou’s expression became ugly. He crazily yelled and activated his blood banner. Suddenly, eighteen blood images came out from the blood banner. Each towered at ten thousand zhang; their loud and ferocious roars shook the heavens and earths.

“Bloody Giants Diagram!”

Once the Bloody Giants came out, they trampled the world. The expressions of everyone greatly changed; this was the true energy of Lie Zhan Hou! Absolutely powerful, who knew how many Royal Nobles had been killed by this technique.

“Open...”

Each of the giants trampled the heavens and rushed forward. Gu Tie Shou was not deterred, and continue to activate the Kun Peng's Six Variants. The Kun Peng let out a long roar and dived downward. The tail of the Kun Peng could not be mitigated, and each Blood Giant immediately collapsed. The moment of the impact, the giants were just like pieces of paper.

“Bang...”

The Kun Peng easily destroyed the true energy diagram of Lie Zhan Hou. When the tail of the Kun Peng struck down, Lie Zhan Hou essentially couldn't stop it, and he was knocked one thousand miles away, spraying a mouthful of blood.

Seeing this scene, everyone couldn't help but to breath in cold air. The entire Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was ecstatic, and they started cheering.

“Emperor merit laws are so dreadful. Gu Tie Shou didn't even let out his true energy; he only used the Emperor merit law to defeat the true energy of Lie Zhan Hou. This matter, this matter is simply frightful!”

The cultivators observing the fight, no matter if it was a tyrant of one domain or the head of one sect, their faces couldn't help but greatly change.

“The Kun Peng's Six Variants! According to the legends, it is the strongest core Emperor merit law of Immortal Emperor Min Ren;

this ability is unbelievable!”

Many people lost their colors seeing this scene.

Today, they finally had the chance to witness the power of an Emperor merit law. Their hearts started beating faster. Emperor merit law, eh? This was too heaven defying!

“You are not enough!”

At this moment, Gu Tie Shou’s domination pierced the heavens. In a flash, he was able to catch up to Lie Zhan Hou, and the Kun Peng manifesting into reality stomped down on him.

“Return...”

Lie Zhan Hou loudly roared and summoned a Godly Diagram. Once this godly diagram appeared, it instantly became endless mountains and rivers and sucked Gu Tie Shou inside.

The godly diagram manifested into mountains and rivers; others could only see the faint shadows. Next were rumbling noises. One could barely see Gue Tie Shou jumping into the sky inside the endless mountains and rivers formation. His Kun Peng moved unhindered in the heavens and earths, and his mysterious true energy swept the eight directions. He wanted to escape from this diagram several times, but the formation kept on suppressing him.

“Inside my Yang Shou Mountains and Rivers Diagram, let see if

you can cause any waves!”

Lie Zhan Hou coldly scowled, and in a flash, he also went inside the diagram; he took control of the formation, and the fight with Gu Tie Shou continued on inside the Godly Diagram.

“Yang Shou Mountains and Rivers Diagram...”

Seeing this formation trapping Gu Tie Shou, many people were secretly shocked. A sect master who was watching the fight exclaimed:

“I heard that the Lie family has an unfathomable Ancient Saint who was well versed in formation techniques and was researching ancient formations. He created a Godly Diagram named the Yang Shou Mountains and Rivers Diagram. I heard that if this formation was at full strength, not mentioning Ancient Saints, it could even defeat Heavenly Monarchs.”

Reminder: Named Hero -> Royal Noble -> Enlightened Being -> Ancient Saint -> Heavenly Sovereign -> Heavenly Monarch -> Virtuous Paragon -> Immortal Emperor

Chapter 76 : Soldiers Approaching The City Walls (2)

“Gu Tie Shou is in trouble! Even if Lie Zhan Hou couldn’t activate ten parts of this formation, he would still be enough to slay him.”

Seeing this scene, everyone shook their heads in pity.

The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was struck with horror seeing Gue Tie Shou trapped in the formation. The four elders lost their color; the situation was very disadvantageous for the sect.

However, everyone underestimated the strength of Gu Tie Shou. This battle lasted for three days and three nights. Even though he was trapped, he used the power of the Kun Peng’s Six Variants and maneuvered freely. Even though he couldn’t kill a way out of the Yang Shou Mountains and Rivers Diagram, if Lie Zhan Hou wanted to kill Gu Tie Shou inside the formation; this was also not an easy task.

At this moment, Gu Tie Shou and Lie Zhan Hou were persevering inside the formation, and they both were not able to suppress the other.

“Gu Tie Shou was indeed secretive! I thought he was just a Named Hero before; however, it was unthinkable that he is an experienced Royal Noble!”

The entire Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect's hearts were hanging high in a cage up above. At the moment, only Gu Tie Shou in the sect had the power to personally uphold one direction. The other four elders were only Named Heroes, and they were unable to help. Even if the four were to fight together, they would still be unable to compete against Lie Zhan Hou.

All of the disciples knew a calamity had befallen on the sect including Li Qiye, who was punished inside the Ghost Pavilion. While the pressure of a Royal Noble flooded the entire Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, Li Qiye simply only glanced into the far distance once.

Outside of the sect, the grand battle had been going on for five days and five nights, and the stalemate continued with Gu Tie Shou being unable to escape and Lie Zhan Hou unable to kill him. Gu Tie Shou could not surrender, and Lie Zhan Hou definitely could not withdraw his troops, so both of them could only continue this act.

On the seemingly tranquil fifth night, the Ghost Pavilion became even more ghastly. Li Qiye was meditating with his eyes closed in the main hall; it was as if the battle outside of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had nothing to do with him.

The quiet Ghost Pavilion did appear to be haunted during this silent night. An unknown amount of time had passed, and then suddenly, a gust of wind blew Li Qiye's eyes open; in front of him stood a person.

Li Qiye examined the person standing in front of him, and he

smilingly asked:

“Elder Cao, the night is already so late; why did you come here?”

At this moment, standing in front of Li Qiye was Elder Cao, who was recovering from his wounds inside the sect!

Cao Xiong stared at Li Qiye with a chilling gaze, but his countenance was cheerful; he happily said:

“My good talented nephew, I was asked by the other elders to come teach you the Daylight Sky Merit Law.”

“Daylight Sky Merit Law?”

Hearing this, Li Qiye couldn't help but smile, and he said:

“Elder Cao, I heard that the Daylight Sky Merit Law was a minor Heaven's Will Secret Law of our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Even though it is only a minor law, its importance is even higher than Virtuous Paragon merit laws. All of the elders must agree before passing down this technique.”

“My coming here to give you the Daylight Sky Merit Law was unanimously decided by the elders.”

Cao Xiong busily continued:

“Currently, a calamity has struck our sect, and First Brother is trapped inside a formation. The elders need a miracle, and we need a Heaven’s Will Secret Law to come to the rescue. Hopefully, good nephew could dream and see the Patriarch, so he could grant you the Heaven’s Will Secret Law.”

Hearing Cao Xiong’s words, Li Qiye hesitated for a moment, and then he replied:

“Elder Cao, I’m afraid this won’t work. Even with the dream instruction, it would still need several months, ah!”

Cao Xiong hurriedly said:

“Try it once for now to see if you can see the Patriarch or not in your dream. If not, we’ll think of something else.”

Li Qiye also hastily said:

“Ok, I will try for a little bit. Did Elder Cao bring along the Daylight Sky Merit Law?”

Cao Xiong took out a manual, and he said:

“This matter was too urgent; the original Daylight Sky copy wasn’t brought along. I brought you a hand written copy of it.”

Li Qiye accepted the manual, and he was going to open it;

however, he then hesitated again, put down the manual, looked at Cao Xiong, and he said:

“Elder Cao, even though I am only a third generation disciple, regarding this grave matter, I still know that a Heaven’s Will Secret Law has the utmost importance in the foundation of our sect. I want to meet the other elders once. It is not that I suspect Elder Cao, but because this matter is so important, I need to see them to really know that it was a unanimous agreement.”

“My good nephew, this is our existential crisis in front of our eyes! The other elders are outside to hold back the powerful enemies, and they can’t come back at this moment; they could only entrust it to me.”

Cao Xiong hastily said with a worried expression. Afterwards, he rolled his eyes, then he said:

“If good nephew really wants to meet the other elders, so be it. I will just lead you to them.”

“This could not be better.”

Having heard this, Li Qiye nodded his head, but he then shook his head, saying:

“Elder Cao, I’m afraid this will not do since I am still serving my punishment at the moment. I have to stay at the Ghost Pavilion for another half a year; I cannot leave.”

“It is a life or death moment for us, and the elders had decided to abolish your punishment, good nephew. We don’t have much time, hurry and follow me.”

Cao Xiong impatiently said.

Li Qiye hesitated for a moment, and then shook his head again, saying:

“Elder, this still will not do. Protector Mo is responsible for watching me. If I want to leave this place, we have to inform him first. How about this, Elder Cao quickly go bring Protector Mo here, and we will leave together.”

“Stop your long windedness!”

At this moment, Cao Xiong lost his patience, and he said:

“I let you go, so you go with me!”

Li Qiye said while staring at Cao Xiong:

“Elder Cao, what is the meaning of this? I am only following the normal protocol. As an elder of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, you should know the exact procedures!”

“Less nonsensical rubbish! Follow me right now!”

Cao Xiong's gaze became fierce, releasing and absorbing violent intents, and he gravely said:

“Are you walking by yourself, or will I have to take you?!”

At this point, Li Qiye suddenly appeared to understand. He took a step back while hugging his zither; he shockingly said.

“Elder Cao, you didn't come here because of the other elders' request.”

“Haha, heh, you can't be considered stupid yet!”

Seeing Li Qiye's suspicion, Cao Xiong decided to stop his pretension. He gravely said:

“If you want to live then follow me right now; otherwise, this seat will personally take action, and I will make your face pretty!”

It seemed Li Qiye at this time had finally calmed down. He glanced at Cao Xiong, and he said:

“So it seems Elder Cao wants to seize the Heaven's Will Secret Law then? However, even if the Patriarch Dao instructs me in my dreams, I still wouldn't give it to you.”

“Haha, this you don't need to worry about. Wait until this seat

brings you to an isolated location and imprison you. At that moment, this seat won't be afraid of your defiance!"

Cao Xiong said with a devious laugh.

Li Qiye shook his head, and he said:

"If I go missing, I'm afraid Protector Mo will quickly find out."

Cao Xiong shadily laughed, then said:

"So what if he finds out? Hehe, at this moment, a disaster has befallen the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; it is a mess, and there are no precautions at the Ghost Pavilion. Who is to say that you didn't take this chaotic opportunity to escape. Hehe, if there were a page or two of a copy of the Daylight Sky Merit Law, then I'm afraid everyone will suspect you to be a spy who snuck into the sect just for the Daylight Sky Merit Law and the Heaven's Will Secret Law. Heh, at that moment, Protector Mo and the others will be your accomplices!"

Li Qiye shook his head.

"Elder Cao, you are too confident in your calculations. You aren't afraid that the other elders will see through it?"

"Hukhuk, the other elders will see through it? Huk, maybe after this disaster, there might be a new sect master for the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Huk, if Gu Tie Shou was trapped to death in

the formation, the sect would need a capable elder to lead it against the powerful opponents. Also, the current sect master is weak and useless. A calamity has arrived, yet she cowardly hid outside; thus, the entire Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, I'm afraid it will need to make a wise decision."

Cao Xiong thought about his calculations, and he couldn't help but to deviously laugh.

Li Qiye smiled and said:

"So, Elder Cao would be the new sect master then. Elder Cao will be the new sect master; why the need for this hastiness to seize the Heaven's Will Secret Law?"

Cao Xiong's eyes became severe, and he began to be impatient.

"Less talking!"

Li Qiye stared at Cao Xiong, couldn't help but laugh, and then he said:

"I understand, so you bargained with others. Was it Dong Sheng Long, or Lie Zhan Hou? It seems like the person who you conspired with will not release the hawk without seeing the rabbit; if you don't give them the Heaven's Will Secret Law, they will not withdraw the troops; or they won't drag you to the sect master's seat?"

“Rubbish, come with me!”

Cao Xiong became incomparably restless, let out a deafening roar, and then he reached out for Li Qiye with his hand.

“Cao Xiong, I didn’t think the sect traitor would turn out to be you!”

At this moment, a loud roar came forward. From the outside, five people rushed in. This included the four elders along with Protector Mo!

Elder Sun’s group suddenly came in causing Cao Xiong’s expression to greatly sour, and he took a step back. In a flash, he captured Li Qiye, and he retreated to a corner.

At this time, Elder Sun, Elder Qian, Elder Zhou, and Elder Wu quickly surrounded Cao Xiong.

Elder Qian yelled:

“Cao Xiong, you betrayed the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and sold off the sect’s Emperor law! How will you face the ancestors?”

Cao Xiong’s face was sometimes red and sometimes white. He was in disbelief, and he frightenedly said:

“You, why all are all of you here? Why are you not outside the

sect?”

“Elder Cao, I have been watching all of your moves! You and Lie Zhan Hou’s act was too real; even the elders were fooled, but you didn’t fool me.”

Protector Mo gravely said.

Cao Xiong’s expression became extremely ugly. He was using this opportunity to capture Li Qiye without anyone knowing, so he didn’t think that Protector Mo was trailing him.

“Cao Xiong, it is not too late to surrender!”

Elder Wu shouted.

“If successful, I would be a king; if failed, then I am a villain. I have nothing else to say. Know better and make way for me, otherwise, I will crush your treasured disciple. Without him, you all will never find the Heaven’s Will Secret Law!”

Cao Xiong thunderously exclaimed.

Seeing Cao Xiong’s five fingers gripping Li Qiye’s head, the expressions of Elder Sun’s group greatly soured, and they glanced at each other.

“So he is the key to the Heaven’s Will Secret Law!”

At this moment, a calm voice filled the hall.

Chapter 77 : One Hand Kills A Thousand Enemies (1)

At this time, a person entered the Ghost Pavilion. The moment he walked in, he let off his Royal Noble pressure causing the elders to greatly change their expressions.

Seeing this person, Elder Sun bursted into cries.

“Dong Sheng Long...”

“Cao Xiong, you didn’t tell me that this little brat was the key to the Heaven’s Will Secret Law!”

Dong Sheng Long’s gaze fell upon Li Qiye, solidified, and then he bursted out laughing:

“So to speak, obtaining this little brat is the same as obtaining the Emperor merit laws of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!”

“Brother Dong, this isn’t the time for us to blame each other!”

Cao Xiong said with a serious tone:

“At this moment, we have to work together. Let us leave this place first, then speak!”

Dong Sheng Long glared at Cao Xiong, coldly sneered, and then he said:

“Cao Xiong, just with your little strategy, you still want to command me? Hmph, if I hadn’t been watching over you closely, you would be a dead man right now!”

“Cao Xiong, conspiring with outsider and betraying the sect; you have committed irredeemable crimes!”

At this moment, Elder Zhou couldn’t help but roar; the four elders were enraged by this betrayal!

Cao Xiong’s face turned white, then green. Finally, he chillingly scowled, and he didn’t bother arguing. Dong Sheng Long’s arrival had sealed the conclusion of this matter.

Dong Sheng Long stared at the four elders, and smiled:

“Old Man Zhou, your words are true, but after today, it will not be. Heh, Li Qiye conspired with the Nine Saint Demon Gate to steal the Emperor merit laws of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, and he was discovered by the four elders. Then, a great battle broke out between you all and the traitor and Li Shuangyan! In the end, both sides died valiantly in battle!”

“As for Gu Tie Shou, ah. Cao Xiong and I will join forces with him and enter the formation, and we will defeat Lie Zhan Hou and

expel the enemies, but Gu Tie Shou will die from his heavy wounds inside. The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect's Su Yong Huang was cowardly and weak, and she hid away in the outskirts, not daring to fight. The sect will definitely remove her sect master position. Elder Cao has contributed greatly along with the support of the entire disciple body, so he becomes the new sect master of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect."

Dong Sheng Long slowly spoke.

The four elders' faces became extremely hard to look at. One Cao Xiong, they were not afraid of, but with the appearance of Dong Sheng Long, the outcome has been determined. The four of them would not be able to compete with Dong Sheng Long!

"This story, it is not too bad right? It could even be a legend praised by the future Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect."

Dong Sheng Long was quite satisfied with his ploy, and he smiled:

"Cao Xiong will be at ease with his sect master position, and, as for me ah! As the guest adviser for the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect for so long, I have fulfilled my obligations."

"The moment you step down, you will also bring the Emperor merit laws of the sect away, right?"

At this moment, a pleasant and ringing laughter came forward

from Li Qiye, who was under Cao Xiong's grasp.

Li Qiye was still hugging his ancient zither. Even under Cao Xiong's control, he still maintained his cool.

At this moment, he smilingly stared at Dong Sheng Long, and he clearly spoke:

“Not a bad plan. Unfortunately, in my eyes, it is simply superfluous. Also, before killing you all, remember this one phrase, anyone who opposes my path will be killed without mercy!” [\[1\]](#)

“Zhang...” Finished speaking, the five fingers of Li Qiye suddenly pulled on the zither strings. In a flash, the zither in his hands spewed out an endless brilliance with continuous Dao pressure, and he broke Cao Xiong's grasp on him.

“Zhang...” The harmonious sound of the zither caused the melodic patterns inside the Ghost Pavilion to come alive. At this moment, these densely packed patterns suddenly lit up, and endless magical runes came forward along with a clear sword note; two sword auras immediately came pouring out!

“Ahh...”

A sword blade cleaved down, Cao Xiong was too late to scream as his head was sent flying upward. He then noticed the blood spewing from his neck. Even after death, he didn't realize what

just happened.

“A...”

Dong Sheng Long pitifully bellowed. The sword aura swiftly pierced into his body, and the sword edge, in a flash, destroyed his Dao foundation. Under one sword, his fragile Dao foundation couldn't handle one blow; it was as if it was dry and rotten wood. He violently spurted out a mouthful of blood, and he fell straight down on the ground!

“No...”

Dong Sheng Long bellowed while rolling on the ground. He lost all of his color from fear, and he crazily screamed:

“No, NO, this is impossible!”

At this point, the four elders and Protector Mo were frightened frozen. Cao Xiong was acceptable; however, Dong Sheng Long was a Royal Noble, yet he still couldn't block one blow. Even till now, the four elders still didn't know exactly what just happened.

“M-my, my three thousand years of cultivation...”

In the end, Dong Sheng Long let out a loud roar, and he shiveringly crawled up. In a short moment, he was a few hundred years older. His back bent down, and his flesh dried up.

“Little animal, I will fight you till death...”

After standing up, Dong Sheng Long became crazy, and he rushed forward at Li Qiye. However, at this moment, he was like a hundred year old man, and he couldn't walk without shaking.

“Grab him!”

At this time, Li Qiye raised his eyebrows, and he ordered.

The four elders and Protector Mo regained their spirit, and Elder Qian easily captured Dong Sheng Long. Elder Qian was stunned when he noticed that Dong Sheng Long's cultivation was completely destroyed.

“Little animal, kill me if you are courageous! Kill me, ah!”

Dong Sheng Long, with dishevelled hair, crazily struggled to escape Elder Qian's grasp, and he tried to pounce on Li Qiye with his nails.

He cultivated for three thousand years just to lose it all in one night. To a cultivator, this was a fate worse than death. One couldn't blame Dong Sheng Long for being so outraged.

Li Qiye slowly glanced at him, and he said:

“We will definitely kill you, however, just not right now. You a thousand times, ten thousand times shouldn’t have offended me; this was you courting death.”

Dong Sheng Long deafeningly screeched, and he tried to pounce at Li Qiye again, but Elder Qian easily held him back.

Such a change rocked the four elders’ hearts. Earlier, Dong Sheng Long was a Royal Noble, causing them to fear ten thousand times over. Even if the four of them fought together, they wouldn’t necessarily be a match for Dong Sheng Long. However, just a moment later, he became an old man that couldn’t catch a chicken properly! This matter was too frightening.

The four elders hesitatingly stared at the ancient zither in Li Qiye’s chest. Seeing its ancient style, they couldn’t help but shiver.

Finally, Dong Sheng Long was taken away to be imprisoned.

“This, this matter... What actually happened in the end?”

Cao Xiong betrayed the sect; this matter did not need to be discussed. However, Li Qiye easily killing Cao Xiong and destroying Dong Sheng Long caused the elders to still be stunned.

“It was only an Immortal Emperor’s emperor’s power and immortal intent; when they turn into swords, they are enough to slay the four directions.”

Hugging his zither, Li Qiye calmly explained.

At this moment, the four elders and Protector Mo couldn't help but to analyze this Ghost Pavilion. Earlier when Li Qiye played the zither, they all felt the change in the Dao; however, everything was so fast and they couldn't see clearly. Right now, they still couldn't see through the mysteries here.

“Where did this ancient zither come from?”

Elder Sun drew in a cold breath of air, and he asked.

Li Qiye smiled:

“I was meditating at this wall. When night came, the Patriarch appeared in my dreams and told me that downstairs had an ancient zither that was buried. That year, the Patriarch used to play it and later on, it sunk to the ground.”

“I followed the Patriarch's instructions, and I dug out this ancient zither. In my dreams, the Patriarch also informed me about the true mysteries regarding this Zither Pavilion. Originally, this pavilion was the place where the Patriarch used to reminisce. During his period of upholding the world's immortal power, he used to play the zither here. Unwittingly, Dao truths were imprinted within the zither laws. After a long period of time, the entire Zither Pavilion contained these zither laws, and eventually, these zither laws were able to contain the vast emperor's power and immortal intent of the Patriarch. Not only that, these zither laws also hid a peerless Dao of the zither.”

Li Qiye spoke continuously like everything was a matter of fact.

Li Qiye smilingly continued:

“The Patriarch in my dream taught me how to play and activate the zither laws in order to borrow the emperor’s power and immortal intent.”

Hearing Li Qiye’s words, the four elders couldn’t help but greatly change their expressions. Even in their wildest dreams, they wouldn’t believe that a place they considered the Ghost Pavilion would contain such emperor’s power and immortal intent like this!

Elder Wu emotionally said:

“Li Qiye is the person our ancestor has personally chosen to lead our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. The Patriarch had chosen him, and this means that in the future, he will lead us to revival. He will bring back the glory of our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!”

It was originally Dao instructions in a dream, but now it was treasure seeking in a dream. To the four elders, there was no doubt that the Patriarch had chosen Li Qiye to be the new leader of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

In the midst of everything, Li Qiye’s status, in the minds of the four elders, became completely different. Li Qiye was the one

chosen by Immortal Emperor Min Ren, and he would be his representative!

The four elders struggled to regain their spirits, and Elder Qian muttered:

“The matter of the Zither Pavilion, I had read about. I heard that this really was the place where the Patriarch used to play his instrument. Who would have thought that this place inherited his emperor’s power and immortal intent!”

Elder Zhou couldn’t help but to quietly murmur.

“This pavilion inherited the emperor’s power and immortal intent; does that mean it was even more powerful than our patriarch’s portrait?”

“This is all thanks to Qi Ye; otherwise, we would have missed this emperor treasure.”

Elder Sun exclaimed.

Elder Wu excitedly said:

“The Patriarch protects our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect! He is not willing to see our decline, so he chose Qi Ye to be the one that restores our sect!”

Suddenly, the four elders were too ecstatic; Li Qiye's miracle allowed for them to see a ray of hope.

“Not good...”

At this moment, Elder Qian suddenly gathered his thoughts, and he shockingly said:

“First Brother is still trapped within the formation! We need to make haste in order to save him. Perhaps the Heavenly God Sect would even use another evil plot to harm First Brother!”

Li Qiye smiled, and he said:

“Within the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, this is not a difficult matter. Let me play a tune and destroy the formation of Lie Zhan Hou.”

Finished speaking, he sat down in a meditative pose on the ground, and he began to play the ancient zither.

The ancient zither lit up at once, and the Zither Pavilion also lit up as well...

[\[1\]](#) Superfluous raw expression was – drawing a cake on a piece of paper. One can draw a cake on a piece of paper, but they can't eat it, so it is meaningless

Chapter 78 : One Hand Kills A Thousand Enemies (2)

The densely packed textures inside the Zither Pavilion emerged and turned into endless magical incantations.

“Boom...”

At this time, the power inside the melodic patterns were initiated by Li Qiye. In a flash, the emperor’s power and immortal intent broke out, suffocating the heavens. Even four elders’ legs were shivering, unable to stand straight. Under the pressure of the immortal emperor’s remnants, they were entirely suppressed, falling flat to the ground.

“The soul of the Patriarch...” [\[1\]](#)

Feeling the ancient and majestic immortal emperor’s presence, the four elders were extremely emotional to the point where tears dripped down their faces; they finally got to see the immortal emperor’s aura of the Patriarch after countless years had passed.

Outside of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, there were still many experts watching the fight between Gu Tie Shou and Lie Zhan Hou. Even though Gu Tie Shou hadn’t been able to escape the formation, even under the suppression of both the formation and Lie Zhan Hou, he still stood strong; he valiantly moved the other cultivators.

Their hearts were moved by his unyielding will to not surrender until death; he was like a weak insect, yet still struggled to survive with all he had. The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, in the end, was still an Immortal Emperor lineage. Even though they had declined for thirty thousand years, they still had some hidden strength!

As for the eight hundred soldiers that came along with Lie Zhan Hou, they coldly smirked in their minds. Even if Gu Tie Shou tried his best, he still wouldn't make it past tomorrow. There would be a change of dynasty in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, yet Gu Tie Shou was simply struggling on his last foot.

“Boom!” At the moment when cultivators were thinking about how this fight would end, suddenly, inside the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, a light thrust forward. This light tore through the sky in a flash, and it traveled through the space with enough power to cut down all the celestials.

In the blink of an eye, within the boundary of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, everyone felt an unbeatable ancient emperor pressure. Within this moment, countless existences trembled.

“What’s happening?!”

All the cultivators outside were shivering with fear from the depth of their souls! Under this ancient breath, they all felt like they were insects and ants; they were not enough to reach the apex.

“Emperor’s power and immortal intent! Could it be that the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect wants to go all out and activate its Immortal Emperor Life Treasure?!”

Feeling this type of pressure, a sect master strugglingly spoke.

“Not good...”

Feeling this ancient immortal pressure, the eight hundred soldiers on top of the warship were aghast, but everything was too late.

The light in the sky suddenly turned into a sword edge, and it swept horizontally across the heavens and earth. This sword edge shouldered an ancient immortal pressure, and with just this one blow, it could be seen that nothing could stop it.

“Phooosh...”

Waves upon waves of blood spewed out. As the sword edge swept across, eight hundred heads flew up to the sky. All of their eyes were wide from astonishment. The moment their heads flew up, they could even see the blood spurting from their own cut necks.

The sword carried along with it an unstoppable aura. It kept going until it hit the inside of the endless mountains and rivers. A “Bang” sound rang, and the formation immediately became dust. The Ancient Saint’s formation crafted with blood and sweat, under

this sword, couldn't withstand one blow. The formation was split into halves, and it dropped to the floor; Gu Tie Shou also fell down from the inside.

“No...”

Lie Zhan Hou, inside the formation, bellowed; the sword's edge immediately pierced through his chest, and it crucified him into the ground.

At this moment, the sword aura disappeared, and only blood flowed quietly on the ground. Lie Zhan Hou, pierced to the ground, could still move his arms and legs. He was still alive simply because Li Qiye wanted to spare him.

This sudden change, not mentioning the cultivators who were observing the battle, the disciples of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, and Gu Tie Shou, left everyone in a daze; this sudden reversal was too frightening!

The minds of everyone went blank from seeing this sight. Eight hundred soldiers, Lie Zhan Hou, and the formation – under this one sword, all came to naught. A Royal Noble and an Ancient Saint's formation, both were not enough to reach the apex. Under this one sword, everything was swept away like dust.

This sword had passed through; within the castle of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, the Mortal Emperor suddenly opened his unfathomable eyes. Like the flow of the sun and moon and the pattern of the celestials, it was truly frightening. At this moment,

he quietly murmured:

“Could it be that the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect still has an Immortal Emperor Life Treasure left?”

Finally, the heavenly aura in his two eyes exceeded the sky; it was as if he wanted to see through the corner of the world!

Back to the disciples of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. This event rendered them blank for a long time, without being able to regain their wits.

“Emperor’s power and immortal intent...”

An unknown amount of time had passed, and finally, a cultivator whispered. Emperor’s power and immortal intent; countless cultivators had heard of this phrase, but no one had even seen its true power. Today, this one sword’s edge sweeping through and turning everything into nothingness, this was the emperor’s power and immortal intent!

People finally understood the horror of an Immortal Emperor. Immortal Emperor Min Ren was gone for a long time, and he only left behind his emperor’s power and immortal intent; however, it was still enough to cause all of the gods to tremble!

“Tie him up! Three days later, we will publicly behead him for others to see.”

At the moment when everyone was still busy thinking, the voice of Li Qiye rang from inside the sect.

One did not know how long it took, but everyone finally regained their spirits. The cultivators on the sideline were shocked while the disciples of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect were continuously celebrating. Some disciples tied up Lie Zhan Hou, and they took him to the dungeon.

Finally, Gu Tie Shou absentmindedly returned to the sect. Inside the Zither Pavilion, after hearing all the details, he still couldn't help but to lose his composure again.

A while later, Gu Tie Shou stared at Li Qiye, and he mumbled:

“The soul of the Patriarch is here, protecting our sect...”

He took a deep breath, and told Li Qiye:

“The Patriarch has chosen you as our savior; I hope that you can bring the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect back to its former glory!”

Gu Tie Shou could be considered the main driver of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. With these words, he has established Li Qiye's position within the sect. After one night, Li Qiye's status in the sect couldn't be shaken by anyone!

Lie Zhan Hou personally led the attack on the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Everyone in the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom assumed

that this was the sect's calamity. No one thought that after just one night, there would be an unthinkable reversal, resulting in the deaths of the eight hundred soldiers and the capture of the wounded Lie Zhan Hou. It all felt like a dream, but it was ten thousand exact truths.

Inside the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, both the upper and lower ranks were jubilant. This was an exciting event for the disciples' morale. Defeating Lie Zhan Hou's invasion was a medicine for the heart; at the very least, it gave the disciples a glimmer of hope.

With the conclusion of the battle, the upper echelon of the sect held a meeting with the elders and protectors, led by Gu Tie Shou. He revealed the conspiracy of Cao Xiong and Dong Sheng Long. At the moment, Cao Xiong was dead, and Dong Sheng Long – along with Lie Zhan Hou – were prisoners!

The protectors despised Cao Xiong's selfish actions to the bones. Just a little bit more, and the sect would have been a puppet under the Heavenly God Sect!

After the five elders informed them that everything was accomplished by Li Qiye, the protectors were stunned. They had heard about the Dao instruction, but they didn't think that the Patriarch had actually chosen Li Qiye!

During the meeting, the elders identified Li Qiye as the revitalizing savior of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. The protectors did not have any objections regarding this decision.

After the conference had ended, they discussed how to deal with Dong Sheng Long and Lie Zhan Hou.

Regarding this matter, Li Qiye only had one sentence. He smiled, and he said:

“Three days later, publicly execute them for all to see. Invite the other sects inside the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom to participate in the fun!”

Hearing Li Qiye’s words, the protectors and elders were startled; what kind of absolute decision was this?

“By this, I’m afraid it would truly be leaving no face for the Heavenly God Sect.”

A protector worriedly said.

Li Qiye casually replied:

“The Heavenly God Sect is a mortal enemy; who cares about face?”

“What if the Heavenly God Sect declares war on us?”

Another protector couldn’t help but ask. In the end, the Heavenly God Sect was a giant monster to them. They created the

Heavenly Jewel Kingdom and backed it for thirty thousand years. Now, it was difficult for anyone to shake their position.

“Declare war?”

Li Qiye bursted out laughing. His eyes became serious, and then slowly spoke:

“I heard that the Mortal Emperor of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom is a powerful ruler with great ambition and wisdom, and he is no less than the Nine Saint Demon Gate’s Demon Emperor Lun Ri! I’m really not afraid of his war declaration. I hope that he would personally lead the battle, then I can just annihilate all of the Royal Nobles and Enlightened Beings of their Heavenly God Sect.”

Gu Tie Shou pondered for a moment, and then he said:

“This is not a bad idea!”

“The emperor’s power and immortal intent of the Zither Pavilion could be expended for a few big battles. If the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom dares to come, we will be able to destroy all of their Royal Nobles and Enlightened Beings in one breath. Even though we have no way of destroying the Heavenly God Sect and the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, but as long as we kill their Royal Nobles and Enlightened Beings, this would be enough to make them seclude themselves to recover for a few thousand years! This will give us a chance to develop the sect.”

Listening to the first elder's words, the protectors couldn't help but to glance at each other.

Elder Sun said:

“The Heavenly God Sect's will to destroy us had never died. We cannot keep on conceding. At this moment, if the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom wants to declare war, then we will give them a devastating blow! We will destroy everything with the emperor's power and immortal intent of the Zither Pavilion.”

The Zither Pavilion and the Patriarch's Portrait were both emperor's treasures. Their powers were extremely great, but they couldn't be replenished. On this matter, they couldn't compare to an Immortal Emperor Life Treasure or True Treasure.

An Immortal Emperor Life Treasure could be used countless times, but it had a high requirement for the cultivator wielding it. As for an emperor's treasure containing emperor's power and immortal intent, each time it is used, its power will lessen; it eventually will become a mortal item.

This was why, at this moment, Gu Tie Shou's group wanted to borrow this power of the Zither Pavilion to destroy their enemies in one breath.

Li Qiye stared at Gu Tie Shou and asked:

“Regarding this matter, I have a little question. Where is our

Immortal Emperor Life Treasure? Where is our Patriarch's True Treasure?"

"This..."

Gu Tie Shou, full of embarrassment, smiled. At this moment, the four elders stared at each other, and their expressions were awkward.

[\[1\]](#) It is a common phrase – meaning that the ancestors are looking after them from above – still giving protection

Chapter 79 : Zi Shan Hou (1)

Finally, Elder Sun sighed softly, saying:

“The sect does not have an Immortal Emperor True Treasure, and it also does not have an Immortal Emperor Life Treasure.”

“Not even one?”

Even though Li Qiye was mentally prepared for this, but hearing that there was not even one made him a bit frustrated. The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was of Immortal Emperor lineage! Right now, not even one Life Treasure could be found, he could not believe this!

Gu Tie Shou softly continued:

“It is said that the Patriarch had left behind three Life Treasures and his fate protecting True Treasure; however, at the moment I took this seat, these items were no longer here. At the very least, even during the last sect master’s period, these items were no longer inside the sect.”

“Lost or stolen?”

Li Qiye asked.

Immortal Emperor Life Treasures were one thing, but the fate protecting treasure of Min Ren, also a True Treasure, was too important to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!

“This... I’m not too clear regarding this matter.”

Gu Tie Shou hesitatingly smiled, and he said:

“The Immortal Emperor True Treasure; I am not clear of the exact details on this. I’m afraid that even the previous sect master didn’t know. That year, I heard the martial uncle’s discussion. One uncle said that the True Treasure flew away a long time ago. Another uncle said that during the moment our ancestor, Young Emperor Mu, was competing for the Heaven’s Will with Immortal Emperor Ta Kong, he lost our True Treasure in a heaven frightening battle... I’m afraid, the last ten generations of our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect has not seen an Immortal Emperor True Treasure.”

“What about the three Life Treasures?”

Li Qiye asked.

Gu Tie Shou contemplated for a moment, and then answered:

“This, I cannot answer either.”

Here, he glanced at the other four elders, and he continued:

“I heard that there was one Life Treasure that could have been taken by ancestor Liu to the ground, and it was buried along with him. Whether this is the truth or not, I do not know.”

“Ancestor Liu was our sect’s first bulwark; in terms of seniority, he would be the grand disciple of Ancestor Mu. I heard that the battle thirty thousand years ago, against the Heavenly God Sect, was led by him. After our defeat and retreat back into our ancestral ground, Ancestor Liu no longer showed his face. There were many rumours about him. Some seniors said that he died in the battle, and some said that he came back wounded and met his origin within the sect.”[\[1\]](#)

Elder Sun explained to Li Qiye.

Liu San Jian was rumored to be the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect’s greatest genius after Young Emperor Mu; however, unfortunately, he was not able to protect the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect in the end, causing the collapse of the old kingdom!

“The other Life Treasures could have possibly fell into the hands of the Heavenly God Sect.”

At this point, Elder Qian gravely added.

“Into the hands of the Heavenly God Sect?”

Having heard this, Li Qiye’s eyes became serious. This was an

Immortal Emperor Life Treasure; this type of item falling into the hands of the Heavenly God Sect was not a good thing for the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

Gu Tie Shou dejectedly sighed, and he said:

“This is the thing we are worried about the most. There is no way to verify this matter, but it is almost absolute that this Life Treasure is in the hands of the Heavenly God Sect. In the last battle, our sect lost countless Royal Nobles, Enlightened Beings, and Ancient Saints. In order to protect the kingdom, I heard our ancestors summoned the Immortal Emperor Life Treasure to face the Heavenly God Sect. Afterwards, we lost the fight completely, and the entire kingdom fell. Under such chaotic circumstances, the Life Treasure’s whereabouts was unknown.”

“I worry that the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom would bring this Immortal Emperor Life Treasure to attack our sect.”

Elder Zhou worriedly said.

If the Heavenly God Sect had a character powerful enough to carry the Life Treasure to attack the sect, then even with the Zither Pavilion, it wouldn’t be able to withstand rounds after rounds of the Life Treasure’s attacks.

Hearing Elder Zhou words, Gu Tie Shou’s group lost their colors. This was indeed an extremely dangerous matter, they clearly knew the power of an Immortal Emperor Life Treasure.

“Let them come, and let’s see how the Immortal Emperor Life Treasure is.”

At this point, Li Qiye pleasantly bloomed a smile, and he said:

“When the flood is coming, the dam will block. When the troops are coming, the generals will hold! Our plan does not change. Three days later, behead Dong Sheng Long and Lie Zhan Hou.”

“We’ll do it like that. This is the first battle for our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect’s revival, and also the beginning our revival.”

Gu Tie Shou said with a deep voice, he was finally determined.

The elders and protectors present all hoped to revive the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and regain the glory of their ancestors. Especially Gu Tie Shou, as he grew up in the sect and considered it as his home. The moment he was leading the sect, how could he not hope for it to become more powerful? However, he could only lament his limited aptitude and lack of power to revive the sect.

Currently, with Li Qiye’s miracle appearance accompanied with the protection of the Patriarch, Gu Tie Shou saw a chance for the sect to come back.

The second day, the sect announced Cao Xiong’s conspiracy with outsiders, the betrayal of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, and also his execution! This news had been released, and the entire

Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was in an uproar. The sect disciples couldn't help but spit on Cao Xiong's selfishness. A calamity was befalling the sect, so they should have been working together. Cao Xiong's actions were reviled by the disciples.

As for the matter of Li Qiye being the chosen person for the resurgence, the sect did not announce it. Only the elders and protectors had the right to know, even sectional leaders were left unaware.

At the same time, the sect the next day sent the news of the public execution of Dong Sheng Long and Lie Zhan Hou to all of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom. This time, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect especially chose an unprecedented bold action like never before. At the time of the execution, the sect had invited many sects from the kingdom to attend.

Many big sects and heavenly gates were moved by this news in the entire Heavenly Jewel Kingdom.

“The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect wants to flip the heavens!”

Not a small amount of sects looked at each other in amazement. Just Dong Sheng Long was whatever, but who was Lie Zhan Hou? This was a general of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, a generational ferocious man under the Mortal Emperor!

Currently, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect wanted to publicly execute both of them, wasn't this the same as completely destroying the face of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom and the

Heavenly God Sect!?

“In the end, what is actually giving the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect such confidence?”

A sect master curiously said with a strange expression.

For the last few thousand years, everyone personally witnessed the decline of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, but today, this sect dared to publicly execute these two people – this was too bold!

There were many cultivators who observed the battle that night, and many of them clamored. Some felt that the sect had an Immortal Emperor Life Treasure, and some assumed that Liu San Jian was still alive!

“Could it be that this time, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect has an absolute ace card? Otherwise, why would they risk a war with the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, and have to execute these two?”

“They went crazy?”

Some felt that this was the case, and said:

“Today, to compare the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect to the Heavenly God Sect is like throwing an egg against a rock. Even if the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect still has an Immortal Emperor Life Treasure, it would still be impossible to rescind the current

situation of their decline. In present times, the Heavenly God Sect had countless geniuses and numerous Royal Nobles!

“This is the sect seeking its own destruction, ah.”

An older sect master lamented. He knew the situation inside, and shook his head:

“The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect has no inheritors. They became blindly arrogant; even with an Immortal Emperor Life Treasure, it is no longer an important matter for the sect. One has to know, the ancestor of the Heavenly God Sect is still alive.”

When it comes to the ancestor of the Heavenly God Sect, even powerful sect masters and heavenly lords of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom would become silent. After the Dao Declination era, characters like the Heavenly God Sect’s Ancestor became undefeatable – this was a giant high above! The moment a character like him takes action, not to mention the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, but even a grand sect or clan would be destroyed by just his fingertip in the blink of an eye!

Referring to the ancestor of the Heavenly God Sect, many extremely aged sect masters lost their colors and shivered in fear.

“This ancestor had lived for tens of thousands of years. Unless Young Emperor Mu is still alive, otherwise, if he becomes angry, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect’s existence will become void!”

A Royal Noble from the last generation that had seen the monstrous ancestor before, and gently sighed.

The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect publically declared the execution date for Dong Sheng Long and Lie Zhan Hou, yet no cultivators or sects dared to become their guests to observe the execution.

Even though everyone wanted to know how this storm would end, but they didn't dare to show up for this execution. Of course, this did not deter many grand sects and ancient heritages from observing at a distance.

Currently, the Heavenly God Sect was too powerful and controlled an entire gigantic kingdom. Inside the boundary of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, no sects dared to oppose the Heavenly God Sect! Anyone present at this execution would be the same as opposing the Heavenly God Sect, and no one was willing to tease such a giant monster like the Heavenly God Sect.

However, watching from afar secretly, the Heavenly God Sect couldn't interfere in this and had no reason to send their troops.

So, before the execution date, countless cultivators were watching the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect's every move behind the shadows.

During these three days, the disciples of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect were both excited and nervous. To the sect, the Heavenly God Sect was too powerful. Today, they had the chance

to execute Dong Sheng Long and Lie Zhan Hou, this was an event that motivated the disciples' hearts.

At the same time, the sect had entered a battle preparation stage. All of the disciples were entering their peak concentrations, ready to enter a battle at any time.

Inside the sect, only one person was at ease – it was Li Qiye. Only Li Qiye was unperturbed like an old god, seemingly as if everything had nothing to do with him.

“You sure are confident!”

Seeing Li Qiye's god-like calm demeanor, even Li Shuangyan was perplexed. This matter, even one little mishap would be a declaration of war with the Heavenly God Sect. Even a heaven's proud daughter like herself, regarding such a matter that would pierce the heavens, would have to be cautious. However, Li Qiye didn't even consider this as an issue.

“Only a small sect, not enough to reach the apex.”

[\[1\]](#) I took some liberty with the word bulwark here – the literal term used here is “protector sect”, but we already have protectors, and his status is way above them, so I chose the word bulwark instead-~~sect's~~ sect protector would sound too awkward

Chapter 80 : Zi Shan Hou (2)

Li Qiye gave off a smile, and compellingly said:

“The Heavenly God Sect, to me, it is only a matter of whether I want to destroy it or not. If I don’t mind sparing a bit of effort and expending some thoughts, annihilating the Heavenly God Sect – this is not a difficult matter.”

Hearing Li Qiye’s words, Li Shuangyan immediately became speechless. Others would definitely think that Li Qiye was ignorantly foolish and boasting to the heavens, but, Li Shuangyan didn’t think so. She didn’t find any signs of Li Qiye joking and boasting.

“I don’t understand how you are so confident. Even though the Heavenly God Sect had only created the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom in the past thirty thousand years, you have to know that their ancestor is an extraordinary person! If our Nine Saint Demon Gate was to become an enemy of the Heavenly God Sect, we would still have to be three parts cautious.”

Li Shuangyan couldn’t help but exclaim.

Li Qiye glared at Li Shuangyan, and said:

“Because I am Li Qiye!”

Because I am Li Qiye – such an ordinary phrase. However, coming from the mouth of Li Qiye with a nonchalant tone, it made others hear a domineering pressure; a grandeur manner that looked down upon the world naturally came to life.

Li Shuangyan speechlessly stared at Li Qiye for a long time. This little boy in front of her didn't feel like a little boy! Meticulous planning and a domineering presence, he was more similar to a Mortal King!

After a while, Li Shuangyan stared at Li Qiye, and slowly spoke:

“Such grand matters, I need to report to my master.”

“As you wish.”

Li Qiye glanced at Li Shuangyan and smiled. Without a doubt, he was quite satisfactory with Li Shuangyan's attitude.

Without a doubt, Li Shuangyan, this heaven's proud daughter, had greatly changed during these past days standing by Li Qiye's side. At the very least, in front of Li Qiye, she had let go of her arrogance as a heaven's proud daughter. Compared to Li Qiye, she couldn't find any aspect where she was superior.

Three days had passed in the blink of an eye. Within these last three days, countless gazes from the darkness observed the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. There was no doubt that many great sects within the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom wanted to

personally witness the conclusion of this storm. Within the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, countless powerful characters and many Royal Nobles all hoped to directly receive the news.

Since the creation of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom by the Heavenly God Sect, within thirty thousand years, it had swept through the heavens and earths. Within the most recent ten thousand years, there were few people and sects that could challenge the godly authority of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom. In the present day, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect suddenly decided to execute Dong Sheng Long and Lie Zhan Hou, where did this confidence come from?

Witnessing this scene, the far away cultivators and even the tyrant of one domain, ruling over an entire sect, couldn't help but lament in silence. Just imagine, Lie Zhan Hou was someone who was known for how arrogant he was, how his rage and ferocity could easily conquer all four directions; he was the very definition of a ferociously violent white stallion. However, today, he was simply a man at death's door.

If you win, you become King, if you lose, you become a bandit – this was all that needed to be said!

Prior to the departure, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect became heavily guarded. Every disciple of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect entered a state of combat readiness. All of the sectional leaders and protectors were even more diligent regarding the defensive platforms and entrances of the sect.

The five elders of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect left through

the gate to personally oversee the execution. In addition to the five elders, Li Qiye was also present with Li Shuangyan following beside him.

“Who is that disciple of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect?”

Li Qiye seemed to be an ordinary disciple, his name wasn't resounded or well recognized. Now, this seemingly ordinary disciple walking and sitting alongside the five elders – seeing this scene made many of the cultivators surprised.

Many cultivators were speculating, and one of them said in a surprised manner:

“This disciple can actually walk alongside Gu Tie Shou and the other elders, could he have an amazing origin within the sect?”

After they saw Li Shuangyan accompany them, it even resulted in some of the sect leaders being shaken, and one emotionally said:

“Li Shuangyan, descendant of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, Princess of Old Ox Country, she's the Grand Middle Territory's heaven's proud daughter, ah! Could it be that the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and the Nine Saint Demon Gate are forming an alliance?”

Li Shuangyan's appearance at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and her accompanying Li Qiye and the five elders visibly moved many of the spectating cultivators.

Under the presence of this dignified atmosphere, time slowly passed. Finally, the time of the execution arrived, Gu Tie Shou lifted his head to look at the sky and he loudly declared:

“Execution!”

At this time, not to mention the disciples of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, even the faraway spectating cultivators all held their breaths. Everyone was eagerly anticipating what would happen in the next moment.

“Put down the blade!” [\[1\]](#)

At this time, a loud roar resounded and it spread thunderously far and wide. A dragon horse, while heavily breathing, treaded the hollow sky. The pressure of a Royal Noble suppressed the disciples in front of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect’s execution ground.

As the dragon horse treaded across the sky, a figure wearing a violet coat could be seen on top of the horse. Wearing a violet crown, the old man with broad shoulders seemed to be an important person.

“Zi Shan Hou...”

After seeing this old man, the onlooking cultivators changed their expressions.

“Zi Shan Hou arrived.”

Witnessing this old man, a sect leader murmured:

“A previous generation Royal Noble, ah, extremely experienced! Zi Shan Hou’s name has been prestigious for generations. He can be considered one of the Royal Nobles at the pinnacle within the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom.”

“So it is Zi Shan Hou who graced us with his presence.”

Seeing the old man on the dragon horse, Gu Tie Shou’s pupils were focused and his demeanor became dignified. Although Zi Shan Hou’s reputation wasn’t as ruthless as Lie Zhan Hou’s, his strength was definitely higher! After all, he was a Royal Noble of the previous generation and was also at the pinnacle of all Royal Nobles!

Zi Shan Hou was still seated on the dragon horse when his voice resounded again:

“Ancient Elders, don’t commit a mistake. Lie Zhan Hou is an important official of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, quickly release him along with Brother Dong, then follow me to the capital and accept the king’s punishment and confess.”

As Gu Tie Shou was about to speak, Li Qiye waved his hand to stop him, and he pleasantly smiled:

“Confess? This word isn’t part of my vocabulary! While I still have no intention to kill you, get out of my sight immediately. How far you can go will be how far you will be!” [\[2\]](#)

“Who is this child? What a bold tone!”

After hearing Li Qiye’s words, many of the spectating cultivators couldn’t help but to look at each other. Who was Zi Shan Hou? He was a previous generation Royal Noble, and was one of the Royal Nobles at the pinnacle to boot! He was an important official of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, yet Li Qiye, a junior, dared to use this kind of arrogant tone.

“This child from some random places, let this seat give you a little lesson in place of your elders!”

Zi Shan Hou’s gaze became cold. With his grinding big hands, he sent Li Qiye a palm strike!

A “Zhang” sword sound was heard. A sword appeared from the blue sky, but it didn’t come from Li Qiye. Instead, Li Shuangyan already made a move. One sword to pillar the sky, decapitating all spirits! Phoenix odes emanated from her body and her sword had its own spirit. Moves after moves activated; one sword released, and the mountains and rivers lost their colors.

“Worthy of being the successor of the Nine Saint Demon Gate!”

Seeing Li Shuangyan's sword, Zi Shan Hou let out a cold snort. His two hands formed seals, like a giant mountain suppressing down from above.

“Get out of here!” [\[3\]](#)

At this point, Gu Tie Shou also took action. A Kun Peng traversed the sky, and when the huge Kun Peng's tail fiercely struck down, it shattered the earth with a ferocious momentum.

Witnessing the tail of the Kun Peng coming, Zi Shan Hou's expression darkened. He didn't dare to be reckless, brought his hands together, and his true energy rose, blocking the tail of Gu Tie Shou's Kun Peng.

“Bang!”

Even though Zi Shan Hou was able to block the strike from Gu Tie Shou, his dragon horse couldn't handle the pressure. It bellowed as it fell to the ground, and was no longer capable of standing back up.

Regarding the fight, Li Qiye didn't pay much attention and simply shook his head, then said:

“Elder's Six Variants, it is unnecessarily complex.”

Hearing these words, if it was from someone else, then it would

sound extremely arrogant. However, after witnessing Li Qiye's Kun Peng's Six Variants, Gu Tie Shou definitely did not think the words were arrogant.

Gu Tie Shou began to speak:

“Look at my Six Variants.”

He wanted to let Li Qiye see his Kun Peng's Six Variants in hopes that he could get Li Qiye's guidance to serve as reference material.

And so, after Gu Tie Shou's words came out, he approached Zi Shan Hou.

Zi Shan Hou's face was extremely ugly. As a Royal Noble of the previous generation, today, he was unable to suppress Gu Tie Shou. Immortal Emperor Merit Law – truly frightening!

“Gu Tie Shou, today, I won't bother with you!”

Zi Shan Hou continued:

“Today, this seat brought his Majesty's Imperial Decree. Regardless of whether or not the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect is willing, you must let the prisoners go. Otherwise, the consequences will ensue!”

“The Mortal King's Imperial Decree!”

Gu Tie Shou couldn't help but focus his gaze. The Mortal King of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom was someone with extremely high talents and a clever and calculating mind. His cultivation was extremely profound and he was definitely someone to fear. Due to the Mortal King, the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom was now flourishing with life. It could be said that, due to the ambitious nature of the Mortal King of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, he wanted to succeed in making the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom into a never falling eternal ancient kingdom!

At this moment, Zi Shan Hou's hands already brought out the Imperial Decree from the Mortal King. The imperial order only had a single character on it, "Amnesty". The moment this character appeared, the torrential royal power of the Mortal King could be felt across ten thousand miles. Within this "Amnesty" character, the vast royal pressure of the Mortal King exploded; it was as if the Mortal King was currently present, turning others into loyal subjects.

Even though Gu Tie Shou was a Royal Noble, when the character "Amnesty" was brought forth, he could feel the immense pressure, and his blood started to roll. This "Amnesty" character carried a pressure that was akin to an unclimbable mountain that was placed inside his heart. It was so uncomfortable that it made him want to vomit blood.

The Imperial Decree only had the single character "Amnesty", but this single character was already enough. This single character already represented the will of a Mortal King on his high throne. With this "Amnesty" character alone, it was already enough to suppress a Royal Noble!

[1] 刀下留人 – Blade Down Leave Man. I have no idea how to translate this but it basically means to put down the blade to stop the man from getting killed

[2] Original raw was “Immediately roll away, can roll how far then roll that far” essentially

[3] Original raw was “Roll back”

Chapter 81 : Mortal King's Might (1)

“His Majesty the Mortal King, truly terrifying...”

Seeing the word “Amnesty”, the cultivators from afar changed their expressions, and murmured:

“His Majesty the Mortal King, truly unfathomable.”

With just the word “Amnesty”, it was able to suppress Royal Nobles. One could only imagine how frightening the Mortal King of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom would be! As for the other people from the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, they couldn't help but to take in a deep breath.

“Gu Tie Shou, the Imperial Decree of His Majesty is right here, release them right now!”

Zi Shan Hou gravely said. His hand held the Imperial Decree with its compelling momentum, causing others to run short of breath.

Gu Tie Shou looked at the word “Amnesty”, shook his head, and he said:

“Dong Sheng Long and Lie Zhan Hou wanted to destroy my Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Even the Mortal King's Imperial Decree wouldn't do! Execute!”

Gu Tie Shou's words changed Zi Shan Hou's expression greatly, and he seriously yelled:

“Gu Tie Shou, don't make this mistake! Defying the Immortal Decree, this would bring about a calamity that would drown your Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!”

“Execute!”

Gu Tie Shou ignored him and exclaimed.

“Slow...”

Meeting Gu Tie Shou's strong resolve, Zi Shan Hou shouted with an ugly expression. At this moment, he couldn't do anything but make concessions. If he didn't bring back Dong Sheng Long and Lie Zhan Hou, then not only would he be unsuccessful with his mission, but the prestige of the Mortal King would also be provoked.

“Gu Tie Shou, let me bring Dong Sheng Long and Lie Zhan Hou away. The day the Evil Infested Ridge opens, there will be a quota for your Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect to participate.”

At this time, Zi Shan Hou made a concession and seriously spoke.

Hearing Zi Shan Hou's words, Gu Tie Shou couldn't help but pause for a little bit. The Evil Infested Ridge, to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, was truly too important.

He couldn't help but to look over at Li Qiye. Li Qiye smiled and said:

“The Evil Infested Ridge originally was a territory of our sect, why would we need the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom's reward! Execute!”

Li Qiye's words angered Zi Shan Hou till his body started trembling. He raised the Imperial Decree in his hand and shouted:

“Junior, you should know the severity of this situation. The Imperial Decree is here! If you were to breach this decree, then all of the sects within the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom will encircle and annihilate your sect!”

“It's just a piece of torn paper, yet you still dare to act powerful and prestigious in front of my presence?!”

Li Qiye narrowed his eyes. Finished with his words, his five fingers started to pull on the zither at his chest.

“Zhang...”

The moment the zither's sound came about, inside the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, a sword energy immediately flew forward. The moment the sword blade swept downward, one could only see the Imperial Decree be crushed and the word “Amnesty” split in half.

Everyone held their breaths at this moment. Cutting the Imperial Decree of the Mortal King, this was provoking his authority.

When the word “Amnesty” was cut in half, a “Dum” sound occurred, just like a golden godly law, and the decree combined together again. The word “Amnesty” suddenly radiated a terrible light. In the blink of an eye, a majestic figure appeared from this light. The moment of his inception, his royal pressure was like a tsunami, like a flood rushing and wailing forward directly to the grand earth.

Under the suppression of the royal pressure, even Gu Tie Shou had to take several heavy steps back.

“The Mortal King’s will...”

Seeing the majestic figure emerging from the light, cultivators in the far distance couldn’t help but to burst into cries.

The majestic figure suddenly opened his eyes. It was as if this pair of eyes were real. Soaking in the sun and the moon with a rotating galaxy within them, it caused others to tremblingly prostrate on the ground.

“Provoking the royal honor, behead!”

The figure had just opened his mouth, and the thunders rang in the air. When the words have not yet come out, his huge hand had

already struck down and the power of the one slash wanted to directly destroy Li Qiye. This slash was extremely matchless; under this slash, even the moon illuminating the sky would fall and sweep across all Royal Nobles.

At this moment, Gu Tie Shou's colors were shaken. Even Li Shuangyan wanting to save Li Qiye was powerless.

“Roll...!”

Li Qiye's gaze became serious as he coldly yelled, without making any other action.

Under this fiery and thunderous slash, a loud “boom” filled the air. At this second, many Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect's disciples couldn't bear to look; they all thought that Li Qiye would suffer a horrible death.

However, the moment the slash was about to kill Li Qiye, a gigantic hand from the heavenly sky came about. A huge explosion happened, and this gigantic hand shattered the shadowy figure. The will of the Mortal King bellowed, a strand of universal law wanted to escape from the gigantic hand, but this gigantic hand grinded it with pressure and immediately crushed it. The figure of the Mortal King became scattered ashes and dispersed like smoke.

Everything happened so fast, no one clearly saw where this gigantic hand came from.

During all of these occurrences, in the martial ground of the far Nine Saint Demon Gate, there was a stone statue raising his stone hand. This one hand stretched across the heavens and earths, directly to the end of the sky; no one knew where this hand was going!

This stone hand, from the Nine Saint Demon Gate, flying from millions of miles away, easily destroyed the Mortal King's will. Even if the Mortal King's will could suppress Royal Nobles, under this gigantic hand, it was just a meaningless insect.

Seeing the stone hand appear then suddenly disappear, Li Shuangyan – standing next to Li Qiye – was shocked. Others didn't know what this gigantic hand was, but she knew!

A stone hand, trespassing through the world, from the Nine Saint Demon Gate reached out and easily destroyed the Mortal King's will – how frightening was this!

Li Shuangyan had heard her master say that the four stone statues were the Heavenly Protectors of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, but she essentially didn't know how powerful these stones statues, dubbed as the Heavenly Protectors, were.

Today, she finally found out the terrifying power of the four stone statues. And, she also understood why her master had acquiesced against Li Qiye that day. Demon Kings or Mortal Kings, they were nothing! Under the hand of the four Heavenly Protectors, they would be easily crushed!

At this moment, not only the cultivators watching from afar, but all of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect were in a daze. Zi Shan Hou lost his wits from the shock!

The Mortal King's will frightened others so, but was easily destroyed – who on earth did this!

“Only a Mortal King, even a Mortal Emperor still wouldn't reach the apex.”

Regarding this event, Li Qiye essentially didn't put it in his mind, and said with such a calm manner!

“Execute.”

At this moment, Li Qiye said his command.

“No...”

Dong Sheng Long and Lie Zhan Hou, at the moment of death, couldn't help but to let out a loud cry. They didn't think that today, even the Mortal King wouldn't be able to save them!

The disciples of the sect regained their wits and execution blades were raised then fallen, beheading Dong Sheng Long and Lie Zhan Hou; their heads rolled farther and farther.

In the end, the heads of Dong Sheng Long and Lie Zhan Hou were

neatly placed in wooden boxes by the disciples, and under the command of Li Qiye, were brought to the front of Zi Shan Hou.

“One message to the Heavenly God Sect: whoever blocks my path, kill without mercy!”

Li Qiye simply glanced at Zi Shan Hou, and calmly said. As he was finished speaking, he turned around and left!

Zi Shan Hou's expression was extremely ugly, but at this moment, he didn't dare to be reckless. He took the heads of Dong Sheng Long and Lie Zhan Hou then left in a hurry!

The moment the gigantic hand destroyed the Mortal King's will, in the Imperial City, a stalwart and domineering man suddenly trembled and let out a roar. His two eyes absorbed heavenly flames and suddenly opened. He then stood up.

The expression of the man was shocked. Standing on the high platform and gazing at the far distance, it was as if he was directly looking at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. At this moment, his demeanor became dignified. As the Mortal King, he used to divide and repress his royal subjects, but today, his heart was in distraught and his mind was in distress.

The man stood there with a pale expression and was without words for a long time. To someone with great talents like him, who had swept through the Heavenly Jewel territories, today, his Mortal King's will was easily destroyed without the slightest resistance. To him, this was not only a great shame, but also an

extremely harmful matter!

“Invite the Ancestor...”

Finally, the man gravely spoke and sent a messenger towards the ancestral ground of the Heavenly God Sect for guidance! To him, this matter was too shocking.

A stone hand crossing over the world and destroyed the Mortal King's will, inside the Nine Saint Demon Gate, there were disciples reporting to Demon King Lun Ri. Receiving the report, his expression was also shaken.

Inside the Nine Saint Demon Gate, Demon King Lun Ri summoned all of the elders. Within the secret room, the atmosphere became heavy.

“The news confirmed that one hand from our stone statue crossed through the world and destroyed the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom's Mortal King's will!”

Even though Demon King Lun Ri didn't show his face, his voice was still ringing in the secret room.

The Nine Saint Demon Gate's information gathering was extremely swift, they found out in the shortest amount of time.

Such an event caused the elders to gaze at each other. This was not only too sudden, but it was also out of the Nine Saint Demon

Gate's control.

“It was definitely Li Qiye activating the Heavenly Protectors.”

An elder gravely said. This was something that couldn't be questioned, it was described vividly.

Even the entire Nine Saint Demon Gate didn't have anyone who could activate the four Heavenly Protectors, only Li Qiye could do it! Besides Li Qiye, who else could it be?

The moment of silence was broken by an elder:

“Our Nine Saint Demon Gate and the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect are separated by millions of miles, we're not inside the same country. This one hand of the Heavenly Protectors was able to cross the heavens and earths and easily destroyed the Mortal King's will!”

Here, the elder paused for a moment, and continued:

“Exactly how powerful are they?”

Regarding this matter, the elders' hearts were quaked and they stared at each other. This was a test for them. From the past till now, the Nine Saint Demon Gate had never heard of their Heavenly Protectors making a move. In reality, before Li Qiye came, the elders didn't even know about the existences of the Heavenly Protectors.

Traveling across the world and destroying the Mortal King's will, this was an unbelievably sky shattering matter!

“It is the time for us to take action.”

The moment the elders were in quiet contemplation, the voice of Demon King Lun Ri appeared, and slowly said:

“The conflict between the Heavenly God Sect and the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect needs to be reconciled.”

Hearing the Demon King's words, the elders were surprised, and one of them couldn't help but say:

“Your Majesty, the Heavenly God Sect and the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect are mortal enemies. The Heavenly God Sect's will to destroy the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had never ended. If we interfere, I'm afraid we would become enemies with the Heavenly God Sect.”

Chapter 82 : Mortal King's Might (2)

“The Heavenly God Sect would have to think twice before declaring war on us.”

The sound of the Demon King Lun Ri rang again:

“Two tigers fighting, one will definitely be injured. They only established their sovereignty for thirty thousand years, yet they dared to call themselves a Kingdom. Wait until they actually have the strength of a Kingdom and then we'll talk.”

Whether it is the Grand Middle Territory or the Mortal Emperor world, there are standards for sovereignty. Frontier small nations were not enough to join the standards and not enough to reach the apex. The real powers have three different names, Country, Kingdom, and Ancient Kingdom.

So to speak, an Ancient Kingdom has the strongest power, Kingdom was second, and Country was last. As for smaller nations, they are not included.

There are also standards to these names. If it wasn't of an Immortal Emperor lineage, then it would be a Country. An Immortal Emperor lineage forming a nation would be called a Kingdom. And if it had two Immortal Emperors, then it would be called an Ancient Kingdom.

In addition to having two Immortal Emperors, there were a few

ancient nations that could have been called Ancient Kingdom. These nations must have been created long ago and had extremely great influence.

For an example, when the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect created their nation, it was called the Cleansing Incense Ancient Kingdom because their nation was founded during the beginning years of the Emperor Era, and Immortal Emperor Min Ren was also the first Immortal Emperor of this era. The Cleansing Incense Ancient Kingdom made it through a whole era, so even when it couldn't have a second Immortal Emperor, it was still called an Ancient Kingdom by others.

In fact, the Nine Saint Demon Gate's nation was also extremely ancient, but their influences that year were much less than the old Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, so they only proclaimed themselves as a Country.

As for the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, according to the standards, they don't have the qualification to be called a Kingdom; at most, they are a Country. However, they relied on the Heavenly God Sect's ancestor still being alive, and he was self proclaimed to be invincible, so they considered themselves a Kingdom.

Of course, many people feared the ancestor of the Heavenly God Sect, so they didn't dare to criticize them.

Demon King Lun Ri's words shook the spirits of the elders. They glanced at each other, and one of them pondered for a moment, then said:

“Your Majesty, in terms of strength, our Old Ox Country is no weaker than the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, but the ancestor of the Heavenly God Sect is truly dreadful, ah.”

Bringing up the Heavenly God Sect’s ancestor struck fear into the hearts of the elders currently present! The Heavenly God Sect’s ancestor, was truly too heaven defying. Not mentioning just the Grand Middle Territory, even gazing through the whole Mortal Emperor world, the ancestor was still a character that others were wary of.

“If Young Emperor Mu that year was still here, it wouldn’t be the Heavenly God Sect’s turn to dominate the Grand Middle Territory.”

Mentioning Young Emperor Mu fifty thousand years later would still put listeners in awe. Young Emperor Mu was the key character for the revitalization of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Many considered him to be the second Immortal Emperor for the sect after Immortal Emperor Min Ren.

Young Emperor Mu was heaven defyingly invincible. The moment Immortal Emperor Ta Kong was without the Heaven’s Will, Young Emperor Mu would be the strongest rival of Ta Kong. Rumors had it that when they were young and competing for the vacant Heaven’s Will, they were at three wins and three defeats each. This record was such a brilliant glory!

“According to reliable sources, the Heavenly God Sect’s ancestor

is still alive. Even though he had not appeared for thirty thousand years, he is definitely alive in this world.”

Another elder couldn't help but say:

“If the Heavenly God Sect's ancestor comes into being, I'm afraid our Nine Saint Demon Gate would have a difficult time opposing him, ah.” [\[1\]](#)

Regarding the ancestor of the Heavenly God Sect, no matter who they were, three parts caution had to be given. So, regarding this matter, the expressions of the elders of the Nine Saint Demon Gate became solemn.

“The Heavenly God Sect's ancestor...”

Demon King Lun Ri slowly spoke:

“The Difficult Dao Era had passed, and a new era is coming. The Heavenly God Sect's ancestor's evening is already fast approaching. In the future, this world belongs to the young people.” [\[2\]](#)

The Difficult Dao Era, was only the last thirty thousand years. Fifty thousand years ago, Immortal Emperor Ta Kong carried the Heaven's Will and became an Immortal Emperor to rule over the universe. However, for unknown reasons, thirty thousand years ago, the Black Dragon King suddenly became torrentially angry and extorted the Heaven's Will.

It was heard that the Black Dragon King, in this war against Immortal Emperor Ta Kong, fought one battle and tore apart the sky's curtain. Rumor has it that after this battle, in the end, the Heaven's Will was torn apart. Afterward, because of this, the world's energy was depleted and the cultivators had a hard time practicing the Dao. This was why this era was called the Difficult Dao Era, this era had entirely tortured cultivators of the Nine Worlds for thirty thousand years. It was only until ten years ago when the Difficult Dao Era had come to pass and the world's energy began to recover.

At this moment, Lun Ri paused, then said:

“I greatly value Li Qiye. His future potential is second to none.”

Hearing Lun Ri's words, the elders couldn't help but to glance at each other. An elder did not completely agree, and he said:

“Your Majesty, even though Li Qiye is a bit demonic, but he is only of Mortal Physique, Mortal Life Wheel, and Mortal Fate Palace. With this innate talent, it is difficult to achieve anything in the end.”

“That is correct. Your Majesty, with regards to physiques and life wheels, Shuang Yan is countless times stronger than him.”

An elder couldn't help but exclaim.

In reality, Li Shuangyan's mission to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was not agreed upon by all of the elders. However, Demon King Lun Ri overturned the opposition in the end and pushed for Li Shuangyan to go to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

“I will not misjudge a character.”

Lun Ri slowly said.

The elders contemplated upon Lun Ri's words. Lun Ri at the Nine Saint Demon Gate had an extremely high status! Normally, the elders would not refute the opinion of His Majesty.

“What if the ancestor of the Heavenly God Sect come into being?”

An elder was still worried, and asked.

“The Heavenly God Sect has its ancestor, but we have the four Heavenly Guardians! With the support of Li Qiye, we will have the support of the four Heavenly Guardians!”

Demon King Lun Ri deepened his tone:

“We will just have to see whether the ancestor of the Heavenly God Sect is powerful or if our Heavenly Guardians are invincible! Our Progenitor was a generation's peerless demon. He left behind the four stone statues to be our Heavenly Guardians, this is enough

to indicate their sufficient strength.”

Even until now, no one knew how powerful the four Heavenly Guardians were, this was a complete mystery!

The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect emphatically executed Dong Sheng Long and Lie Zhan Hou, this matter was spread like a storm throughout all of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom! This was a sudden shock to all cultivators and sects inside the Kingdom.

Especially the part where the Mortal King's will was destroyed – this made the sect masters' hearts continuously shaken.

Wary of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom's strength, everyone didn't discuss it publicly, but there were many secretly discussing and dissenting.

“Could it be that Liu San Jian was truly alive!”

Many older sect masters that knew the inside information couldn't help but mumble:

“These thirty thousand years, Mortal Kings from the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect could be counted on one's fingers. Outside of Liu San Jian, who else could be so heaven defying.”

Remembering the gigantic hand that easily destroyed the Mortal King's will caused many people's hearts to sink. The power of this gigantic hand was absolutely far above a Mortal King.

“This is the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect flipping the sky. They dared to even destroy the Mortal King's will, is this a war declaration against the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom?”

A cultivator excitedly said.

A few big characters thoughtfully said:

“It could be that the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was laying low quietly for thirty thousand years. They want to wash the shame that year away, and rebuild their Ancient Kingdom.”

“Even though it is unknown about who made the move behind the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, however, them wanting to rebuild their Ancient Kingdom, I'm afraid this is without hope. Even protecting their nest would not be easy.”

Someone from the previous generation, that had witnessed the battle thirty thousand years ago, shook his head:

“That year when Liu San Jian was still alive, they still weren't able to hold their Ancient Kingdom and they had to run back to their nest at the end! The Heavenly God Sect's ancestor is still alive; it doesn't matter if Liu San Jian is still alive, they no longer have the chance to beat the Heavenly God Sect to rebuild their

Ancient Kingdom.”

Suddenly, there were all kinds of discussions. Some were on the sidelines waiting for the results while some were sharpening their blades. Even though the breaking of the status quo of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom could be a calamity to some cultivators and sects, but to the bigger sects, this was an opportunity to rise and fish in the troubled waters.

Destroying the Mortal King’s will – the entire Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was boiling in excitement. Before, the sect didn’t dare to compete with the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, but today, even the Mortal King’s will was destroyed, causing the disciples of the sect to have their blood boil, allowing them to see a hope for revival.

The disciples weren’t the only ones who were shocked from reality. Even the protectors and the five elders were ecstatic. This was a matter that they couldn’t ever imagine.

Within the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, Gu Tie Shou was the strongest. He could be considered the number one of the sect, but the one word “Amnesty” of the Mortal King was enough to suppress him! However, not even mentioning the word “Amnesty”, even the will of the Mortal King was destroyed. In the midst of everything, the five elders placed extremely high expectations towards Li Qiye!

Returning to the sect, all five elders were present and Li Qiye was also in the party. Today, Li Qiye was entirely on equal footing with the five elders, and they all considered him as the sect’s revitalization leader!

“We don’t need to be excited.”

In the party, Li Qiye said:

“After all, our sect is still very weak and without any means. Regarding strength, we are not enough to compete against the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom and the Heavenly God Sect.”

Li Qiye’s words were the truth regarding the situation of the sect, the five elders did not object. After the initial excitement, their hearts were heavy because outside of Li Qiye, their ace card, they didn’t have any other secret cards.

“In terms of internal and secret foundation, we are stronger than the Heavenly God Sect. Even though our Emperor merit laws are limited at the moment, it cannot be denied that we have a large amount of Virtuous Paragon merit laws and Heavenly King methods... In the end, we don’t need to worry about not having merit laws, it is only unfortunate that we don’t have the inheritors.”

Li Qiye said.

Even though the sect had lost the majority of their Emperor merit laws, in the end, they were still of Immortal Emperor lineage and had a great amount of Virtuous Paragons and Heavenly Kings, so they had many merit laws from them. In reality, the sect having these merit laws still made countless cultivators and sects to drool from greed.

“We are short of good masters.”

In the end, Gu Tie Shou bitterly smiled, and he said:

“I’m going to speak without being afraid of jeers. In reality, our brothers’ cultivations were essentially self learned. We crawled back and forth trying to practice them.”

[1] There are special chinese words that don’t translate as well literally, ‘comes into being’ is one of them. It just means that he will show himself publically in this world and take action – not that he is being born

[2] Evening is fast approaching means that his time is running out

Chapter 83 : Daylight Sky Immortal Secret (1)

“Thirty thousand years ago, after the battle with the Heavenly God Sect, our losses were too great. Even though thirty thousand years had passed, we are still unable to recover.”

Elder Sun couldn't help but softly lament.

The other elders were softly sighing as well. The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect's decline was a foregone conclusion after that battle.

For that battle, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect could be said to have exerted their entire strength in order to protect the Cleansing Incense Ancient Kingdom. After the fight, from grand elders to the ordinary disciples, eight or nine parts died in the battle. In the end, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was forced to return to their sect's ground.

Before the battle, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had countless masters, even many Virtuous Paragons, but only one part survived after the battle.

Even though there were a few powerful grand elders, elders, and protectors surviving, they were only extending their last breaths. The fight that year was too tragic! Even the surviving grand elders were gravely wounded and could only rely on Fate Pills and Life Medicines in order to prolong their lives. After they came back,

they immediately went into isolated cultivation and had no way of coming into being again. [\[1\]](#)

That moment, these surviving grand elders and elders, with the exception of the sect facing extinction, they would not come into being again, because their personal situations were not very optimistic!

In reality, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect not only lost the majority of their disciples, but they also emptied a large amount of treasures and spirit medicines of the sect.

During that battle to protect the Ancient Kingdom, the sect threw out many Life Treasures, immortal items and even wasted many physique pastes, Life Medicines, and Fate Pills. During the actual battle, countless disciples applied these medicines because facing a grim overarching situation, they threw away caution and wanted to retaliate towards the Heavenly God Sect.

This emptied the sect's treasure vault, and they could only present a few treasures and spirit medicines. The was essentially the same as not having any — extremely hard to watch.

The disciples with some talents in the sect all died in the battlefield that year as well. This brought about the loss of the Emperor merit laws of the sect. Even with their large quantities of Virtuous Paragon and Heavenly King merit laws, unfortunately, their future disciples could only rely on themselves. Many of them went on the wrong Dao path, or a long winded path, and without the support of Life Treasures and Spirit Medicines, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect became worse and worse as the days passed.

At the same time, the Heavenly God Sect established the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom. The recruitment for disciples at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect became even more difficult. Any disciple with some modicum of innate aptitude didn't want to join the sect.

Hearing the elders recalling the situation, Li Qiye could understand that it was not easy for the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect to survive after that year, let alone rise up again!

“If our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect wants to rise, we must let go. For the younger generation, after passing the examination with promising potential, let them cultivate Virtuous Paragon and Heavenly King merit laws. If we want to overcome this ordeal, we must groom a new generation of disciples. Even though Virtuous Paragon and Heavenly King merit laws are wondrous, we still have to let go. It would be sufficient to only hold Emperor merit laws in our hands.”

In the end, Li Qiye came up with such a proposal.

After the decline, because they lost their Emperor merit laws, the only complete Emperor merit law was the Kun Peng's Six Variants, so they were extremely strict with Virtuous Paragon and Heavenly King merit laws. Under normal circumstances, the ordinary disciples without one hundred, no, several hundred years of examination would not be taught these laws!

However, to the disciples, they missed out on the best cultivation

period, and without wise masters to teach them, their cultivation was dragged even slower!

The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was without an alternative course of action. The lack of Emperor merit laws made it so that these Virtuous Paragon and Heavenly King merit laws were the most prized internal secrets of the sect. If they were revealed to the outside, then it would be an even greater blow to the sect.

“Emperor merit laws, we will find them back again.”

In the end, these words of Li Qiye persuaded the five elders.

Regarding Li Qiye’s suggestion, the five elders ultimately unanimously agreed. Currently, the sect’s only road was to rise up. Without rising up, then being destroyed by the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom and Heavenly God Sect was only a matter of time.

Wanting to rise up means great changes. Otherwise, with the current conservative rules, wanting to rise would only be empty words.

The moment the sect decided to reform themselves, at the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, a piece of news was spread. Old Ox Country, the Nine Saint Demon Gate went on an expedition to meet the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom! The Nine Saint Demon Gate’s Demon King Lun Ri personally met with the Mortal King.

This news brought about many large waves of commotion. Not

long before this, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had just executed Dong Sheng Long and Lie Zhan Hou as well as destroying the Mortal King's will. At this moment, the descendant and princess of Old Ox Country was present. Now Demon King Lun Ri was visiting the Mortal King, this was too much of a coincidence, ah.

No one knew the content of the two kings' meeting, but after Demon King Lun Ri's departure, the royal city of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom released news that the conflict of Lie Zhan Hou and Dong Sheng Long with the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was only a personal matter.

Even though the Heavenly God Sect did not use an official method to announce this news, and instead used a secret channel, it was still enough to say everything clearly.

Hearing this rumor, many of the sects within the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom couldn't help but glance at each other. They realized that the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had successfully joined with the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

At this moment, many people understood why the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect dared to provoke the Heavenly God Sect, they had the backing of the Nine Saint Demon Gate! Otherwise, with the declining state of their sect, where would they find the power to challenge the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom?

“The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and the Nine Saint Demon Gate collaborating, I'm afraid they would still not flip the waves or winds.”

A sect master couldn't help but say:

“Imagine that year, the Progenitor of the Nine Saint Demon Gate was the number one personal general of Immortal Emperor Min Ren, ah. The Nine Saint Demon Gate used to be under the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Even though the Nine Saint Demon Gate is powerful now and the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect is declining, these two still worked together for hundreds of thousands of years.”

“Water in the distances cannot extinguish the close fire.”

Someone else also said:

“Even if they work together, the Nine Saint Demon Gate is so far from the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. With how weak they are, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect would be destroyed sooner or later.”

This news set out many waves in the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom. The majority of sects were loudly clamoring with others regarding the new development.

And as one of the main characters, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect led by Li Qiye was unconcerned about the news.

In reality, in the beginning when the five elders heard this message, they were quite surprised. The Nine Saint Demon Gate

supporting them — this was completely outside of their expectations. However, seeing Li Qiye's calm demeanor, they understood that the support of the Nine Saint Demon Gate was not towards them, but towards Li Qiye.

Inside the sect, Li Qiye, with the support of the five elders, began to aggressively reform the sect. He began by giving merit laws to new disciples. After examinations, the disciples with talents were given Virtuous Paragon and Heavenly King merit laws, regardless of whether it was a Life law, Fate merit, or Physique technique...[\[2\]](#)

In order to groom a group of disciples with potential, Li Qiye could be said to personally wield the blade and he selected his disciples. The distribution of the merit laws were all planned by him. His actions were to create a new central power for the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. This new group of central power would be the future hope of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

He divided this central power into four parts. The second generation, including sectional leaders and protectors, were led by Protector Mo. Li Qiye chose Protector Mo because he was a loyal follower and he valued Protector Mo's calm and steady cultivation. The third generation that had been formally accepted to the sect would be led by Qu Dao Li. Qu Dao Li was initially a disciple in the Scripture Library, but Li Qiye especially singled him out. [\[3\]](#)

Li Qiye had his own reasons for choosing Qu Dao Li. Qu Dao Li had some fame and respect within the third generation disciples. Moreover, his talents were not bad. However, the most important thing was that Qu Dao Li was prudent; as long as he could be refined and groomed, he would definitely become a grand

character.

As for another part, it was the three hundred disciples of the Cleansing Jade Peak. This was a group personally groomed by Li Qiye. They were demonically trained under him, and this group would be led by Xu Pei.

Finally, the last part was the disciples who have not formally joined the sect. They would become the reserve force, and also the hope of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect in the future.

Initially, Li Qiye wanted Nan Huai Ren to lead these reserve disciples, but this brat was too smart. He willingly chose to stay by Li Qiye's side to be a personal servant, and he even quit his envoy position.

If it was anyone else, they would not make the same choice. One has to know that leading a few thousand disciples that have not formally joined the sect would be akin to having the same power comparable to a protector. Plus, Nan Huai Ren was a disciple with the qualifications to learn the Violet Yang Ten Sun Merit Law. If he could wait a few more years and practice hard, he could even become the youngest protector of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!

However, Nan Huai Ren didn't choose such an option. He resigned from all positions and chose to stay by Li Qiye as a servant without any status! This decision might seemed idiotic, but in fact, it was the most intelligent choice!

Li Qiye personally taught the Dao to the disciples with potential and strong willpower. Under the influence of Li Qiye's aggressive reformation, sectional leaders, protectors, and even the elders of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect were all practicing their cultivations even more.

[1] Here I used coming into being again like last chapter – hopefully it is not too confusing

[2] These are just cultivation methods pertaining to the Life Wheel, Fate Palace, and Physique

[3] Qu Dao Li was in chapter 28. He was working in the library and was polite and helpful towards Li Qiye

Chapter 84 : Daylight Sky Immortal

Secret (2)

Having heard Li Qiye's lecture, not to mention the sectional leaders and protectors, even the elders were surprised. In the end, all five elders came to Li Qiye's door to ask him to lecture for them.

At this moment, all five elders were extremely convinced by Li Qiye. From their perspectives, Li Qiye was taught by the Patriarch so he knew the ultimate profound truths of the methods inside the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

Li Qiye said to the five elders:

“Elders have been cultivating for more than a thousand years and your Dao foundations are fortified. Unless you destroy and redo your cultivation from the start, to greatly soar forward would be impossible. At the moment, you can only fix the defects and maximize and optimize the Dao foundation with minor changes in your cultivation. However, as long as you all remain persistent, then in the future, there is still hope to break through the Ancient Saint realm.”

The five elders had cultivated for too long, and their Dao foundations were incomplete with defects. This was a forgone conclusion; unless the Dao foundation was destroyed, to make a big change was impossible. Li Qiye could only make minor adjustments for them!

Nevertheless, the elders were still very excited. They were self-aware that they had no chance of becoming Enlightened Beings, let alone Ancient Saints. At this moment, Li Qiye gave them hope and greatly motivated them.

Gu Tie Shou's group attributed Li Qiye's knowledge to the Patriarch teaching him the Dao in his dream, so he inherited the peerless profound truths of Immortal Emperor Min Ren.

However, they didn't know that Immortal Emperor Min Ren was brought on the road of cultivation by Li Qiye. After the flow of ten thousand ages, Li Qiye cultivated countless grand characters; he was naturally an unparalleled wise master.

Another thing that stirred the spirits of the elders was that Li Qiye, from his dream, found another incomplete merit law named the "Nine Cauldron Life Method". The even more exciting news was that after Li Qiye meditated the Daylight Sky Merit Law, he was able to find the Heaven's Will Secret Law, "Daytime Sky Immortal Secret", of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!

This caused the shocked elder to go for a long time without sleep. Heaven's Will Secret Law, ah! This would absolutely cause countless cultivators and sects to become crazy!

However, the "Nine Cauldron Life Method" and "Daytime Sky Immortal Secret" have become the top secrets of the sect. Besides the five elders, only Li Qiye knew about them.

The moment Li Qiye's Dao instruction came into the proper

track, it was time for him to personally cultivate. However, First Elder Gu Tie Shou came to his door and brought him to the triangular old building to see one thing.

Li Qiye followed Gu Tie Shou to the old building. Inside the treasury holding treasures and spirit medicines, they went to a corner, and Gu Tie Shou said:

“After what you said the last time, I especially ordered some disciples to rearrange the Scripture Library, the Weapon Armory, and the Treasure House. Afterward, some disciples found this item, but we couldn’t see its purposes. It is also extremely heavy.”

An ancient tablet was placed in the corner, it was pitch black without any light. The top was etched with clear engravings, they were complex to the point of being burdensome. This ancient tablet had experienced an unknown amount of years and was filled with holes on top. This was not due to the erosion of time but rather sword markings.

Li Qiye, during his millions of years, had seen many treasures, but when he meticulously looked at this ancient tablet, his expression changed. This type of item, he had seen it once. Even though it was not the same ancient tablet in front of him, the item he saw was an item with a similar origin.

“Where did this come from?”

Finally, Li Qiye asked Gu Tie Shou.

“It is not clear.”

Gu Tie Shou shook his head and said:

“I was under the impression that this ancient tablet had always been in this place. As for its exact origin, I am not certain.”

“I want this thing.”

In the end, Li Qiye spoke. The origin of this ancient tablet was not ordinary, he wanted to think it through.

Regarding Li Qiye’s request, Gu Tie Shou immediately agreed. At the moment, Li Qiye was akin to the sect master of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Even if the sect master, Su Yong Huang, came back, she most likely wouldn’t have the same authority as Li Qiye.

“The sealed floors, is there no chance of opening them?”

The moment they left the Treasure House, Gu Tie Shou asked Li Qiye.

Today, to Li Qiye, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect didn’t have any secrets. Even the sixth floor of the Scripture Library was allowed for him to enter by the five elders. Gu Tie Shou personally brought him to see the three sealed floors at the top as well.

“Hard to say.”

Li Qiye looked at the seal of the triangular ancient building; he only smiled and shook his head:

“This is not important, there might be nothing in there. There is a chance that it was just an immortal sage sealing it to inspire future generations.”

“Could you elaborate?”

Gu Tie Shou couldn't help but to ask.

Li Qiye smilingly answered:

“In order to open the seal, I'm afraid it only needs a Virtuous Paragon to make a move. Think about it, the last three floors are rumored to have Immortal Emperor Life Treasures and Immortal Emperor items. The generational disciples of the sect desperately desired them, and even the protectors and elders would be eager to become Virtuous Paragons in order to obtain the Immortal Emperor treasures! Thirty thousand years ago, the loss in that battle was too frightening. If there really were any treasures left, I'm afraid it would have all been used during that battle, why the need to seal them?”

Li Qiye smiled.

Hearing Li Qiye's words, Gu Tie Shou felt it made sense.

Thinking about it, if there were any spirit medicines or immortal treasures, it would have been used during the urgency of that battle. Nothing was more important than protecting the Cleansing Incense Ancient Kingdom.

The elders of many generations in the last thirty thousand years had looked forward to the Immortal Emperor treasury, but they didn't expect this. Thinking about it again, Gu Tie Shou himself couldn't help but laugh, and he couldn't help but lament.

Coming back to Lonely Peak, Li Shuangyan brought a piece of news to Li Qiye, and she said:

“The Alchemy Caster, Sheng Lao, of our sect had arrived. When can we start the Physique Paste's refinement?” [\[1\]](#)

Li Shuangyan's sudden mention of this matter reminded Li Qiye. Recently, he had been too occupied with the reformation of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. He patted his head and said:

“This trivial matter, I almost forgot about it.”

Here, Li Qiye ordered Li Shuangyan:

“Inform Elder Gu, tell him to carefully prepare the medicinal materials. In three days, I will prepare the cauldron and start the Physique Paste refinement.”

Li Shuangyan didn't raise a hint of demur and immediately followed the order. She, this heaven's proud daughter and princess of a country, revealed her docileness and gentleness.

Three days later, on Lonely Peak, Elder Gu had prepared all of the required medicinal herbs for Li Qiye, and Grandpa Sheng from the Nine Saint Demon Gate was also prepared to refine the Physique Paste.

For this matter of refinement, Elder Sun himself came to observe. As an Alchemy Master, it was a taboo to let others observe, however, Grandpa Sheng unexpectedly agreed.

Grandpa Sheng, in the Nine Saint Demon Gate, was not only an elder, but he was also the most powerful Alchemy Master. This time, Demon King Lun Ri sent him here for the refinement of Li Qiye's Physique Paste; it was enough to show his high respect for Li Qiye.

“How many times can Grandpa Sheng refine?”

Seeing Grandpa Sheng, Li Qiye didn't hold back and asked.

Grandpa Sheng looked like a messy old man, but Elder Sun was very respectful towards him, even to the point of fearing him. One has to know that the elders of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had no qualifications to meet an elder from the Nine Saint Demon Gate, let alone their most powerful Alchemy Master.

Elder Sun understood that Grandpa Sheng coming was all because of Li Qiye's face.

“Eight refinements.”

Grandpa Sheng was not a man of many words, and he was very direct.

“Grandpa Sheng is indeed the number one Alchemy Master of the Nine Saint Demon Gate, I can't believe you could refine it eight times.”

Hearing Grandpa Sheng, Elder Sun shockingly exclaimed:

“This junior could do five stable refinements, but six refinements were absolutely not guaranteed.”

Physique Pastes and Life Medicines could all be refined nine times. The higher the number of refinements, the better the essence!

Grandpa Sheng stared at Elder Sun, and he said:

“The true test of an Alchemy Master is not on Physique Pastes and not on Life Medicines, but it is on Fate Pills! A Fate Pill is the true essential test of an Alchemy Master.”

“This is true.”

Regarding these words, Elder Sun also acknowledged, and he said:

“If the Fate Pill’s creation is unsuccessful, it would be a damaged pill. However, an incomplete pill was a small matter. If the cauldron was broken as well, then it would be a huge disaster. When I refine a Fate Pill, I could do three transformations, four transformations would definitely result in a damaged pill.”

Physique Pastes and Life Medicines have nine refinements while Fate Pills have nine transformations. The Fate Pill was completely different from the Physique Paste and Life Medicine. If the Alchemy Master’s skill was lacking, the Physique Paste and Life Medicine created by him would still be usable and only their effects would be greatly reduced.

However, the Fate Pill was different. If the Alchemy Master’s power was insufficient and there was a mistake, the cauldron containing the Fate Pill would be destroyed. In the worst case, even the Heavenly Cauldron would be destroyed as well.

Which was why, there was a saying between all of the Alchemy Masters, that the true test for an Alchemy Master was the creation of the Fate Pills.

This was why, under the sect’s circumstance of not having an appropriate Alchemy Master, Elder Sun could still refine five times with ease. Even though the beast marrow was lacking in years, he could still take the responsibility to be Li Qiye’s Alchemy Master.

Even if his power was insufficient and he couldn't make up for the lack of years in the beast marrow, but the Physique Paste would not be incomplete and the cauldron would not be destroyed. Only the quality of the Physique Paste would be greatly reduced.

“Eight refinements, this is enough to make up for the lack of years in the beast marrow of the Hell Iron Bull. Let us get started.”

Regarding the ability of Grandpa Sheng, Li Qiye recognized it.

To someone like him that was cultivating an Immortal Physique method, the best choice would be an Immortal Physique Paste along with an Alchemy Master that could do nine refinements. However, under the current circumstances of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, he didn't have a choice.

One could even say that with the sect's current situation, this was already the best possible condition.

[\[1\]](#) Lao meaning grandpa, so it is actually Grandpa Sheng

Chapter 85 : King Physique Paste (1)

“Open...!”

Grandpa Sheng yelled and summoned his Heavenly Cauldron. Suddenly, a huge cauldron stood in front of Li Qiye and the others.

This giant cauldron was definitely large. It was as tall as two people and double the size of a large water container. This cauldron had the shape of an Auspicious Beast, the mouth of the cauldron was like the wide sea, seemingly able to swallow the three rivers.

During its emergence, strands of medicinal fragrances exuded from the body like a lingering blue smoke. This fragrance, like musk and cassia, was enough to let people know that the medicinal treasure inside this cauldron was absolutely first class.

“You fed it Eight Jewel Grass, Six Daisies Leaf, Violet Coral Branch...”

Li Qiye smelled the aroma, and he listed the medicinal plants one by one, then looked at Grandpa Sheng and said:

“It seems like Grandpa Sheng is versed at tempering Golden Powders.”

There was an orthodox saying between Alchemy Masters: Boil

Physique Paste, process Life Medicine, refine Fate Pill, and as for Golden Powders, tempering was the main method. [\[1\]](#)

For Physique Pastes, the main method was boiling. Life Medicines used processing as the key. A Fate Pill's creation is from refinement. And Golden Powders stemmed from tempering!

There were established systems for the creation of the Physique Pastes, Life Medicines, and Fate Pills. Only the Golden Powder medicine didn't have a clear system for the Alchemy Masters.

Grandpa Sheng was surprised and stared at Li Qiye. Having only smelt the fragrances yet he immediately knew the medicinal plants that were used to feed the Heavenly Cauldron, and he also knew that he specialized in Golden Power medicines... This could be considered an Alchemy Ancestor with perfect understanding of the medicinal plants!

Grandpa Sheng astonishingly looked at Li Qiye, and he asked:

“You cultivate the Dao of alchemy?”

Li Qiye shook his head with a smile, and said:

“The Dao of alchemy, it is just a hobby of mine.”

Finished speaking, he looked towards the cauldron of Grandpa Sheng, and said:

“The Origin Flame has a Yin property, but inside the softness there is also firmness. This cauldron of yours was a natural Origin Yin Flame, but you threw in Eight Jewel Grass, which has firmness inside the softness. Coincidentally, this type of Origin Flame is the most suitable for boiling the beast marrow of a Hell Iron Bull.”

Here, he glanced at Li Shuangyan standing besides him.

Without a doubt, Li Shuangyan had reported his exact situation to the Nine Saint Demon Gate.

Li Qiye’s continuous words frightened Grandpa Sheng. Understanding the essence of medicine and discerning the Heavenly Cauldron like this, this would require hundreds or thousands of years to have some minor achievement. Even more than one thousand years of studying wouldn’t necessarily have such an achievement!

“You truly didn’t cultivate the Dao of alchemy?”

Grandpa Sheng was in sudden amazement, only Elder Sun and Li Shuangyan were calm. They were accustomed to Li Qiye’s unfathomable abilities.

“It is only a minor hobby, I’ve read a few medicine scrolls.”

Li Qiye nonchalantly answered.

Grandpa Sheng became silent. Only reading a few medicine scrolls to immediately master the essence of alchemy and Heavenly Cauldrons, other Alchemy Masters might as well hang themselves and commit suicide. This matter was essentially impossible, even a genius wouldn't have the ability to read a few scrolls and understand everything. This required the accumulation of knowledge through time!

However, this boy in front of him was only fourteen years old, where would he find the time to accumulate all of the knowledge?

Grandpa Sheng naturally was unaware that the current system of alchemy originated from Li Qiye and the Alchemy God that year. If he didn't understand the essence of alchemy, then who in this world would?

“Begin.”

Grandpa Sheng was confused in a daze while Li Qiye was calm in his thoughts. This matter, to him, was not enough to reach the apex.

Grandpa Sheng placed his palm on the Heavenly Cauldron and nodded his head:

“Beginning.”

His words had just come out when the bottom of the cauldron emitted waves and waves of flames. They were not overly

powerful, but not faint either. These waves of flames interlaced with each other, becoming a furnace, as if it could refine all existences.

“The corpse of Nine Longevity Tortoise, the spine of Windling Serpent, the tail of Blood Tiger, the brain of Fire Scorpion, the eyes of Fat Ghost...”

Grandpa Sheng gravely yelled.

Elder Sun willingly stood by the side as an assistant. Hearing the voice of Grandpa Sheng, he immediately opened the treasure chest and threw in the medicinal materials in order, one by one, into the Heavenly Cauldron, and he also yelled:

“The corpse of Nine Longevity Tortoise, one hundred and twenty thousand years; the spine of Windling Serpent, one hundred and ten thousand years; the tail of Blood Tiger, one hundred and ten thousand years...”

Finally, all of the supporting medicine materials were put into the Origin Flame of the Heavenly Cauldron. At this moment, Grandpa Sheng activated the Origin Flame. The Origin Yin Flame, with firmness inside the softness, became increasingly stronger; all of the materials were melted into a medicinal liquid and it began to boil!

At this moment, the fire furnace within the Heavenly Cauldron began to emit a special fragrance; a stench without the stench, a sweet smell without the sweetness. Not smelly nor sweet, this

aroma was very unique.

“Drop in the beast marrow!”

At this point, Grandpa Sheng loudly yelled.

Hearing these words, Elder Sun cautiously took out a treasure box and opened it. Inside was an item three feet long like a bone, this was the primary medicinal bone marrow for the Physique Paste.

Elder Sun threw the beast marrow into the medicinal concoction. In the beginning, the beast marrow seemed very ordinary, but once the outside shell of the bones were melted away, the essence of blood finally started flowing out.

“Mooo...”

At this moment, the roar of a bull rang inside. An Iron Bull the size of a fist appeared, surrounded by a Yin aura that wouldn't dissipate. It let out a long neigh and started to run around like crazy, with its feet emitting continuous thunders, as if it wanted to shake the Heavenly Cauldron.

The beast marrow was the most important part of the spine from a Heavenly Beast. It contained all of the essence of the beast. Even when the beast had died, all of its body essence remained in this marrow.

Even though the Hell Iron Bull was dead, the moment its essence came flowing out, others could still see the will of the Hell Iron Bull. No matter what type of beast marrow it was, they were not willing to be refined.

However, once it was inside the Heavenly Cauldron, even if it was not willing, it couldn't escape the fate of refinement.

Even though the will of the Hell Iron Bull was rampaging with an unstoppable presence, as if it wanted to trample over the Origin Flame, but at this moment, the Auspicious Beast's aura exploded. One could see the Auspicious Beast channeling the universal laws of the world; the entire Heavenly Cauldron became ferociously frightening, like a master waking up.

With the power of the Heavenly Cauldron exploding, it successfully suppressed the fast moving Hell Iron Bull. In the end, the essence of the bull, along with the melted medicines, combined together.

A Heavenly Cauldron was not an item without life. One could say that it was created by the heaven and earth. Inside the cauldron, it was its own world, capable of suppressing all spirit medicines.

Of course, the Heavenly Cauldrons also had their own ranking. The power of the Alchemy Master was directly related to the Heavenly Cauldron – the stronger the Alchemy Master, the more powerful the cauldron would be.

The moment an Alchemy Master obtained a Heavenly Cauldron,

it would be the time when it was at its weakest rank. Afterwards, the Alchemy Master would continuously feed it flame sparks and medicinal plants, and they would also make Fate Pills and Physique Pastes nonstop, resulting in the Heavenly Cauldron becoming more powerful. This process was considered the fusion between the Heavenly Cauldron and the Alchemy Master.

Of course, there were some Alchemy Masters that inherited Heavenly Cauldrons from their predecessors. However, this inheriting process was very difficult. Especially when the rank of the Heavenly Cauldron was high, the integration process became nearly impossible for the Alchemy Master.

In the end, the medicinal pillar became medicinal paste. This paste was thick and flaky. Inside the crimson red color was a hint of purple, emitting a special medicinal aroma. Observing this type of medicine paste was enough for others to like it.

However, the medicinal paste was not completed. At this moment, Grandpa Sheng changed his medicinal incantations and activated the Heavenly Cauldron. Inside the cauldron, a smell arose that was not of the medicinal paste, but from the cauldron's medicinal treasure.

The medicinal treasure absorbed and released the essence of the paste and fused together with the Origin Flame. At this moment, the Origin Flame seemed to be alive and licked the Physique Paste. The entire cauldron slowly rotated in a circle, causing the flame to grind the paste and making the thick paste become a lot smaller.

This was the effect of the Heavenly Cauldron's medicinal

treasure. Whether it was the boiling of a Physique Paste or the refining of a Fate Pill, only relying on the medicinal properties of the materials were not enough. Even the Origin Flame couldn't fuse all of the different properties together in harmony. At this moment, the powerful medicinal properties of the medicinal treasure was necessary in order to balance the materials — in conjunction with the Origin Flame — to achieve the harmonization of the paste.

When it came to the Physique Paste, the higher the amount of refinement, the closer the fusion would be to perfection. This process, besides the power of the Alchemy Master, was also decided by the medicinal treasure of the Heavenly Cauldron.

This process was no longer possible after the fourth refinement. At this moment, the Physique Paste became meticulously soft and smooth, like dragon fat. Even someone who was not privy to the arts knew that this was the good stuff.

“Unfortunately, the years of the beast marrow were not enough, I could only refine it four and a half times.”

Grandpa Sheng, seeing this process, could only sigh and lament.

“Great, worthy of being an eight refinements grand master!”

Seeing the Physique Paste inside the cauldron, Elder Sun couldn't help but exclaim:

“If it was me, and the years of the beast marrow were insufficient, then I’m afraid I wouldn’t even be able to sustain the fourth refinement and the medicinal effects would be reduced greatly!”

Elder Sun’s Physique Paste refinement ability was stable at five refinements while Grandpa Sheng was at eight refinements. In principle, using the ability of Grandpa Sheng, five refinements wouldn’t have been a problem. Unfortunately, the main driving material — the beast marrow, its years were not enough and he could only do four and a half refinements!

There were also ranks for Physique Pastes, from low to high: Houtian Physique Paste, Xiantian Physique Paste, King Physique Paste, Saint Physique Paste, and Immortal Physique Paste.

Not only were there ranks for these Physique pastes, but the number of refinements also affected their medicinal strength.

A Houtian Physique Paste only required one refinement. Even a novice Alchemy Master could refine this rank. Xiantian Physique Pastes required two to three refinements; King Physique Pastes required four refinements to six refinements. A Saint Physique Paste required seven to nine refinements, while an Immortal Physique Paste had to be made with nine refinements!

Currently, Li Qiye’s Physique Paste was of the King level. At the time when the sect was looking for an Alchemy Master for Li Qiye, only two options were available: Elder Sun and Cao Xiong. Cao Xiong’s ability was higher than Elder Sun by one step and was stable at six refinements. In theory, both of them had the

qualification to refine a King Physique Paste.

However, in reality, the years of the Hell Iron Bull's marrow were not enough to be the main driving material for this King Physique Paste. Both Cao Xiong and Elder Sun wouldn't be able to refine it four times, and it would have a direct impact on the effect of the Physique Paste.

[\[1\]](#) This whole sentence is meant to be poetically sounding. Boil here means to slowly refine via fire. The word process and refine here were originally part of two words that should be together, meaning to extremely refine, but he split the words “extreme” and “refine” and left them in front of medicine and pill, which is a common Chinese literary technique. So in other words, refine could be a substitute in English for all of them

Chapter 86 : King Physique Paste (2)

The Physique Paste's refinement has been completed. At this moment, Li Qiye was down to his trousers and he jumped into the cauldron without hesitation, submerging his body into the paste.

At this moment, the Heavenly Cauldron slowly closed and finally, the entire treasure cauldron was sealed. But this was far from over. Grandpa Sheng took control of the cauldron and slowly withdrew the Origin Flame. The flame sparks were still licking the Physique Paste, so that it would slowly boil.

Inside the cauldron, even Li Qiye's head was submerged into the Physique Paste. The pores in his entire body were relaxed, and he channeled the incantations for the Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique!

At this moment, there were thunderous sounds inside Li Qiye's body. The mercury-like Physique Paste pervasively invaded Li Qiye's body. The essence of the paste combined with the body essence of Li Qiye.

The Hell Iron Bull's beast marrow, as the main driving force, was the most appropriate paste for Li Qiye's Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique. The slush of the paste covered Li Qiye's body.

He possessed a Mortal Physique. Even though he was cultivating an Immortal Physique, at this moment, his Physique had not yet been completed and thus, it was chaotically scattered.

However, the Physique Paste was refining the bones and muscles of Li Qiye, purifying the blood and flesh. Under the incantations, his Immortal Physique — once again — underwent changes and his entire body was greatly transformed and improved by the medicinal effects.

Li Qiye's natural Mortal Physique was extremely weak; his muscles, bones, blood, and flesh were extremely feeble. Even though his body was improved after practicing the Immortal Physique, it was still not comparable to a natural Saint Physique.

This was why this baptism was extremely important to Li Qiye. To alleviate his innately weak body, he absolutely has to use a Physique Paste, the higher rank the better, to rebuild his body.

The entire process of body rebuilding was extremely painful. It was akin to the opening of all of his bones, crushing his muscles, and even taking out his bone marrow in order to use the Physique Paste to refine them.

Despite the arduous and painful process, Li Qiye was still able to withstand it without whimpering once.

It was unknown how long the process took. In the end, the Physique Paste was finally used up, becoming dried mud. All of its essence was refined by the Immortal Physique and turned into Li Qiye's Inner Physique.

An explosive “boom” occurred. At this moment, the inside of Li

Qiye's body was fried open and finally, his Inner Physique had been successfully refined. A fist as small as a fetus and dark like iron was formed. This tiny Inner Physique was heavy beyond one's imagination, like the heaviest godly metal in this world. At this moment, the universal laws of the Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique, like strands of silk, covered this black Inner Physique!

In the end, the universal laws of the Immortal Physique covered the Inner Physique, slowly hid it inside the heart, and the laws finally submerged within alongside the Inner Physique. However, the universal laws continued to rotate without stop!

The Inner Physique was protected by the heart, the Life Wheel resided in the neck, and the Fate Palace was hidden in the Ni Gong meridian! [\[1\]](#)

A formed Inner Physique meant that Li Qiye had broken through the Yun Physique grand completion level and stepped into the Provisional Palace realm!

“Roll... Roll...”

At this point, the Heavenly Cauldron opened its mouth. Li Qiye jumped out and smiled:

“Success. This matter, I had imposed on Grandpa Sheng.” [\[2\]](#)

At this moment, Grandpa Sheng and the others observed Li Qiye and saw that his entire body was blessed with powerful muscle, as

if it was crafted from metals. It gave off an air of unlimited strength.

“King Physique Paste, ah! Truly unimaginable. Even a Mortal Physique could be refined into such a state.”

Seeing Li Qiye’s body, Elder Sun couldn’t help but become envious. The sect only had one King Physique Paste and at this moment, it went entirely into Li Qiye’s body.

The perceptions of Grandpa Sheng and Li Shuangyan were more keen. Especially Li Shuangyan, she had guessed the real Physique that Li Qiye was practicing. Their conjectures were not just on the physical body. At this moment, their observation of Li Qiye was affected by a powerful force, it was as heavy as millions of jin striking at one’s face, as if Li Qiye’s body was a godly mountain with an unfathomable weight. Only his body alone was enough to suppress all existences, as if it was a metamorphosis of an extraordinary weapon! It was filled with strength and violence!

Li Shuangyan’s shocked expression revealed that she was aware that Li Qiye refined his Inner Physique into the Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique. She understood the true meaning behind the completion of the Immortal Inner Physique!

Although Li Qiye had a long road ahead of him before reaching grand completion, the moment his Inner Physique was completed, the foundation of the Immortal Physique was successful!

At this moment, Li Shuangyan was aware that this ancient body

of Li Qiye, once activated, countless Life Treasures and True Treasures would not be able to withstand his pressure!

“Good Physique!”

Grandpa Sheng couldn't help but exclaim. He didn't know the exact Physique Li Qiye was cultivating, but just by feeling the pressure striking his face, he knew that this Physique was absolutely wonderful!

As for Elder Sun, he didn't ask for which Physique Li Qiye was practicing. It could have been a peerless Physique that the Patriarch taught him in his dreams.

So with regards to Li Qiye being able to absorb the entire Physique Paste, no one was surprised.

Even though any cultivator could use any rank of Physique Paste to refine their body, in reality, the moment of true refinement was also dependent on certain principles.

For example, a natural born King Physique, even without any Physique law, could still absorb the essence of a King Physique Paste. If the person also practiced a King Physique, then he could completely absorb the King Physique Paste's essence.

However, when a natural born King Physique used a Saint Physique Paste, the maximum absorption would be limited to two or three parts out of ten. This was a waste of the Physique Paste

and could be remedied if the person also practiced a Saint Physique in order to absorb a higher portion of the essences.

After Grandpa Sheng helped Li Qiye with his refinement, he didn't stay at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. During his departure, he gave a message from Demon King Lun Ri to Li Qiye, telling him that he was always welcome as a guest at the gate!

Without a doubt, the Demon King greatly valued Li Qiye, otherwise, an ordinary disciple of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect wouldn't be repeatedly extended an invitation so many times.

After saying goodbye to Grandpa Sheng, Li Qiye came back to his courtyard and meditated. Regarding cultivation, he was more diligent than anyone, but his cultivation was slowed down because of the reformation of the sect during the past half a year.

After Yun Physique was the Provisional Palace realm. This realm was about forming a new Fate Palace within the Ni Gong meridian. It sounds simple, but building a new Fate Palace from scratch was not an easy matter.

Building a new Fate Palace was different from the natural Fate Palace. Cultivators called the natural Fate Palace the Master Palace while the created Fate Palace would be the Vice Palace or Servant Palace.

The Master Palace was where the True Fate resided, and was also called the True Fate Master Palace. The new Fate Palace cannot replace the Master Palace due to this.

At the Provisional Palace realm, a cultivator could build one new Fate Palace, but a cultivator during his life would not build just one new Fate Palace. In theory, a cultivator could have twelve Fate Palaces — also named the Twelve Palaces. [\[3\]](#)

In reality, from the ancient past till now, people having the Twelve Palaces were essentially non-existent! Some even say that this world essentially didn't have twelve palaces; at the very most, there were eleven palaces!

These words were not without reasons. In fact, a cultivator with three Fate Palaces was already praised as being extraordinary. With six Fate Palaces, one would be considered a genius even if his aptitude and Physique was ordinary; as long as he had six Fate Palaces, no one could deny his future prowess. As for having nine Fate Palaces, this was an extraordinary genius as high as the heavens; even throughout the ancient times till now, it would be difficult to find one! As for having more than nine palaces, there were very few known cultivators since the beginning of time!

Provisional Palace realm has five levels, and in order from lowest to highest, they are: One Starting Palace, Two Gushing Springs, Three Igniting Fires, Four Breaking Grounds, Five Rising Pillars.

Li Qiye had stepped inside this realm. At this moment, on top of his Fate Palace was a transforming Kun Peng, flying around his True Fate. Waves after waves of incantations affected the Master Palace, causing Li Qiye's Ni Gong meridian to change!

There was a bone pillar rising in Li Qiye's Ni Gong meridian as Li Qiye channeled the Kun Peng's Six Variants nonstop. It slowly dug into the meridian and the shape of a Fate Palace was slowly formed...

This was the Provisional Palace's One Starting Palace level. The process was extremely slow, but Li Qiye was not anxious. He knew, this realm could not be rushed. Once a mistake appeared, it would directly cause the palace to collapse. If this happened, then opening a new Fate Palace in the future would be harder than traversing the high sky!

Throughout the day, Li Qiye was immersed in this process. The second day, Li Qiye woke up from his heavenly meditation and saw Li Shuangyan waiting quietly at the door.

Stretching his tired back, Li Qiye signaled for Li Shuangyan to come in. After arriving inside, Li Shuangyan was just coldly looking at him, without saying a word.

Li Shuangyan. This type of heaven's proud daughter, even after following Li Qiye for so long, she was still as silent and cold as ever.

Li Qiye looked at Li Shuangyan, and said:

"Your Saint level Pure Jade Physique Merit Law came from the War God Temple."

Li Shuangyan gently nodded her head, without saying a word. She was a natural King Physique; in order to cultivate a Saint Physique, the Nine Saint Demon Gate expended a lot of effort in order to obtain the “Pure Jade Physique” that was appropriate for her cultivation.

“This Physique merit law from the War God Temple is not bad, it is capable of the Grand Dao.”

Li Qiye gently nodded his head and said.

Li Shuangyan couldn't help but to glare at Li Qiye. The Saint level Pure Jade Physique Merit Law, this Physique was coveted by so many. Even the Nine Saint Demon Gate expended blood and sweat in order to receive it from the War God Temple.

[1] I believe Ni Gong meridian is in the forehead, but this Ni Gong is a name used by this author to work with the Fate Palace, so he renamed the actual meridian to Ni Gong

[2] It is a way of saying thanks

[3] This sentence is redundant in English, but it is a bit more formal in Chinese, the proper name

Chapter 87 : Void Imperfection Immortal Physique (1)

Li Shuangyan's glare, this appearance of hers made her icy cold expression have three parts charm and seven parts beauty. She was already country-destroyingly beautiful, but this expression caused others' minds to sway and their souls to go crazy.

Such beauty, such style — it was something only Li Qiye could slowly savor. As for Li Qiye, regarding Li Shuangyan's disagreement, he smiled and said:

“The War God Temple indeed has some hidden power, and some parts arrogant. The Saint level Pure Jade Physique Merit Law, to the War God Temple, could be considered a good Physique, and to the cultivators of the world, it would be an unimaginable Saint Physique. However, to me, it was only a common merit law, not enough to reach the apex.”

Li Qiye nonchalantly and happily smiled.

Li Shuangyan gazed at Li Qiye and asked:

“In other words, you have a Physique that is better than the level Pure Jade Saint Merit Law then?”

She knew that Li Qiye practiced the “Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique”, this meant that he had the Hell Suppressing Immortal

Physique Merit Law.

However, she was a natural Pure Crystal Physique, her body was completely different from the Hell Suppressing Immortal Physique. Even if Li Qiye passed it on to her, it would still be useless.

At this moment, she was practicing the Pure Jade Saint Physique; this could be considered a peak Physique merit law in this world. Outside of this merit law, wanting to find a Physique law that was superior to the Pure Jade Saint Physique was harder than hard, unless it was an Immortal Physique.

Li Qiye didn't consider the Pure Jade Saint Merit Law in his eyes, this meant that he had an Immortal Physique of this body type. Before, Li Shuangyan had suspicions of this, but at the moment, Li Qiye had basically admitted this and it caused her heart to shiver.

A person having two Immortal Physique merit laws for different body types, what does this imply? Even looking at the whole Mortal Emperor World, even the Nine Worlds, and all of the sects and lineages — especially the Immortal Emperor sects — having two Immortal Physique merit laws could not be counted past five fingers, especially not more than two fingers![\[1\]](#)

However, Li Qiye actually possessed two Immortal Physique merit laws — how shocking was this. Of course, if Li Shuangyan knew that he had the Physique Scripture, then she would be at a loss for words. This was the origin law of all physiques; it could be said that all physique merit laws in existence in this world originated from this scripture.

“You are not too stupid.”

Li Qiye smiled:

“The reason I called you in is to teach you the true incantations of an Immortal Physique merit law!”

“Teach me the true incantations?”

Li Shuangyan’s heart was distraught and she didn’t dare to believe the little boy in front of her.

At this moment, Li Qiye sat formally, and he said:

“Before teaching you the true incantations, I must make a few things clear with you.”

Li Shuangyan had been staying with Li Qiye for almost a year. Very few matters could change his mood and very few matters could make him so formal, this caused Li Shuangyan to shiver.

“If I pass down the true incantations to you, you must accomplish a few things. First, swear with your True Fate that unless I give you permission, you will never pass it down to a second person, even if it was your closest person; second, never betray or oppose me, otherwise, accept the consequences; third, this matter will not be told to anyone, even your master, Demon

King Lun Ri!”

Li Qiye slowly spoke with an extremely solemn and dignified expression.

This air of seriousness coming from Li Qiye caused Li Shuangyan to be shaken. At this moment, her intelligence was able to guess something.

Li Qiye slowly continued:

“You have to truly remember that if you teach this merit law to someone else, I will not only personally slay you, but I will also massacre the sect or the clan receiving this law! This law, without my permission, absolutely cannot be spread to others. In the future, even if an Immortal Emperor was to protect you, I will do as I said. Without my permission and obtaining this merit law, the only fate available is the complete annihilation of the clan!”

This was the first time seeing Li Qiye’s solemn expression. Li Shuangyan definitely trusted that his words were not originating from baseless arrogance. She believed that he will do as he said!

Li Shuangyan did not know the old stories of the Physique Scripture. It was in Li Qiye’s possession for millions of years. In reality, he had passed on the Immortal Physiques to not only Immortal Emperor Min Ren. That year, Min Ren was given the word “Yang” from the Scripture and he successfully cultivated the “Solar Immortal Physique.”

Afterward, Immortal Emperor Min Ren didn't leave behind the "Solar Immortal Physique" to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect because this was the agreement between him and Li Qiye.

In reality, it was not just Min Ren who obtained and Immortal Physiques. There were a few at a young age who reached an agreement with Li Qiye and they finally cultivated the Immortal Physiques and actually became Immortal Emperors. However, they also didn't pass down these Immortal Physiques.

"By giving away the true incantations, you will have to follow me. You can sign a contract with me and choose to follow me for one thousand years, ten thousand years, or your whole life. When the contract expires, you are free to leave! However, you absolutely cannot oppose me in the future. If the pact is broken... I do not need to repeat the consequences."

Li Qiye slowly said.

"Of course, you can also choose to not learn this merit law. As long as you follow me, in the future, I will grant you an even better Saint merit law than the one you are currently practicing! Make your choice now."

Li Shuangyan stared at Li Qiye in silent contemplation. Without a doubt, this choice would greatly affect her entire life. As the heaven's proud daughter, she had many choices, but today, she was facing a different situation.

"Well, I am willing."

Finally, Li Shuangyan made her choice and formally said with a resolute demeanor. She, in one breath, chose to follow him for her whole life. Having made this decision with resolution and swiftness, she was indeed an intelligent person — she just made the biggest decision of her life.

“One day, you will understand that your decision is not incorrect.”

Li Qiye gently nodded his head and said:

“In the future, when I crawl up to the peak, there will absolutely be a place for you.”

Finally, Li Shuangyan used her True Fate to make a pact and swore to be loyal and follow Li Qiye. Obtaining her service, Li Qiye smiled and said:

“Listen well, I am passing the true incantations to you.”

Li Shuangyan shivered and focused her mind. She didn't dare to be careless. With a formal expression, she carefully listened to every word and sentence that came from Li Qiye.

Li Shuangyan was a natural born Pure Crystal Physique, this was one of the twenty four King Physiques. Pure Crystal Physique and Substance Jade Physique were the same body type, both are one of the twenty four King Physiques. They both could become the Pure

Jade Physique, one of the eighteen Saint Physiques. Finally, with an Immortal Physique merit law, these two Physiques could become the Void Imperfection Physique, one of the twelve Immortal Physiques.

However, Li Qiye, at the moment, was passing down to her an Immortal Physique, directly skipping the Saint Physique. As for Saint Physiques, there were eighteen types. However, in this world, cultivators preferred to call them the twelve Saint Physiques.

This was because within the eighteen Saint Physiques, there were only twelve that have a corresponding Immortal Physique. As for the other six Saint Physiques, they were extremely rare. Many people didn't even know what the other six Saint Physiques were!

Li Shuangyan was extremely serious and carefully listened to Li Qiye's instruction. She was a natural born King Physique, King Life Wheel, and Saint Fate Palace. Her aptitude could be counted only on one's fingers in this generation — definitely a genius within geniuses. To her, the only limitation was the merit laws because, in the end, the Nine Saint Demon Gate was not of Immortal Emperor lineage. For a genius like her to obtain an Emperor law, she would be even more unfathomable.

However, the Life Wheel and Fate Palace couldn't be changed. This was bestowed by the heavens. A natural King Life Wheel will always be a King Life Wheel, it could not be promoted to the Saint Life Wheel. Only the Physique could be promoted to a higher realm through cultivation.

To Li Shuangyan, a King Physique was far from sufficient. If she could successfully cultivate an Immortal Physique, then in the future, she would truly be able to reach the peak.

The Physique Scripture had six words, and at the extremes of each words, two Immortal Physiques were born. If Li Shuangyan wanted an Immortal Physique, she would have to cultivate the Void Imperfection Physique.

The Void Imperfection Physique originated from the word “Pure”, meaning extreme purity. The two Immortal Physiques that accompanied this word was the “Void Imperfection Physique” and the “Soar Immortal Physique”!

Currently, Li Qiye was teaching her the Void Imperfection Physique, one of the two grand Physiques of Pure!

Li Shuangyan’s talents were extraordinary; Li Qiye only had to say it once, yet she was able to memorize the Void Imperfection Physique’s incantations. Her mind was extremely moved by this merit law. This was the most profound and mysterious merit law she had come in contact with. Even as a genius, she had no way to understand the absolute meanings within.

Fortunately, Li Qiye explained the ultimate mysteries of the Void Imperfection Physique for her. At the moment, during Li Qiye’s Dao instruction, this was the real shock for Li Shuangyan.

As the absolute genius of the Grand Middle Territory, the moment she heard the incantations of the Void Imperfection

Physique, she was afraid that even within one hundred years, she still wouldn't be able to understand the ultimate mysteries of this merit law. However, at this moment, Li Qiye was preaching without stop; from simplicity to complexity, from shallowness to the depths! There was no resemblance to a fourteen year old! This was a supreme master of a generation.

Li Shuangyan, of course, didn't know that Li Qiye had spent countless years reading and meditating about the Physique Scripture. During this process, he absorbed the essence of many Immortal Emperors and the Mortal Race's immortal sages. Naturally, a genius like Li Shuangyan couldn't compare to him.

After the instruction, Li Qiye said to Li Shuangyan:

“I have explained the Physique merit law to you. As for how much you can actually comprehend, this is up to your own cultivation. If you actually cannot successfully form the Void Imperfect Physique, then I could only say that you are the dumbest person in this world, and I was also wrong in judging you.”

“This merit law, cultivating it together with my existing Pure Jade Saint Merit Law, would there be flaws at the moment when I form my Inner Physique?”

Li Shuangyan took a long time to regain her wits, and asked.

[\[1\]](#) Confusing paragraph, basically she is saying no sect in this world has more than two Immortal Physique Merit Laws, at most

Chapter 88 : Void Imperfection

Immortal Physique (2)

Li Qiye smiled and said:

“If my instruction between the connection of two Physique merit laws possesses a problem, then there wouldn’t be any perfect Physique merit law in this world! This merit law absolutely can merge with the Pure Jade Saint Merit Law you are currently cultivating. This Physique law is the ultimate progenitor of all Void Imperfection Merit Laws!”

Hearing Li Qiye’s words, Li Shuangyan was in astonishment. This was the same as him admitting a particular matter, causing Li Shuangyan to bewilderedly stare at Li Qiye. She hesitated for a moment, and finally asked:

“This Physique merit law...”

“Correct, this Physique merit law originated from the Physique Scripture.”

Li Qiye interrupted her conjecture, looked into her eyes, and said:

“But, this is only for you to know, understand?”

Li Shuangyan gently nodded her head, and was still in

amazement. She stared at Li Qiye and said:

“But, I-I heard that the Physique Scripture had not come into being for more than one million years! I also never heard about anyone ever possessing the Heavenly Scripture!”

The Nine Grand Heavenly Scriptures and the Nine Grand Heavenly Treasures — these were the supreme existences of this world. To cultivators, there was nothing in this world more valuable than the Nine Grand Heavenly Scriptures and the Nine Grand Heavenly Treasures.

However, since the beginning of time, no one had heard of anyone possessing a Scripture from the Nine Scriptures and a Treasure from the Nine Treasures!

They both never revealed themselves in this world, so many cultivators thought that their existences were only mere fabrications, that this world essentially did not have such things.

“Why is it strange?”

Li Qiye nonchalantly and amusingly smiled:

“After the Desolace Expansion Era, the Physique Scripture had never appeared in this mortal world!”

After he obtained the Physique Scripture, it was immediately hidden. From the past till now, people who have actually seen the

Physique Scripture were very few.

Li Shuangyan stared at Li Qiye. Finally, she didn't know what to say. If Li Qiye didn't personally pass down the Void Imperfection Physique to her, if Li Qiye didn't personally say that he possessed the Physique Scripture, she would never ever believe that a fourteen year old boy would be the owner of the Physique Scripture. The whole world would think that he was boasting.

“Any other questions?”

Finally, Li Qiye asked.

Li Shuangyan hesitated for a moment, and finally asked:

“My Life Law and Fate Law, are there any defects?”

As a genius, asking a young boy much younger than her for advice — if others saw this, it would be an unexplainable matter.

In reality, when Li Shuangyan saw Li Qiye teaching Nan Huai Ren's crowd, she was not without temptation and she wanted to ask Li Qiye for help. However, because of her pride and her inability to let it go, she was not able to ask him until the moment she swore with her True Fate. This shortened the distance between her and Li Qiye, so she was able to open her mouth for advice.

Li Qiye glanced at her and said:

“Regarding the Fate Law, your cultivation of the “Phoenix Bearing Method” has nothing to be critical about. This was a merit law passed down by your Progenitor, but it was not created by him. Don’t always think about Emperor merit laws; in reality, there are times when Emperor merit laws are not the most perfect choices...”

“The Phoenix Bearing Method was obtained by your Progenitor from an ancient heritage. It was created by an immortal sage from the Demon Race with an extremely old beginning. It was formed during the Desolate Era and perfected during the Desolate Expansion Era. In reality, during the Desolate Expansion Era, many grand unfathomable characters appeared and they studied the Phoenix Bearing Method, but they couldn’t perfect it. All the way till later, your Progenitor was fatefully fortunate and obtained the completed Phoenix Bearing Method.”

Regarding this matter, Li Qiye kept on speaking. Outside of the late Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon, no one else knew more than him. That year, when Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon was still calling himself Nine Saint Heavenly Demon, he was without a sect. Frankly speaking, the former past of Nine Saint Virtuous Paragon was a wild chicken. Later on, he fatefully found the Phoenix Bearing Method and it allowed him to become an unbeatable Virtuous Paragon that had swept through that generation. He could be considered the peak of Virtuous Paragons!”

Li Qiye continued:

“As for your Life Law, the “Swan Cloud Method”, even though it

is not a top Life Law of this world and there is indeed quite a distance between it and an Immortal Emperor Life Law, but since you practice the Phoenix Bearing Method, you must also choose the Swan Cloud Method. This method was created by your Progenitor because he studied the Phoenix Bearing Method his whole life. Then, he created the Swan Cloud Method Life Law that was the most suitable to go with the Phoenix Bearing Method.”

Hearing the smooth explanation of Li Qiye regarding her own methods, Li Shuangyan was dumbfounded with her mouth open. Because she practiced these two, she formally knew the origins and circumstances of them. In reality, regarding these two methods, the disciples of the Nine Saint Demon Gate didn’t necessarily know so many things, yet Li Qiye was able to continue on their understandings.

This caused Li Shuangyan to be suspicious and asked:

“You really aren’t a disciple from our Nine Saint Demon Gate?”

A disciple from a different sect understanding the highest methods from her Nine Saint Demon Gate like this — if this got out, then even the elders of the Nine Saint Demon Gate wouldn’t believe it.

Regarding such words from Li Shuangyan, Li Qiye couldn’t help but start to laugh, and he finally said:

“Merit laws and the Life Law are without problems to you. The truth is that you lack a Fate Protecting Killing Technique.

However, your Dao foundation is based on the Phoenix Bearing Method and the Swan Cloud Method; a Fate Protecting Killing Method, you will have an opportunity to learn at any time.”

Here, he looked at Li Shuangyan, and said:

“I know that your Nine Saint Demon Gate has several Grand Killing techniques, but they are not fitting for you. Plus, you clearly put your focus on formations, so you have no way of cultivating these Grand Killing techniques to their true annihilating realms! As for the formations of your sect, they really aren’t so good, ah.”

Li Shuangyan was a little unconvinced with Li Qiye’s words. Her Nine Saint Demon Gate had several grand formation techniques.

“You don’t need to be convinced.”

Li Qiye smiled and said:

“I saw your formation and immediately knew what were considered grand formations in your Nine Saint Demon Gate. It was simply a small insignificant corner from the Formation Ancestor. You all definitely obtained a small and incomplete manual from the Formation Ancestor, however, your grand formations were not even one part out of ten of the Formation Ancestor’s heritage.

Li Qiye’s words left Li Shuangyan feeling dejected. The grand

formations of the Nine Saint Demon Gate were renowned in the Grand Middle Territory, but in the mouth of Li Qiye, they were not enough to reach the apex. She wanted to refute, but Li Qiye revealed the entire origin of their formations, so she became helpless.

“You are adept in the Phoenix Bearing Method, not in the killing ways, so you are weak in your offensive capability. Regarding this, when comparing your talents to your battle prowess, a little gap indeed exists. Since you like formations, given the chance, I will find some Grand Killing formations for you that would be more suitable to your taste.”

Li Qiye finally came up with this conclusion.

Li Shuangyan wanted to say something, but then stopped. Li Qiye glanced at her and said:

“I know you have a corner of the Immortal Emperor Slaying Formation, but listen to my words; don’t go completing it, it would be a waste of your talents! This corner of your Immortal Emperor Slaughtering Formation is pitifully incomplete. To expend your energy on this matter would be a waste of your sweat and blood. I admit that you are a genius, but if you want to use this corner of the formation to understand the true profoundness — to be blunt — you don’t have the qualification! First, expend your effort on the Dao of cultivation.”

Hearing Li Qiye’s words, Li Shuangyan couldn’t help but to ask:

“The Immortal Emperor Slaughtering Formation, is it still passed down to future generations?”

Unwittingly, she had considered the little boy in front of her as an all-knowing existence.

“Well...”

Li Qiye cheerfully smiled, dragging on his answer.

Seeing Li Qiye’s intentional teasing, Li Shuangyan snappily glared at him and said:

“Don’t act mysterious, hurry up and say it.”

Again, her tone was unwittingly a little coquettishly, unlike her normal cold as icy countenance; it was a very rare sight.

Li Qiye finally glared at her and said:

“Don’t focus your thoughts on the Immortal Emperor Slaughtering Formation. Even if you have the complete version, you don’t have the strength to understand it! As for the complete formation, in the future, there will absolutely be an opportunity.”

Here, Li Qiye quietly sighed in lamentation. The Immortal Emperor Slaughtering Formation — such a distant memory, such unbearable memories.

Seeing Li Qiye's expression, Li Shuangyan didn't dare to ask anymore. Even though she didn't know the story, she could guess that there was a hidden past that no one else knew about.

Obtaining Li Qiye's instruction, Li Shuangyan began to cultivate the Void Imperfection Physique. During this time, she finally realized what was a supreme Immortal Physique, what was an ultimate Immortal Physique! It was no wonder why Li Qiye didn't bother looking at the Pure Jade Saint Merit Law, it was not comparable to this supreme Physique!

What made Li Shuangyan emotional was that because Li Qiye taught her the mysteriousness of the Immortal Physique, if she still wasn't able to complete it, then she would be the dumbest person in this world. So, to her, completing the physique was only a matter of time! Li Shuangyan had ten parts confidence in successfully achieving the Void Imperfection Physique!

Meanwhile, after Li Qiye had cultivated for a month, he called for Nan Huai Ren:

"We will go to the Ancient Land, to see the Ancient Land's situation for a little bit."

Hearing Li Qiye's command, Nan Huai Ren immediately obeyed, and said:

"My master had been to the Ancient Land a couple of times, I will invite him to lead the way."

What was called the Ancient Land was the Ancient Land of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. In reality, the ancestral land of the current Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was only a tiny corner of its ancestral land that year.

That year, the ancestral land of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect were several hundreds of thousand miles long. After the sudden changes and on top of the declinement of the sect, it caused the ancestral land of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect today to be reduced to a few main peaks.

Li Qiye wanted to return to the Ancient Land. Even though the five elders didn't know what he wanted to do, they all agreed.

Besides Protector Mo, Nan Huai Ren and Li Shuangyan also followed him.

Chapter 89 : Cleansing Incense Ancient Land (1)

Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was founded during the early years of the Emperors Era by Min Ren. Its emperor foundation could be said to be unshakable!

During the beginning of the Emperors Era, At the moment when the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was at its most prosperous year, it encompassed the whole Grand Middle Territory, commanding the entire Mortal Emperor World. One could only imagine how powerful it used to be.

Million years had passed, and the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect finally became weak, no longer with the power to sweep through the world and rule over the Nine Worlds like before. However, the ancestral land of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect still remained.

The ancestral land of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect used to be extremely vast. Some said that at the moment it was at its biggest, it ranged around one million miles, with thousands of ancient pavilions and countless disciples not just from the Mortal Emperor World! Even Charming Spirit, Heavenly Ghost, and Stone Statues; these races favored by the heavens also joined the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.”(1)

Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect’s glory was a path with no return; in the end, Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had to let go of its vast land and hide like a turtle in a corner of its old sect.

Li Qiye's group went on their trip with Protector Mo leading the way. Because he had been to the Ancient Land multiple times, he could be regarded as a light car traveling on a familiar road.

Today there were only a few dozen main peak, and the area was only a thousand mile, incomparable to the old scale.

They left Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect on a straight road to the Ancient Land. One could see the rolling mountains and high peak like a Dragon Tiger entrenched in the middle of this grand earth.

The ancestral land of the sect used to be a beautiful scenery of mountains and rivers, just like a land of immortals. However, today, from Li Qiye's eyes, this was not the case.

Closing the distance to the Ancient Land, he only saw death: dried trees and withered forest, bare mountains and empty rivers, devoid of birds and beasts; a land of stillness.

Observing along the way, he found that there were ancient temples and high pavilions inside the mountain ranges and deep valleys. However, unfortunately, these ancient temples and high pavilions were broken into pieces, surrounded by wild grass and deathly aura.

From the delicate engravings from these broken ruins, one could imagine the prosperity of that year, the majesty of that year.

Countless undulating peaks and many ancient structures were only ruins today!

Traveling on this wretched ground, even Protector Mo gently sighed. A sadness and unwillingness to see the once invincible Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect falling into this state.

Li Qiye silently treaded on this once familiar ground that had entirely transformed in today's time. However, the declining of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was not why Li Qiye's expression greatly changed. What moved him was that he was walking on top of a grand ground, yet he could faintly feel the evil aura under the earth!

This evil aura Li Qiye had seen before inside the Ghost Pavilion. He was familiar with it, and he knew the origin of this evil energy, but he couldn't imagine how this evil energy had appeared once again.

This land used to be filled with legends. That year when Li Qiye was the Dark Crow, he was well aware; same with Immortal Emperor Min Ren. It was indeed mysterious, and it was indeed legendary; however, it also buried a frightening existence.

Building the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect on this ground, Li Qiye had his own reasons that year. In order to get rid of future complications, Li Qiye had infiltrated the deepest part of this ground. After Min Ren shouldered the Heaven's Will, Li Qiye made him personally refine and use an invincible sealing formation on the deepest part.

On principle, this evil aura shouldn't appear again. In reality, after Min Ren, when he was the Dark Crow again appearing in this world, he was keeping track of this land. After countless years and from era to era, he was still observing this land, but this situation had never happened.

But during his last deep slumber, only a short thirty thousand years, this mattered had happened and it greatly shocked Li Qiye.

“There is an ominous thing underground!”

Li Shuangyan standing next to Li Qiye couldn't help but say.

As a genius, her spirit sense was extremely sharp. Walking on top of this land, she felt that there was an aura on the ground that is causing her to become angry.

“I heard that year there was a great change, and it brought on the decline of our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.”

Protector Mo gently shook his head and sighed.

Nan Huai Ren was considered to be very informed within the sect, and he busily spoke in place of his master:

“I heard, that year we actually didn't lose the the Heavenly God Sect, if there was not such a strange event happening to us, not

mentioning one Heavenly God Sect, even ten would be easily destroyed by us.”

“The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect did faced a great calamity that year.”

Li Shuangyan changed her expression, and said:

“I’ve heard about the grand calamity happening at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, but the later generations assumed that the sect was making an excuse for their grand defeat.”

“Hmph, what excuses, I heard the elders say that if the grand calamity didn’t happen that year, what the hell is the Heavenly God Sect? The moment Immortal Emperor Ta Kong was still in this world, he wouldn’t even dare to arrogantly say that he could destroy our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.”

Nan Huan Ren coldly snorted, and his arrogance was as high as the heaven. Seeing his expression, it was almost as if he personally experienced the battle that year.

“Don’t be madly impetuous!”

Protector Mo yelled at this disciple:

“An Immortal Emperor for a generation, shouldering the Heaven’s Will, and ruling the heavens; who are you to say such careless words!”

Scolded by his master, Nan Huai Ren dejectedly lowered his neck, and he awkwardly laughed. He was a lively person; even after the scolding, he didn't pay any mind, busily saying:

“I heard the elders said the calamity that year, was a mortal blow to our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Imagine that that year, a deadly disaster suddenly happened to our sect...”

“Don't make inaccurate statements in front of young master and princess. Even Elder Gu didn't know many things regarding the disaster that year, only the bare minimal.”

Regarding his disciples running his mouth boastfully, as his master Protector Mo glared at him once. At this moment, as a protector, he was referring to Li Qiye as “young master.”

Nan Huai Ren, scolded by his master, awkwardly smiled. He finally in a serious manner:

“The unexpected event that happened that year, even the elders didn't know about it. Some said thirty thousand years ago, some said fifty thousand years. Basically fifty to thirty thousand years ago, a strange calamity happened at our sect.”

“How was it strange?”

Li Shuangyan asked. Regarding this legend, she had also heard of it. However, she was not a disciple of the Cleansing Incense

Ancient Sect, so there was a large chance her sources were false.

“This...”

This question was difficult for Protector Mo. He scratched his head for half a day without an answer. In reality, he only heard about this from the legends. The exact incident, he didn't know about. Even the elders, at their age, didn't know, let alone him.

“There was an ominous appearance and a strange occurrence at the center of the sect.”

Finally, Protector Mo gently sighed, and he said.

As for the actual details of the ominous occurrence, Protector Mo himself didn't know. The upper echelon of the sect only knew that something negative happened; however, no one knew the details because all the disciples who had personally experienced the event were no longer part of this world.

“The sealing of this ground had a problem.”

When Protector Mo and Nan Huai Ren couldn't say why, the initially quiet Li Qiye gravely said. His expression was rarely serious but it showed a hint of coldness this time.

Li Shuangyan was shocked hearing Li Qiye words. Inside her Nine Saint Demon Gate, there was an ancient writing containing the words left behind by their ancestor, the Nine Saint Virtuous

Paragon. Legends had it that Immortal Emperor Min Ren sealed this land then built the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect on it, leaving behind an unshakable emperor's foundation!

As for why Min Ren had to seal this land and what was sealed, the writing didn't mention. Future generations didn't know either.

At this moment, Li Qiye said what he said confidently; it was as if he already knew beforehand, without a doubt. Li Shuangyan was perplexed since this was such an ancient matter; additionally, there were no concrete writings about it, so how did he know?

If one could travel around the boundary of the sect that year, they would find that it was like a giant sea snail. This sea snail was extremely huge, lying on the ground and carry the entire ground of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

Today, the sect's ground was but a part of the tail of this sea snail. That year the center of the sect was located on the spine of the sea snail.

The moment they reached the center of the sect that year, they found that all the trees and plants all were withered. From these dead trees, one could see that this place was filled with ancient trees, and bright godly grasses with heavenly vines covering the skies. It was a shame that this place was now a dead ground today.

Stepping into the center area, they saw a strange scene. Outside of the center, all of the ancient temples and pavilions entirely collapsed into ruins, but the center was not like that.

As the center area of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, Immortal Emperor Min Ren used to use this place to order the whole world, accepted the worship from all the races of the Nine Worlds. Afterward, all the sect masters of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect resided here to command the heroic crowd.

At this place, it would be describe as having a forest of ancient pavilions and godly temples. However, today, they were all covered; it was as if the sky suddenly rained down mud upon them. Countless mud covered buildings that became dried through the ages.

All of the buildings here seemed to be struck in a thick layer of muddy paste, causing others to be unable to recognize their real appearance.

(TN1: Charming Spirit most likely look like elves, Heavenly Ghost maybe a more ethereal being)

Chapter 90 : Cleansing Incense Ancient Land (2)

Seeing this scene, Li Qiye stood silently on top of the land, for a long time. This was the commanding center for the sect. At this place, not only Min Ren, but he used to command the generals and soldiers from here. He brought an invincible Army from this place, and he started an expedition to conquer the nine heavens and ten earths.

In order to revive the sect, the Ancient Land has to be opened; otherwise, the sect must be relocated. Because, at the moment, the land of the sect was too small, and the Earth Vein that was moving the world's energy was too thin.

Li Qiye intended to restart with fixing the Ancient Land to rebuild the sect, but, once he witnessed the scene before his eyes, he immediately knew what the ominous event that had struck the sect was!

The thing he hoped would never occurred had happened. This caused Li Qiye to be solemn, and a bit perplexed; in the end, who was the one to open the seal?! There was no chance that it was Immortal Emperor Ta Kong because, even if Ta Kong forced open the seal, then the entire sect would no longer exist. He would have needed to destroy the Emperor's foundation, but, seeing the current situation, this was not the case.

If it was not an intruder breaking the seal, then who, in the end,

opened this seal? Thinking about this, Li Qiye quietly contemplated.

Nan Huai Ren curiously observed everything in front of him. This was his first time here, and he couldn't help but to take out his sword, trying to pierce the stone paste on an ancient pavilion. However hard he tried to chisel, he could only leave a small sword mark the size of a rice grain behind; essentially, he couldn't drill through this stone paste.

“It is useless; Elder Gu had tried doing the same thing before. It was essentially impossible to drill through. If a person with a certain cultivation was to force it, then there will be a rebounded effect.”

Protector Mo shook his head, and he said.

“What is this?”

Li Shuangyan, seeing the stone paste encompassing the buildings, couldn't help but feel strange.

“The protection of the Emperor's foundation.”

At this moment, Li Qiye spoke:

“This ground was laid with an unshakable Emperor's foundation. Once there was a calamity present, the Emperor's foundation would automatically protect itself. This, to an extent, suppressed

the evil energy under the ground from spreading. The protection is still here, and that means that the Emperor's foundation is still here as well."

Li Shuangyan was touched by the fact that, even though there was a great calamity, the Emperor's foundation was still standing. This was an Immortal Emperor lineage standing strong for millions of years, truly frightening. The hidden power of an Immortal Emperor lineage was incalculable. It seems like, if there wasn't a huge disaster that year, even if the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had truly declined, it was not an existence that could be provoked by the Heavenly God Sect!

"This will take some time."

In the end, Li Qiye said these words. The seal formation had problems, and Li Qiye knew this matter was serious. In order to revive the sect and rebuild this land, he absolutely has to infiltrate the depth of this land once again.

If this was the case, then he must have full preparation. He needs powerful generals and brave soldiers. It couldn't be rushed. Adequate arrangements must be made in order to be successful.

"There is a hole here."

At this moment, Nan Huai Ren who was looking around found something, loudly announcing it.

Li Qiye's group hurried over. The place where Nan Huai Ren was standing was a valley of low elevation. Within this valley with dead vegetations, there was a big hole dugged straight down. No one knew how deep the cave was. There was only a black as ink color down below as far as the eyes can see.

Carefully looking at the giant hole, one could see that circular lines pattern; it was as if a huge drill came down vertically in its creation. It was clear that this giant hole was not formed by a natural process.

“This giant hole wasn't dug a long time ago.”

Li Shuangyan carefully observed the giant hole, and she eventually came to this conclusion.

Li Qiye meticulously observed the hole, and he made some careful analysis. In the end he smirked, and he commanded Protector Mo:

“Protector Mo, immediately return and bring me Violet Mulberry Tree, the more the better. Also, bring me a giant pot, three bottles of vinegar, six bottles of Dove Dark Water, and Green Perfect Bones...”

Li Qiye listed a myriad of medicines, and, even though Protector Mo didn't know what Li Qiye wanted to do, he still remembered each. After Li Qiye finished his instruction, Protector Mo immediately flew away, without the slightest doubts.

Once reaching the Heaven's Primal realm, cultivators could fly without relying on any treasures.

“Oldest Brother, what are you trying to do?”

Seeing Li Qiye's wanting so many items, Nan Huai Ren curiously asked.

Li Shuangyan was also puzzled. Li Qiye's list of items, many of them she had never heard of before.

Li Qiye let off a smile, and he said:

“I want to smoke a rat out of hiding.”

Finished answering, he simply sat down, and he got cozy, eagerly awaiting for Protector Mo's return.

Protector Mo didn't dare to linger around, and he immediately came back after one day.

“Set up the fire.”

After his return, he brought the large amount of Violet Mulberry Tree to Li Qiye; the pieces of wood were all dried wood. They immediately placed the dried wood in front of the giant hole, and they started a fire.

In a flash, the billowing smoke immediately infiltrated the cave. These smokes carried along with them a particular smell; it was a scent that was hard to describe by people.

The billowing smoke continuously circled into the cave. After a while, there was finally some movement. A thunderous noise appeared that shook the earth, it was as if there was a giant Earth Bull turning over in his grave!

“Boom!”

After a loud explosion, a humongous monster rushed out from the cave. Another “Boom” exploded; this humongous monster created a huge crater on the ground when he fell down.

“Who dared to disturb my sleep with this unpleasant smell?!”

An ancient roar thundered, angered by being smoked out with this particular scent.

Seeing this humongous monster stomping on the ground, the group of Nan Huai Ren was dumbfounded. This humongous monster was not a particularly dreadful beast, but it was a giant snail, a snail knowing how to speak.

Seeing this humongous snail, only Li Qiye maintained his composure. At this moment, Li Qiye stood up, observed this humongous snail, and he calmly said:

“Not too bad. To be able to achieve Six Solutions; for your tribe, this is truly not an easy task.”

These words of Li Qiye greatly surprised the snail. Its two big eyes on its tentacles gazed at Li Qiye. The ancient noise resounded again, like the strike of thunder:

“Little brat, who are you? To be able to know the Six Solutions interpretation?!”

“Who I am, is irrelevant; however, what’s important is your appearance at this place!”

Li Qiye calmly stared at the giant snail, and he said:

“As for your comment regarding the Six Solutions, it is not a big deal; even the Eighteen Solutions, I can still theorize.”

“Good little brat! Speaking nonsensical rubbish!! There is no one in the world that knows the Eighteen Solutions.”

The giant snail shouted:

“No, that is not right! If there is indeed an Eighteen Solutions, then there is exactly one person that knows.”

Here, the giant snail gazed intensely at Li Qiye, and his eyes triumphantly said:

“Not right, not right! Outside of that existence, there is no one else in this world that knows the Eighteen Solutions. You are simply a little human brat; it would be a miracle if you know the Eighteen Solutions.”

“The yellow peril lasting for ages, the ancient cauldron shining as deeply as the night’s blue ocean, the divine scholar tree exists in the mulberry field, the Golden Crow coming and leaving...”

(TN1: These were all four words phrases, interpreting their meanings is quite difficult since they’re meant to be abrupt and contextual which I am without. This is only 80% accurate at best, but the Golden Crow refers to Li Qiye I am sure)

At this moment, Li Qiye opened with a profound incantation that Li Shuangyan’s group essentially couldn’t understand.

Hearing Li Qiye’s phrase, the snail was shock in amazement. Its two eyes opened wide glaring at Li Qiye. In a blink of an eye, from under the snail’s shell came a fat and gigantic hand, suddenly grabbing Li Qiye.

In just a split second, Li Qiye was gripped by the hand and moved into the sky, causing Protector Mo and Li Shuangyan to be aghast. They wanted to take action, but Li Qiye waved his sleeve signaling for them to calm down.

“You, how do you know this profound incantation?!”

The snail’s huge eyes gazed at Li Qiye in astonishment.

“It was only the first part of the Seven Solutions incantation, nothing extraordinary; I could even say the Eighteen Solutions incantation.”

Li Qiye smiled, and he calmly said.

“Speak, hurry and tell me the Eighteen Solutions incantations!”

The giant snail became impatient, and he couldn’t wait any longer. His ancient voice yelled out.

“The Eighteen Solutions is the thing that your tribe has always been searching for. For me to simply speak, it definitely won’t be so easy. Following me, and then I can think about it a little bit.”

Li Qiye still calmly spoke.

“Ignorant brat, you dare to negotiate conditions with this old man?!”

The giant snail’s temper snapped, and he roared:

“Wait until I rip apart your sea of knowledge, and extract your memories; let see if you can still hide anything!”

Finished speaking, one tentacle turned into a strand of universal law, and it immediately pierced the forehead of Li Qiye, directly

searching Li Qiye's sea of knowledge.

“Not good...”

Seeing this scene, Li Shuangyan's expression soured, knowing that the situation was not favorable.

“Boom!”

However, in a split second, the entire heaven and earth seemed to have exploded. The forehead of Li Qiye suddenly unleashed an immortal strand of light! Followed by a huge explosion, the giant snail was blown away into another corner of the world!

At this moment, Li Qiye was like a grand enraged Immortal Emperor, and the immortal light from his forehead directly suppressed Nan Huai Ren and his master to the ground, even Li Shuangyan wasn't able to stand steadily.

Li Qiye drifted on top of the ground, and the immortal light from his forehead started to disappeared. Even so, the moment this light exploded, Li Qiye was like an angry Immortal Emperor; all existences under the nine heavens and ten earths had to prostrate under this immortal light!

Chapter 91 : A Snail (1)

It was a struggle for the fallen Nan Huai Ren and his master to stand up. When Li Shuangyan stood up firmly, her face was also deadly pale. The immortal explosion earlier was truly frightening. Under this light, no matter whether it was a Royal Noble, an Enlightened Being, an Ancient Saint, or Heavenly King, they were merely ants and insects!

(TN1: reminder on cultivation rankings: 11 = Royal Noble, 12 = Enlightened Being, 13= Ancient Saint, 15 = Heavenly King, 16 = Virtuous Paragon, 17 = Immortal Emperor)

At this time, Nan Huai Ren and his master were in awe, watching Li Qiye. They finally understood at this moment that Li Qiye was a terrible existence way beyond their imaginations.

“You dare to look at my sea of knowledge and search through my memories? This thing can’t tell life from death!”

Li Qiye’s expression was as cold as water. Even though his body no longer possessed the raging Immortal Emperor’s aura, at this moment, he still caused others to shiver without being cold; it was as if he was a grand Immortal Emperor unable to be challenged.

The giant snail’s origin was heaven shattering, but, unfortunately, he absolutely shouldn’t have try to look into Li Qiye’s sea of knowledge!

Since the Desolate Era long ago, Li Qiye fell into the Heaven

Demon Grotto, and his soul was sucked out to be refined into the Dark Crow. Afterward, he involuntarily had to be summoned back to the Heaven Demon Grotto, and his memories were read by the existence inside.

It was not until much later that Li Qiye had sufficient capacity to calculate the whole world, gained the help of countless immortal sages to plan against the Heaven Demon Grotto, and escaped the mind reading.

From then on, Li Qiye's most dreaded fear was his sea of knowledge being opened by other people, having his memories read. After he gained the power, and he was able to cultivate Immortal Emperors, he once again reinforced his soul, sea of knowledge, and memories.

It can be said that his soul, True Fate, sea of knowledge, and memories were reinforced by Immortal Emperors. Not only Immortal Emperor Min Ren, but also Immortal Emperor Xue Xi, Immortal Emperor Tun Ri, Immortal Emperor Ba Mie, and even the Black Dragon King all reinforced his memories.

(TN2: All Chinese names have their own meanings, and I think it is cool to know: Min Ren = Bright Benevolence, Xue Xi = Mark of Blood, Tun Ri = Swallowing the Time, Ba Mie = Dominating Extermination – as one can see, Min Ren is probably Li Qiye's nicest disciple, the others don't sound so nice)

If anyone touched his sea of knowledge or his memories, it was equivalent to touching the reinforcements laid down by Immortal Emperors! They would absolutely will be suppressed by the immortal reinforcement! What this means was that outside of him,

no one else could read his sea of knowledge or memories, not even Immortal Emperors!

This was the result of him floating through millions of years, and the fruit of hard effort throughout the eras; he was able to defend against the one matter that he feared the most!

Today, this unknowing snail dared to use a godly method to read the memories of Li Qiye, this was without a doubt finding his own death!

“Drag him back here.”

Finally, Li Qiye commanded.

Protector Mo and his disciple busily followed the order and left. After half a day, with loud thunderous sounds, they finally dragged the giant snail back; it was as if they were dragging a small mountain.

The giant snail dragged in front of Li Qiye was motionless.

“Oldest brother, is he already dead?”

Nan Huai Ren dragged him here, and he asked.

“I’m only temporarily sparing his life, depending on his performance.”

Li Qiye commanded:

“Take out the pot and the medicines, cook him.”

Protector Mo and his disciple immediately took out the huge pot from his magical storage, and they threw in with all the medicinal herbs inside, putting in the giant snail as well.

It didn't take a long time before the water in the pot boiled, and all the medicines became a medicinal concoction.

At this moment, the giant snail finally came to slowly. Even though he woke up, he couldn't move because of the Immortal Emperor's suppression! At this moment, he was the meat on the chopping block, leaving Li Qiye to do whatever he wanted!

“You, who are you?”

Submerged in the pot, he struggled to have his tentacles reach outside of the water. He opened his huge eyes to look at Li Qiye. His eyes were filled with horror. This person's memories were protected by Immortal Emperors; who was he in the end?

Seeing the fourteen year old boy in front of him, this matter was simply impossible to understand. The last Immortal Emperor's era was thirty thousand years ago, so, logically, this boy in front of him essentially couldn't meet an Immortal Emperor.

However, this boy in front had not only met an Immortal Emperor, but the protection inside his sea of knowledge suppressed him in just a flash. This impression left a heavy mark on him, unerasable. Under this absolute power, the fear in the deepest part of his soul realized that it could only be from an Immortal Emperor!

“Who I am is no longer important. You have encroached upon my most important taboo.”

At this moment, Li Qiye’s expression was much better, and he slowly spoke.

Unknowingly, the moment Li Qiye’s expression became normal, the other three sighed a huge breath of relief. When Li Qiye was enraged, they felt a heavy boulder taking away their breath like a furious Immortal Emperor, instilling fear into their souls!

“You... What are you doing...?”

At this time, the giant snail knew that trouble was coming, and he asked with all color lost.

Li Qiye leisurely said:

“What else is there but cooking you in the pot? You tell me what else am I doing? Cooking your Longevity Blood, and, at the same time, cooking a nice snail soup to to ease us in this hot sun. They have never tasted tried this kind of dish, before; maybe after they

try it, they'll never be able to forget it.”

“This, this is absolutely impossible, my, my body isn't something that a mortal flame could refine! Or be boiled by ordinary water!”

The giant snail yelled out.

Li Qiye smiled, and he said:

“Someone else would try that, but, as for me, ah, I would never attempt this. If I know your origin, then I can immediately deal with you. Do you know what the water boiling you is made out of? This is definitely a recipe to cook a snail soup; it is not only delicious, but it is also extremely nutritious!”

Hearing these words, the snail couldn't help but taste the medicinal concoction inside the pot. Tasting this, he was immediately frightened. These medicinal herbs, once combined, would definitely remove his body's protection!

At this moment, Li Qiye jumped onto the pot, he took out the Invisible Dual Blades, and he slowly said:

“You should know that taking the blood of your tribe is an art. I'm aware that your body is like a treasure impervious to weapons and Life Treasure; however, after being boiled in such a concoction, you should be clear of the consequence!”

Finished speaking, he unleashed a blade as fast as lightning.

In a blink of an eye, Li Qiye left many blade shaped cuts on the giant snail's body. Marks and marks intertwined together, creating a mysterious pattern. This pattern seemed like it was just a formation; however, it was also a sermon of the heavens that was even a profound Dao that collapses the defense of the giant snail!

At this time, inside the many lines left behind by the blades, blood slowly seeped out. These drops of blood were extremely beautiful; they were like priceless jewels. They dripped down into the pot and mixed together with the medicinal concoction, emitting waves and waves of charming medicinal fragrances that caused others to drool and swallow their saliva.

“Longevity Blood...”

Seeing the drops of blood dripping down, Protector Mo was quite moved. To cultivators, Longevity Blood was extremely precious. There was a saying that one drop of blood was equal to ten thousand drops of worldly essence.

This method of Li Qiye caused the giant snail to be scared out of his soul. It belonged to a mysterious creation, not part of the Demon race, Heavenly Beast, nor the Longevity Spirit. Its origin was heavenly shaking, and it was extremely rare in this world.

They have a body that could be said to be impenetrable, but, today, Li Qiye knew how to open their defenses; he also knew the method of obtaining their Longevity Blood. He knew that he had met his nemesis today!

Feeling the loss of his Longevity Blood, the giant snail felt his soul being sucked out, and his True Fate becoming weaker and weaker. If this continued, he would truly be boiled into a pot of snail soup.

“You, what do you want? You, you say you want to say!”

Finally, the heart of the giant snail shivered, and he yelled out loud. If he kept on acting strong, then he would truly become a boiled snail soup!

Li Qiye took a while before he slowly glared at him, finally speaking:

“How about this? I just happen to be lacking a mount, so you can be by my side.”

Li Qiye’s words caused the group of Nan Huai Ren standing at the side to be silent. A grand character, always picked a mount with a nice external appearance. Not mentioning True Dragons or Phoenixes, these types of supreme existences; however, even a dragon horse was cooler than this giant snail in front of them.

The giant snail contemplated over Li Qiye’s words. Even though their tribe’s numbers were few, they have a proud history. Not to mention, its cultivation was absolutely powerful. Becoming a mount for a human, this would be unbearable to him.

Li Qiye glared at the silent giant snail, and he said:

“Don’t be prideful just because of your three parts bloodline. Even if the patriarch of your first tribe was still alive, seeing me, he could only call himself a junior!”

Li Qiye’s words shocked the snail, and its huge eyes looked at Li Qiye, and asked:

“You, who are you really!?”

“Who I am is not important; either you follow me, or I will boil you into soup.”

Li Qiye happily said:

“In the future, if you diligently work hard with loyalty, I will pass down the Twelve Solutions to you!”

This phrase from Li Qiye caused the snail to be ecstatic. He wasn’t willing to become a mount for Li Qiye, and he would even prefer being boiled into a meat soup; however, when it came to the Twelve Solutions, this was a completely different matter.

He was aware that since the beginning of time until now, only one existence knew the Twelve Solutions, but Li Qiye clearly was not this existence!

(TN3: I think the author made a mistake here, it should be the

Eighteen Solutions, not the Twelve. Unless 12-18 were all unknown by their tribe)

“Good, I promise you!”

Finally, the giant snail surrendered, and he made a choice.

“Use your True Fate to make the oath.”

Li Qiye was without any surprise, and he said.

In the end, the giant snail swore with his True Fate. This scene caused Nan Huai Ren and his master to be touched. A True Fate oath to cultivators was an extremely serious matter. Once the oath was made, one absolutely had to comply with the oath. If violated, they would be subjected to the backlash.

Of course, a True Fate oath has to be willing by both parties.

After making the vow, Li Qiye let Nan Huai Ren and Protector Mo drag him out of the iron pot.

Chapter 92 : A Snail (2)

At this time, Li Qiye placed his hand on top of the snail's gigantic body, and a bright light flew out from the snail, disappearing into the middle of Li Qiye's eyebrows.

After this bright light came out of his body, the giant snail's entire body shook; he could finally stand up slowly.

“A pot of extremely nutritious medicine is cooked.”

Li Qiye said:

“Since you are following me now, I will allow you to drink it.”

Hearing this, the giant snail didn't know whether to laugh or cry. This one pot, was made from his own Longevity Blood, ah!

“So? Don't want to drink? If you don't want to drink, the two of them will drink it all!”

Li Qiye pointed at Nan Huai Ren and his master, and he said.

“Drink, drink, why would I not drink?”

The giant snail was actually afraid that the master and disciple would compete with him, and he rushed into the giant pot to drink

gulp by gulp. The medicinal pot was made from his own Longevity Blood; if he didn't drink it, then his loss would be even higher. His wounds would require a longer time to recover, too.

Finally ,the giant snail finished the whole medicinal pot, and he took a deep breath. He just took a trip from hell and back.

Here, Li Qiye commanded the giant snail, saying.

“Withdraw your body.”

The giant snail crushed his incantations, and he quickly transformed. A thin old man with dried flesh appeared in front of them. There were two tiny pair of flesh on his forehead, and, at the same time, there was also a small shell behind him like a shield.

“Yikes, this is, this is your true body?”

Nan Huai Ren was a little dazed. The old man in front versus his initial form was too contrasting. The snail was like a small mountain, but this thin and dried old man in front of them looked like a breeze could fell him in one pass.

“No, this is the second body.”

The old man shook his head, and he smiled:

“Earlier was the real body.”

“This old man is Niu Fen; earlier I was blinded by greed, and my eyes were obscured by a single leaf, offending this young noble.”

(TN1: Young noble here is gong zi – think of it as a young master/young sir but commands more respects and imply the person to have some talents/skills. In the wuxia world, anyone called gong zi, you know they will be a bad ass/handsome)

“Hic... Niu(Bull) Fen(Shit)...”

Hearing his words, Nan Huai Ren rolled his eyes wide opened, and he asked:

“There, there is such a name like this?”

The old man gazed at Nan Huai Ren, and he somewhat embarrassingly said:

“It is Niu Fen(effort), Fen as in to put in effort!”

(TN2: A Chinese snail is Gua + Niu = Snail. Niu alone = Bull(ox). His name is Niu(Bull) + Fen(effort) but Nan Huai Ren thought it was Niu(Bull) Fen(Shit). Both Fen might be identical in sound)

“My misunderstanding, my misunderstanding!”

Nan Huai Ren was embarrassed; he forced a smile while he busily apologized.

Even Li Shuangyan, standing to the side, wanted to laugh, but she couldn't under the circumstances; she decided to hide her amusement in her heart.

Without the giant body, from earlier, the current Niu Fen, who was thin and wizened, gave Nan Huai Ren a warm feeling, causing him to be much more friendly.

To Niu Fen, he was asked:

“Grandpa Niu, you are digging a hole at the Ancient Land of our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; what are you trying to find? Don't tell me you want to find the treasures of our sect.”

“I am just digging casually. Also this place has been visited by countless people. If there was really a treasure, it wouldn't be my turn.”

Niu Fen angrily glared at Nan Huai Ren.

“If grandpa Niu isn't here to dig treasure, then why did you dig such a deep hole?”

Nan Huai Ren didn't give up, continuing to question him.

Li Qiye glanced at Niu Fen, and said:

“He is looking for the God of Calamity.”

“God of Calamity? What is the God of Calamity?”

Nan Huai Ren was at a loss; he stared at Li Qiye, and then he looked at Niu Fen.

Protector Mo’s expression was shaken; he stared at Niu Fen, and he said with surprise:

“He is trying to find the Heavenly Protector of our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!”

Hearing these two words “Heavenly Protector”, Nan Huai Ren was also surprised, exclaiming:

“In the legend, it is the strongest existence in our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect! With the exception of the Patriarch, no one was able to win a match against the Heavenly Protector!”

Niu Fen had to admit the the truth:

“I was simply looking; I heard your Heavenly Protector had left way earlier. I only wanted to go through this land to see if the great elder had left words behind; perhaps I could have stumbled upon something profound.”

“If the Heavenly Protector was still here, then our Cleansing

Incense Ancient Sect wouldn't be like it is today.”

Nan Huai Ren had heard about the Heavenly Protector before, and he couldn't help but murmur.

There were many legends about the Heavenly Protector of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

Heavenly Protector, not all sects have them. Only the extremely powerful sects or fateful sects were able to have Heavenly Protectors.

As for the origin of the Heavenly Protectors, there was essentially no limitation. It could be a Heavenly Beast, a Longevity Spirit, or maybe even other existences! Under many circumstances, the Heavenly Protectors exist alongside their sects; after the sect was destroyed, the Heavenly Protectors could leave.

The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had a Heavenly Protector once; this protector was called the God of Calamity! This Heavenly Protector was extremely strong. So strong that future generations believed that even during the era of Min Ren, outside of Min Ren, no one could oppose this Heavenly Protector! Later on, when the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was able to stand strong, to an extent, it was due to this existence.

Regarding the origin of the protector, there were many different legends. One stated that the protector came from Burial Ground. Another believed that the protector was born in the Ancient Earth. Some believed that it was subdued by Immortal Emperor Min Ren

from an external space.

(TN3: Ancient Earth and Burial Ground are some forbidden locations in this world. We might see them in the future – these are the places that the Dark Crow went to)

The Heavenly Protector guarded the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect eras after eras, but, one day, it suddenly left for reasons unknown. Afterwards, it completely disappeared without a trace, and no one had ever seen it again.

Many people assumed that it disappeared fifty thousand years ago. Even more people thought that it left much earlier,; however, they could only guess since the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect simply withheld the information from others.

As for why it suddenly left, after protecting the sect for so long, no one knew why, including the disciples of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect during that period! It became a mystery without an answer.

“Young master, where are we going now? Are we returning back?”

At this moment, Protector Mo asked Li Qiye.

“No, you guys will bury me under ground now.”

“Bury? Bury under??”

Hearing Li Qiye's words, Nan Huai Ren was stupefied. After recovering, he said:

“Oldest brother, this, this is an ominous sign, ah.”

“Bury me now.”

Li Qiye didn't want to waste words, and he commanded Protector Mo.

Finally, Li Qiye chose the location, and he was buried under the highest peak of the Ancient Land, very deep underneath, on top of this. Niu Fen had to personally dig a hole for Li Qiye before being able to place him down.

“Is Oldest Brother okay?”

Li Qiye suddenly wanted to bury himself; this greatly shocked Nan Huai Ren. If his Oldest Brother was not completely normal at the moment, he would have thought that Li Qiye might have become crazy.

“It is all right.”

Li Shuangyan shook her head, and she didn't say anything else. Even though she didn't know why Li Qiye wanted to bury himself, she knew there must be reasons for his actions.

“It is only a kind of ritual.”

Niu Fen carefully observed Li Qiye’s chosen location, the method of the burial, and he finally said:

“This is an extremely rare ritual that can be considered a method of communication.”

“Communication? With what? What kind of existence is he trying to communicate with by burying himself so deep?”

Nan Huai Ren couldn’t help his curiosity, so he asked.

Regarding Nan Huai Ren’s inquisition, Niu Ren didn’t give an answer. He didn’t know what Li Qiye was trying to communicate with, but he felt that this matter was extremely important!

Li Qiye was buried underneath the earth for five days and five nights. Finally, he personally crawled up from the ground.

“We shall go back.”

In the end, crawling up from the mud, he only said this sentence and nothing else.

Nan Huai Ren’s heart was simmering with curiosity, and he really wanted to ask; however, seeing the disappointment on Li Qiye’s face, he didn’t dare to. If Li Qiye didn’t want to say it, it

would be of no avail no matter who asked.

Eventually, Niu Fen used his true body to carry the group of Li Qiye back. When he shifted back to his true body, his crawling speed made Nan Huai Ren's jaw drop to the floor. It could be compared with lightning! He was incredibly fast, and many flying treasures wouldn't be able to keep up with this speed.

What was more amazing was that he could crawl in complete silence or extremely thunderous; it was completely under his control, and no matter the style he chose, the speed remained the same.

Sitting on the snail's back, Nan Huai Ren was completely stunned. In fact, even his master was astonished as well. This was their first time riding a snail, and it was also the fastest snail.

“Grandpa Niu, what is a Heavenly Ancestral Snail?”

Thinking about Li Qiye, Nan Huai Ren curiously asked. This name, he had never heard of it before. Heavenly Ancestral Snail was name very foreign to him.

“A very rare and ancient existence that, after they became their own tribe, people in this world would rarely see.”

Niu Fen didn't get a chance to answer before Li Qiye started speaking.

Seeing Li Qiye's mood improving, Nan Huai Ren became emboldened, and he smiled:

“Oldest Brother, the Eighteen Solutions you spoke of, what is it?”

Li Qiye only glanced at him, and he didn't say anything.

“It is the True Fate Solution of our Heavenly Ancestral Calamity.”

(TN4: Snail is half replaced by the word Calamity here)

Niu Fen answered. He yearned for Li Qiye to speak of the Eighteen Solutions because it was very important to him.

“True Fate Solution? This is a technique? Or is it an Emperor Merit Law?”

Nan Huai Ren continued.

Niu Fen quickly shook his head, and said:

“No, it is not a technique, and not a profound truth. In some sense, it was the true solution to break the cursed shackles of our Heavenly Ancestral Calamity.”

“Shackles? Eighteen chains of shackles? Once freed from the eighteen shackles, what would happen?”

Nan Huai Ren continuously asked many questions.

Niu Fen contemplated for a moment, and finally said:

“I don’t know myself because I have never heard of another kin member being able to learn the Eighteen Solutions. I only heard of some legends that once obtained the Eighteen Solutions; if there are Gods in the heavens, then we would be able to slay Gods!”

Hearing this, not only Nan Huai Ren, but Li Shuangyan was also shocked; slaying Gods?! What kind of shocking words were these? Finally, they understood why Niu Fen was willing to be a servant.

As for Li Qiye, he simply smiled. The Eighteen Solutions was a distant memory for him. It was not a technique or a secret method; this is why this part of his memories has not been erased!

Chapter 93: Master Is A Beautiful Woman (1)

The moment Li Qiye and the others returned to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, Elder Sun was already eagerly waiting outside. Seeing Li Qiye's group riding on a giant snail, Elder Sun was stunned; this snail was so fast, that it was illogical.

However, Elder Sun wasn't in the mood to talk about this. He looked at Li Qiye, and he hurriedly said:

“Thank heaven and earth that you all are finally back.”

He then busily brought Li Qiye down from the giant snail.

“You need to go to the ancestral chamber fast; there might be a fight.”

Elder Sun anxiously told Li Qiye.

Seeing his worried look, Li Qiye asked:

“Enemies from outside? Or is it that the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom has finally arrived at our door?”

Seeing Li Qiye's slow and calm words, Elder Sun couldn't do

anything else but explain:

“No, the sect master is back, inside the ancestral chamber. Elder Gu’s group is quarrelling with the sect master! You should still hurry go and see!”

“Sect master...”

Elder Sun’s answer was outside of Li Qiye’s expectation. Regarding sect master Su Yong Huang, Li Qiye didn’t have half an impression. One could even said that, regarding this master that he got by chance, he never really paid attention to, or asked about, her.

Su Yong Huang’s current return surprised Li Qiye. He calmly said:

“Good, I should meet this master afterall.”

Finished speaking, he went inside.

Niu Fen turned his body back into his second form, and he became the old man’s again, walking alongside Li Qiye. Seeing a giant snail turning into an old man, Elder Sun couldn’t help but become lost in a daze; however, at this moment, he also didn’t have time to ask about this matter.

This time, inside the ancestral chamber, the elders almost flipped the table. Elders, as the highest power in charge of the current

Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, should be maintaining their composure, but, at this moment, Elder Zhou and his group were all glaring with their eyes wide opened. The object of their gazes was the current sect master Su Yong Huang of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

Only Elder Gu's attitude was good. He simply sat in his place, and he didn't speak a single word.

Su Yong Huang, as the sect master, in fact, was not welcome by the upper echelon. The reason was simple, Su Yong Huang didn't have any credentials or experience inside the sect. One could even say that she was not a disciple of the sect.

Su Yong Huang's sudden appearance and becoming the sect master was an extremely sudden matter. The entire sect was not prepared for it, or even knew about such a character.

Her ability to become the sect master was because the previous sect master was still alive. At that time, there were two or three Supreme Elders who were still alive. There was even one Supreme Elder who had lived for a very long time that was rumored to be part of the fight thirty thousand years ago; he was in isolated cultivation due to his mortal wound.

The specific circumstances of this matter, no one was very clear outside of the First Elder Gu Tie Shou. Anyway, Su Yong Huang was declared to be the next sect master by the previous one. This decision was supported by all the Supreme Elders. The oldest Supreme Elder even summoned Gu Tie Shou, and he personally persuaded him.

To sum it up, after one night, Gu Tie Shou agreed with Su Yong Huang taking the seat of sect master. In reality, at that time the entire sect was in an uproar. This matter was too great; a person who no one knew suddenly became the new sect master. This matter was truly hard for the sect to accept.

At that time, Gu Tie Shou loudly persuaded the group of Elder Zhou, and he suppressed the majority of the disciples who were strongly opposing Su Yong Huang, the matter was settled.

However, Su Yong Huang herself seemed to know her situation. As the sect master, she didn't stay behind in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. She instead brought along a small group of disciples, including a few sectional leaders. Afterwards, Su Yong Huang was the sect master in the outskirts of the sect, and she essentially didn't interfere with the internal affairs; however, she still kept in contact with the sect.

Fortunately, with this decision, the sect finally calmed down. The six elders became the main deciders of any big decisions of the sect from then on.

It could be said that, when Su Yong Huang was the sect master, First Elder Gu Tie Shou was the grand contributor to the sect. Before her appearance, Gu Tie Shou was the first to inherit the seat as he was the most qualified for the appointment.

Gu Tie Shou was the direct disciple of the last sect master, and he was also the most experienced within the first generation disciple

who had been in the sect for the longest. Not only this, he was also diligent and dedicated to the entire sect.

If at that time Gu Tie Shou didn't persuade Elder Zhou's group, no one else would have been able to convince the rest of the upper echelon.

Because Gu Tie Shou was willing to give up his position, as well as personally take charge of the matter, Su Yong Huang was able to become the sect master.

That very same Su Yong Huang who was always outside decided to come back today. Su Yong Huang had never come back to the sect with the exception of when the previous sect master passed away.

Her reason for returning this time was because of the Evil Infested Ridge. She wanted to take some disciples into the Evil Infested Ridge. This was immediately subjected to opposition from the Elder Zhou's group.

Currently, in the eyes of the sect's upper echelon, such as Elder Zhou, Li Qiye was the leader for the sect's revitalization. He was the driver of the sect. Su Yong Huang's return naturally was opposed by the upper echelon. Plus, they didn't trust her. How could they hand over the disciples to her?

Because of this, the two sides almost flipped the table on each other. Frankly speaking, the group of Elder Zhou didn't agree for Su Yong Huang to take charge of the sect no matter what.

“Good, it is good now. Li Qiye is back. Everyone can slowly talk.”

After bringing Li Qiye inside, Elder Sun hurriedly told everyone in there.

Seeing Li Qiye's return, the group of Elder Zhou finally breathed a sigh of relief, and the atmosphere inside the ancestral chamber clearly eased up.

“Big brother, this is our master, and our sect master.”

At this time, Tu Bu Yu who was standing behind Su Yong Huang smiled, and he kindly said.

Regarding the address of “sect master”, the Elder Zhou's group was irritated, and they let out a scowl.

Li Qiye observed Su Yong Huang, and he was not without astonishment! Su Yong Huang in front was a woman, and a very young woman on top of that!

The woman ahead, was around twenty, possessed a charming and noble presence; she was wearing a faintly yellow robe, causing her nobility to be even more apparent. The woman in front of his eyes, her forehead was like the moon; eyes like the stars. Her most attractive feature was her elegant brows; they were like swords, causing her elegant charm to have three parts domineering presence; it was as if she was the heaven's royal daughter,

possessing a matchless imperial air along with unmatched grace.

Comparing beauty, Li Shuangyan next to Li Qiye was not less than the woman ahead; however, Li Shuangyan didn't have the matchless imperial atmosphere along with this unmatched grace.

When Li Qiye was looking at her, Su Yong Huang was also checking him out. The master and disciple were analyzing each other.

Li Qiye's wits returned, and he glanced at Nan Huai Ren next to him, saying:

“You never told me that the sect master was a woman.”

“Well...”

Nan Huai Ren was stunned for a moment, and forcefully smiled, whispering:

“Brother didn't ask, ah! I thought you already knew.” [1](#)

Li Qiye was a bit speechless. Until now, he thought Su Yong Huan was a man. Tu Bu Yu, as his disciple, was more than one thousand years old, so his master Su Yong Huang should also be an old man with gray hair, around six or seven thousand years old. However, Li Qiye didn't expect that Su Yong Huang was a woman around the age of twenty five, possessing extreme beauty.

At this moment, Gu Tie Shou wanted to smooth things over, so he said.

“Qi Ye, the sect master wants to bring disciples to the Evil Infested Ridge.”

Su Yong Huang looked at Li Qiye, and then she said:

“The Evil Infested Ridge, to our current Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, is the best place for training; it is also the time where we harvest. From my calculation, it is half a year away at most, and the soonest is around three months; at that time, the Evil Infested Ridge will open. This is a one and only chance opportunity in a hundred years, and our sect cannot afford to let it go.”

“I’m clear on this, sixty three days later, the Evil Infested Ridge will definitely open.”

Li Qiye gently nodded his head, and he said. The moment when he was buried underground, he also found out when the ridge would open.

“Then what is your opinion?”

At this moment, Gu Tie Shou asked Li Qiye.

At this moment, all the elders were looking at Li Qiye. In their hearts, Elder Zhou’s group wanted Li Qiye to become the sect master of the sect.

“May I have a little talk with the sect master?”

Finally, Li Qiye said to the group of Gu Tie Shou.

Gu Tie Shou and others looked at each other, and, in the end, they all agreed with Li Qiye’s request.

Li Qiye returned to the Lonely Peak, and Li Shuangyan and others all took their leave. Inside the small courtyard, only Li Qiye and Su Yong Huang, as well as Tu Bu Yu, who was standing behind Su Yong Huang, were present.

Li Qiye stared at Su Yong Huang, and he was silent for a long time. Certain memories came back to him. After a while, Li Qiye finally said:

“Is Heaven’s Edge Su Clan doing alright?” [2](#)

Li Qiye words greatly changed Su Yong Huang’s expression, and even Tu Bu Yu was shocked. Su Yong Huang looked at him, and she emotionally said:

“How do you know about Heaven’s Edge?! The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, outside of Grandpa Tu, no one else knew about the Heaven’s Edge Su Clan!”

Li Qiye’s opening his mouth immediately spoke of her origin.

How could Su Yong Huang not be surprised? The Heaven's Edge Su Clan's name never appeared in this world, and no one knew about it in the Nine Worlds.

“The Patriarch simply told me in my dream.”

Li Qiye finally calmed his emotions, nonchalantly smiled, and he said.

[1](#) (TN1: We know she is a girl from the narrative but Li Qiye never did)

[2](#) (TN2: Heaven's Edge means the other end of the world / a faraway place in this usage)

Chapter 94: Master Is A Beautiful Woman (2)

Su Yong Huang suspiciously observed Li Qiye since she also didn't believe in Li Qiye's words.

“I know why the previous sect master and the Supreme Elders chose you to be the sect master.”

Li Qiye slowly continued:

“Being a descendant of Immortal Emperor Min Ren, of course you have the qualification to be the sect master of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.”

“How do you know about this matter!”

Su Yong Huang's expression greatly changed. Heaven's Edge Su Clan was what they called themselves, but the world definitely did not know that the Heaven's Edge Su Clan was made up of the descendants of Immortal Emperor Min Ren!

“The Patriarch told me in my dreams.”

Li Qiye smilingly said.

Su Yong Huang shook her head since she naturally didn't believe in this type of explanation. However, if the Patriarch didn't tell him in his dream, how would a fourteen year old boy know about this matter?

“Heaven's Edge Su Clan.”

In the end, Li Qiye was unable to hold back his lamenting sigh, remembering the distant memory. Even though he always knew that the Heaven's Edge Su Clan was growing strong, after that year, he never went to visit it.

Heaven's Edge Su Clan... Even when he was the Dark Crow, he didn't want to speak too much about it. This matter almost made Immortal Emperor Min Ren turned against him.

Immortal Emperor Min Ren, was a little brat with nothing at first, and then he finally shouldered the Heaven's Will, becoming an Immortal Emperor. This was not an easy task, and, outside of his own efforts, it was also due to Li Qiye leading the road, with the help of many brothers and friends.

That year, there was a female general who had followed Immortal Emperor Min Ren for a long time. It could even be said that, before he became Immortal Emperor, the places that he had tread on, her footsteps were also present.

This woman could be said to come from a famous clan. At that time, Li Qiye, as the Dark Crow, noticed her talents, and he expended much blood and efforts in order to bring this woman to

be by Min Ren's side.

The effort of Li Qiye was not wasted. This woman by Min Ren's side was like a gentle wife, always helping Immortal Min Ren. With her talents, she recruited many geniuses to Min Ren's side. His heavenly declaration to the world, when he became Immortal Emperor, was also written by her.

From Li Qiye's perspective, she was the most suitable candidate to become the Empress. Plus, for many hundred years, she was always meticulously standing by Min Ren's side. His becoming Immortal Emperor was marked by her unerasable presence and effort. What was even more valuable was that she had always loved Immortal Emperor Min Ren.

This was why, as the mentor of Immortal Emperor Min Ren, Li Qiye had always hope that Min Ren would marry her, declaring her to be Empress.

However, what almost killed Li Qiye was that Min Ren fell in love with a different woman. Regarding this girl, Li Qiye once held this criticism:

“Pure to the point of stupidity!”

This was not the most staggering part. For an Immortal Emperor, three wives and four concubines were not anything. Li Qiye could have allow for Immortal Emperor Min Ren to marry many virtuous wives!

The most murderous part was that this simple woman, to the point of stupidity, did not like Min Ren back. She was in love with an enemy of Min Ren, someone who was considered his strongest opponent when he was still a teen!

Immortal Emperor Min Ren, time after time, remained in love with this simple woman. Li Qiye had nothing but praise for Min Ren throughout his life, but, in only this matter, he made him want to raise his foot and kick him! When Min Ren was still a teen, Li Qiye scolded him many times, calling him a wooden head! There were even times when Li Qiye wanted to break open his head, erasing the memories of the simple woman!

No matter how much Li Qiye, as the Dark Crow scolded him, the young Min Ren was extremely loyal to the simple woman with his heart. Li Qiye didn't have any other choice as there was no medicine for this Min Ren.

After he shouldered the Heaven's Will and became an Immortal Emperor, he didn't marry anyone. Li Qiye naturally knew why. However, this was not something Li Qiye wanted to see, especially, when he, as the Dark Crow, was not stable, since could fall into deep hibernation at any time.

At that moment, he didn't know how long his hibernation would be, so, before he fell asleep, he decided to do something... leaving a descendant for Immortal Emperor Min Ren!

Of course, the best candidate for this matter would be Su Ru! Li Qiye expended much effort in his schemes to trick Min Ren into the honey-pot. Of course, as an Immortal Emperor, Min Ren didn't

expect his mentor to throw him into a hole.

(TN1: Su Ru = General Su = the general mentioned earlier)

The moment Min Ren's godly spirit traveled to the most dangerous area of the Nine Worlds, Li Qiye made his physical body sleep together with General Su on the same bed; the borrowing of seed was successful.

When Min Ren came back from killing at the most dangerous place, this matter was already completed; the grains had become rice!

This matter caused Immortal Emperor Min Ren and Li Qiye to almost completely break up. Both sides loudly roared, and the sound reverberated through the entire heaven. At that moment, Min Ren was enraged, and there was also a storm brewing inside Li Qiye. This monstrous atmosphere swept through the entire nine heavens and ten worlds. Under the fury of the Immortal Emperor, all existences in this world were anxiously trembling.

Of course, everyone was afraid to ask what happened. All in all, even the heavens' curtain was pierced through after this matter.

Immortal Emperor Min Ren's attitude caused Su Ru to be dispirited. In the end, Su Ru left Immortal Emperor Min Ren. Regarding this matter, Li Qiye always felt guilty towards Su Ru. That year, he personally brought her to Min Ren's side when her family completely opposed it; she ultimately still chose to be in Min Ren's camp.

One has to remember, that that year Min Ren was only a boy with absolutely nothing, but Su Ru came from a prestigious clan with peerless beauty; more importantly, her own talents could have soared the sky with a wisdom as deep as the sea!

At that time, Su Ru's clan naturally didn't want her to be an assistant for Min Ren, a boy who only had empty hands.

Li Qiye, as the Dark Crow, finally convinced Su Ru to stay behind, and this made Su Ru to be deserted by her family and friends.

After this matter happened, Li Qiye always felt guilty. She paid so much, but she could only leave in sadness, in the end.

He knew that his hibernation was not far off, so he used his most priceless treasures and a heavenly defying method to create a home for Su Ru; in the end, this place was called the "Heaven's Edge Su Clan."

Li Qiye also knew that this name chosen by Su Ru had a hidden meaning. No matter how far the Heaven's Edge was, her love for Min Ren would never change!

Unfortunately, the god of all creations like to tease human beings. Nevertheless, Su Ru still raised Immortal Emperor Min Ren's son into a man able to spread his own wings!

In later generations, people believed that Immortal Emperor Min

Ren never married, and he didn't have any descendants; however, no one knew that Min Ren's direct bloodline has always been passed down! This secret was only known by the Su generations, and the immortal Li Qiye.

“What's wrong?”

The moment Li Qiye was lost in his memories, Su Yong Huang who was sitting in front of him called out, causing Li Qiye to return to the present.

Regaining his wits, he stared at Su Yong Huang, then at Tu Bu Yu for a little bit, and then he said:

“I am very clear on your origin. Young brother Tu cannot be your disciple, ah? From my view, young brother Tu is not someone from the Su Clan; even if you practice the God of War Formula.”

God of War Formula was Immortal Emperor's Min Ren main cultivation method. However, Min Ren did not pass it down. Li Qiye as the Dark Crow allowed for Su Ru to pass this art down instead.

God of War Formula came from the God of War Temple. Even though he as the Dark Crow taught it to Min Ren, on principle, Min Ren was not allowed to pass down this method. However, Li Qiye broke the rule for Su Ru, and he allowed her to pass it down to her and Immortal Emperor Min Ren's son!

Because of this, the God of War Formula was always a ultimate generational method of the Heaven's Edge Su Clan!

Tu Bu Yu smiled, and he replied:

“Respectful older brother, I am a Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect’s disciple, and this has always been the case. However, my situation is a bit special. After I joined the sect, I rarely stayed inside; I was always traveling outside. As for the God of War Formula, I started cultivating it later.”

“I see, so you were always searching for the Su Clan!”

Li Qiye glanced at Tu Bu Yu, and he said.

Tu Bu Yu embarrassingly coughed, and he felt that he had to tell the truth:

“At that point, I was under the order to find the descendants of the Patriarch. Even though we were declining, there were Supreme Elders who found clues within the writings of our sect, that the Patriarch had descendants in this world. When I joined, I was chosen to be the one to find the Patriarch’s descendants in order to find the Patriarch’s Emperor merit laws. that is why Elder Gu’s group didn’t really know about me since they only know that I am a disciple of the sect.”

Li Qiye shook his head, and he said.

“Heaven’s Edge Su Clan, it does not have Emperor merit laws!”

Tu Bu Yu slightly sighed, and he spoke:

“The descendants of the Su Clan, after knowing our situation, agreed for the sect master to help the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. I was made an exception and was given the God of War Formula. At that point, my own cultivation method was limited, and I had reached a bottleneck; so, I destroyed my cultivation foundation, starting from the beginning again.”

Hearing this, Li Qiye couldn't help but to take a second look at him. Living for so long, with such a deep cultivation, yet he destroyed everything. This was determination and courage.

Li Qiye finally looked at Su Yong Huang, and he said:

“You are the prime descendant of the Su Clan!”

“How do you know?”

Li Qiye revealing her origin with one phrase, causing her to be surprised yet again. At the moment, there were many disciples of the Su Clan, but only the descendant could become the clan master of the Su Clan!

“Solar Immortal Physique.”

Li Qiye continued:

“Only the prime descendant of the Su Clan can cultivate the Immortal merit law “Solar Immortal Physique.”

Chapter 95: Complete Imperial Saint Physique (1)

(Bao's Note: Reading this chap and the physiques, keep in mind some common general knowledge for Xianxia. Yang = Sun = Hot = Male, Yin = Cold = Moon = Female)

Her beautiful eyes gazed intensely at Li Qiye in astonishment, and gravely said:

“Who are you in the end?”

Solar Immortal Physique was not passed down by Immortal Emperor Min Ren. Even inside the Su Clan, it was a big secret.

“You should know that I am a disciple of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, your disciple, Li Qiye.”

Li Qiye calmly smiled.

Su Yong Huang's eyes became chilling, her gazes became as sharp as a sword. It was as if invisible swords were approaching one's body, causing others to fidget.

But Li Qiye was still leisurely sitting there, he shook his head and said:

“Don’t make a move against me. Coming from the Su Clan, I know you are truly powerful. But inside the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, if I want to kill you, it would be easier than killing an ant. I believe that young brother Tu have told you about my matters.”

After a while, Su Yong Huang finally withdrew the coldness in her gaze.

Li Qiye looked at her for a very long time, and finally gently shook his head and said:

Solar Immortal Physique, was the word “Yang” within the six words of the Physique Scripture, one of the two strongest and extreme Yang Physiques!

“Even though grandpa Tu had spoke of your miracles, I know that you have some talents, even with the Patriarch teaching you in your dream. But regarding physiques, don’t boast ignorantly. If you know that I am a Solar Immortal Physique, then you should know that as his descendant, this physique is proven.”

Su Yong Huang coldly said.

In fact, Su Yong Huang was very angry at the moment. Her origin could be considered very mysterious, but Li Qiye easily found out her true details, but she didn’t know anything about Li Qiye. This made her very nervous.

Su Yong Huang's words made Li Qiye laugh out loud. Regarding physique types and physique methods, throughout all of the nine worlds and ten earths, if he claimed to be second, no one would dare to claim first. He spent countless of years with the Physique Scripture, and Immortal Physiques coming out from him was more than just Immortal Emperor Min Ren's Solar Immortal Physique!

“What are you laughing at!”

Seeing Li Qiye's laughter, Su Yong Huang said with a deep tone.

“Even though you don't believe it, but my words are the truth. The Solar Immortal Physique merit law might be the ultimate technique of your Su Clan, but you truly practiced the wrong physique.”

Li Qiye shook his head.

The six words of the Physique Scripture were not allowed to be circulated by him. Immortal Emperor Min Ren learned the Solar Immortal Physique from him, and the Black Dragon King also learned an Immortal Physique method as well, but they had a pact with Li Qiye and used their True Fate to make the oath.

There was only one exception, which was Su Ru. Because Su Ru gave birth to the son of Min Ren, this meant that in the future, this branch would have a high chance of the Solar Immortal Physique appearing, no matter whether it was the Complete Sky Physique within the Saint Physiques, or Minor Sky Physique and Mutual Sky Physique within the King Physiques.

Li Qiye was always ashamed seeing Su Ru, so he broke the rule and gave her the Solar Immortal Physique, not for Min Ren, but for her own achievements and contributions.

“You said that I practiced the wrong physique, then come up with some solid evidences.”

Staring at Li Qiye, and noticing that he was not joking, she gravely said.

Li Qiye looked at Su Yong Huang, and finally said:

“An ancestral grandmother from your family in a random generation must have been the Heavenly Devil Physique at grand completion, one of the two Saint Physiques, correct?”

Hearing these words, Su Yong Huang’s expression slightly moved, and stared at Li Qiye in amazement, and said:

“How did you know?”

“I calculated using my fingers.”

Li Qiye smiled and said:

“Moreover, your Inner Physique whenever you channel the incantations of the Solar Immortal Physique, it became as hot as the Blazing Sun, right?”

“This is a characteristic of the Solar Immortal Inner Physique. Solar Immortal Physique is an extreme Yang method, one of the twelve Immortal Physiques. The Inner Physique became as hot as the Blazing Sun, nothing is wrong with that.”

Su Yong Huang could be considered an expert regarding this physique. Afterall, their ancestor Min Ren was a Solar Immortal Physique, so they had a very deep understanding of this physique.

“The problem is in this matter. In the center of your Inner Physique as hot as the Blazing Sun, there is a stand of Yin energy that isn’t affected by your heat.”

Li Qiye gently shook his head.

Li Qiye saying so caused Su Yong Huang to be shocked, because this was an extremely private matter, outsiders had no way of knowing. But Li Qiye just revealed the secret of her Inner Physique, which she thought was a normal thing of the Solar Immortal Physique method.

“If I practiced the wrong physique method, then where is the mistake?’

At this moment, Su Yong Huang was a little moved, and asked.

Li Qiye continued:

“From within the Yin, the Yang was born. The woman with the

grand completion Heavenly Devil Physique was pregnant with the descendant carrying the Solar Immortal Physique. This was a bit outside of my expectation. If my guess is not wrong, then you thought you were a natural Minor Sky Physique, one of the twenty four King Physiques, correct?”

“Is this not correct?”

Su Yong Huang emotionally said.

Li Qiye shook his head and said:

“Wrong, you are a natural born Complete Imperial Saint Physique! Because your physique seemed to be very similar to the Minor Sky Physique, one of the twenty four King Physiques. In reality, your physique is similar to the Minor Sky Physique, and also the Mutual Sky Physique! Your first impression was that because you are the descendant of the Immortal Emperor Min Ren, so you assumed you were a natural born Minor Sky Physique.”

“Complete Imperial Saint Physique...”

Su Yong Huang was in a daze, and said:

“The legendary one of the six special Saint Physiques... Complete Imperial Saint Physique?”

There were forty eight types of Xiantian Physiques, with four branches in each. King Physiques have twenty four different ones,

with two branches in each. As for Saint Physiques, cultivators in this world considered that there were twelve Saint Physiques, that correspond with the twelve Immortal Physiques.

However, true Saint Physiques altogether amount to eighteen types. Whenever Saint Physique is brought up, cultivators usually ignored the other six Saint Physiques.

Natural born Saint Physique was an extremely rare occurrence. The six special Saint Physiques were even rarer, less seen than True Dragons and Godly Kings! Because the twelve corresponding Saint Physiques could be cultivated from the corresponding King Physiques, but the six special Saint Physiques didn't have anything other King Physiques preceding them. In another sense, the six special Saint Physiques were impure.

Li Qiye nodded his head, and said:

“It seems like your understanding of physiques isn't too bad, ah. Correct, you are a natural born Complete Imperial Saint Physique, one of the eighteen Saint Physiques, not the Minor Sky Physique like in your imagination.”

Su Yong Huang's expression was vagarious within this moment. Even though she was normally elegant and calm, but she couldn't help it at this moment. This news to her was positive because a natural born Saint Physique was much stronger than a natural born King Physique. But, this was also a bad thing.

If she was a natural born Minor Sky Physique, then she would be one of the two King Physiques within the Solar Immortal

Physique's family. She had an advantage that others didn't because the Su Clan had the Solar Immortal Physique method, plus it was the strongest, highest, and earliest method within all Immortal Physique methods.

With such a method, she hoped that one day she could achieve the Solar Immortal Physique just like their ancestor! This was a grand wish of the Heaven's Edge Su Clan.

Currently she was a natural born Complete Imperial Saint Physique, this meant that she will never have the chance to cultivate a completed Solar Immortal Physique.

"Complete Imperial Saint Physique at grand completion is my limit?"

Li Qiye shook his head, and said:

"Not necessarily, the Complete Imperial Saint Physique still cannot escape the word "Yang". It was simply given birth by the fusion between the Solar Immortal Physique and Heavenly Devil Physique. Complete Imperial Saint Physique, nine parts Yang and one part Yin, and Yang was born from Yin. As long as the Immortal Physique method is strong enough, the Complete Imperial Saint Physique could still become the Extreme Light Immortal Physique!"

Extreme Light Immortal Physique was one of the two extreme Yang Immortal Physiques, along with the Solar Immortal Physique.

“What type of Immortal Physique method would allow for it to become Extreme Light Immortal Physique?”

Su Yong Huang couldn't help but ask.

“The strongest, the highest, the earliest Immortal Physique method.”

Hearing this, Su Yong Huang's heart was shaking. The strongest, highest, earliest Immortal Physique method could only come from the Physique Scripture, but there is no one in this world who knew where it was! How their Su Clan and Immortal Emperor Min Ren obtained the Solar Immortal Physique was not written down! But they do know that their Physique method was the strongest, highest, and earliest method from the Physique Scripture. But this was a top secret, outside of direct descendant, no one else knew that their method came from the scripture.

In reality, Li Qiye as the Dark Crow passed the God of War Formula along with the Solar Immortal Physique to Su Ru but Su Ru made a vow to never reveal the Dark Crow or the Physique Scripture to her descendants.

After a long time, Su Yong Huang looked at Li Qiye, and said:

“I do not know your history or origin, but after today, I trust in your abilities. If you drive the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, I trust there will finally be a day of revitalization, and the will of my ancestors will not be destroyed. The sect master's seat will be pass

on to you, since you are the most suitable candidate.”

“Passing the seat to me?”

Li Qiye was a bit surprised.

Su Yong Huang smiled, and elegantly said while looking at Li Qiye:

“The elders do not willing serve me when I am the sect master, I know this in my heart. If this sect was not founded by my own ancestor, I wouldn’t be willing to be involved in this muddy water. Revitalizing the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, such an easy thing to say. Letting a little thirteen years old girl at that time to become the new sect master, it was an impossible matter. If Elder Xu didn’t think that I could successfully cultivate the Solar Immortal Physique and let me become the sect master, I would have not stay behind.”

Su Yong Huang’s words were very candid and direct. Finished speaking, she paused for a moment and stared at Li Qiye, then continued:

“Today there is a successor for the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, I do need to go back to the Heaven’s Edge Su Clan.”

“You and your ancestral grandmother...”

Li Qiye almost blurted something out, but then he shut his

mouth.

Chapter 96: Complete Imperial Saint Physique (2)

“What are you talking about?”

Hearing Li Qiye trying to speak, Su Yong Huang strangely stared at him and said.

Li Qiye closed his mouth and shook his head:

“Nothing.”

Earlier he almost blurted out that she and her ancestral grandmother Su Ru was very similar. Not only because her eyes were just like Su Ru’s, but because her self-sacrificing dedication was also the same.

A thirteen years old little girl born in the Heaven’s Edge Su Clan, becoming the sect master of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, this was such a difficult matter. One has to know that the sect was declining, and the Heaven’s Edge Su Clan was countless times better than it was today!

That year, when the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect’s imposing presence ruled over the nine heavens and ten earths. This type of brilliant prestige and power had nothing to do with the Su Clan. They were only a hidden family in one corner of the world.

But today, when the sect was in decline, she as the descendant of the Su Clan was willing to step up in order to revitalize the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. A thirteen years old girl that was not welcome by the elders of the sect, but she still chose to come.

This was all simply because the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was created by her ancestor Immortal Emperor Min Ren's hands!

Li Qiye's heart couldn't help but heavily sigh. Remembering the past made his mind weary. This matter, he was reluctant to mention.

"I will make it clear with the Elder Gu's group, tomorrow I will pass the seat to you."

Su Yong Huang was direct and straightforward from her heart. Regarding the sect master position of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, she didn't covet.

Tu Bu Yu stood silently behind her and only lightly sighed, without saying anything.

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head:

"You are wrong regarding this matter. You are the descendant of Immortal Emperor Min Ren; there is no one more suitable than you for this position. Moreover, if you are the descendant of Min Ren, revitalizing the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, to be exact, is your responsibility, not mine. Don't you think so? So to speak, you

are still the sect master, and I am still the disciple. As for the Elder Gu's group, I believe that sooner or later, they will start to trust you."

Su Yong Huang stared at Li Qiye for a while. In the end, she didn't say anything. She stood up and left, but without a doubt, she has agreed to stay.

"On the Dragon Heads-raising Day, does your Su Clan still hold a great honoring ceremony?"

When Su Yong Huang was leaving, Li Qiye couldn't help but ask one question.

Su Yong Huang who was wanting to leave heard this question, and her body visibly shook. She turned around and gazed at Li Qiye:

"How did you know this matter?"

"Calculated with my fingers!"

Li Qiye lamented with a sigh. Even though Su Yong Huang didn't answer, but he already knew.

The Dragon Heads-raising Day was the birthday of Immortal Emperor Min Ren, even if the children of the Su Clan didn't know this. Even though Su Ru left in the end and went far away, and she never saw Min Ren again but she still was very much in love with

him.

This matter always left Li Qiye ashamed because he persuaded Su Ru to follow Min Ren that year, but unfortunately, there was such a result in the end.

Su Yong Huang turned around and left, but before exiting the door, Su Yong Huang suddenly turned around and said:

“I don’t know where you are from, but since you made me stay behind, do not forget one thing, you are my disciple!”

And then she gently flew away.

After Su Yong Huang’s departure, Li Qiye couldn’t help but smiled. At least regarding this part, she was not like her ancestral grandmother Su Ru!

“Older Brother, may I leave as well?”

Tu Bu Yu kindly asked. He, this monster more than one thousand years old, keep calling Li Qiye older brother time and time again, plus there was not a hint of awkwardness, this was truly impressive.

Li Qiye gave him a stern glance, and said:

“You created such a mess of a situation, and wanted me to fix it

for you in the end. You as my little brother in the future will go where I point you to. If I say east you wouldn't dare to go west, right!?"

But Tu Bu Yu was not a bit angry, and he amiably smiled and said:

"Older brother, you cannot blame me for this matter. The truth is that the group of the previous sect master brought on this messy situation. I am only a disciple, and was merely an errand boy, doing all of this was hard work."

Li Qiye glared at this old fox, but he had no way of controlling this old fox.

Tu Bu Yu had just left, and soon after the group of Gu Tie Shou couldn't wait any longer and ran in. Seeing Li Qiye, Elder Sun immediately asked:

"How was it? What did you negotiate about?"

"What about the negotiation?"

Li Qiye slowly spoke:

"The Evil Infested Ridge, we will carefully discuss again."

"The Evil Infested Ridge can wait."

Elder Qian gravely said:

“But, in my view, we should be talking about the sect master’s seat. My opinion is that you should now take over and become the sect master of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. At the moment of the reformation, we first stabilize the trust of the disciples, and then build a stronger morale!”

“I feel that this makes a lot of sense.”

Elder Wu added:

“The sect master was always outside, and does not have high prestige within the sect, and is not the person the public wants. Our grand reformation requires a stable morale. At this moment, if the sect master’s seat was passed on to you, nothing could be better. Your becoming sect master is completely justified.”

“Although the sect master will have to abdicate, she can still become an elder, we are just short of one at this moment.”

Elder Zhou also tried to persuade Li Qiye, and said:

“There really isn’t any other way, if the sect master was willing to abdicate, let her become a supreme elder. Currently our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect doesn’t have any supreme elder.”

This is not to say that the group of Elder Wu wanted to seize power, but the current situation of the sect could be described as

internally chaotic and externally surrounded by enemies. In order to reform and revitalize, there absolutely must be someone that can perform miracles and lead the sect. Without a doubt, Li Qiye was the most appropriate candidate.

Even though Su Yong Huang was the sect master for a long period, but she was always outside. Her presence within the sect was very weak.

“What is Elder Gu’s opinion?”

Li Qiye calmly looked at Gu Tie Shou and asked.

Gu Tie Shou looked at them for a moment, then bitterly said:

“What can I do? That year helping the sect master take the position was me, now wanting the sect master to abdicate is also me. Am I not always used as a blade? That year master used me as a blade, now all of you is also using me as a blade, it truly feels like I’m always playing the bad guy’s role.”

“Brother Gu, there is no other way. Inside the sect, regarding prestige, status, only you could personally wield the blade.”

Elder Sun could only say this.

Gu Tie Shou kept silent for a long time, and eventually spoke with exasperation:

“If it is truly for the sect, I can only bear the infamy again.”

Here, he looked at Li Qiye, and said:

“Qi Ye, what is your opinion on this?”

“Let us do this, all elders should go back, tomorrow we will talk about this in the ancestral chamber.”

Li Qiye said:

“Elders said before that we have a portrait of the Patriarch in the sect still? Tomorrow also bring it there.”

Li Qiye’s request perplexed the elders for a moment, and finally, they all nodded their heads and said their goodbyes. Only First Elder Gu Tie Shou was the last to leave.

“How was the Ancient Land?”

Gu Tie Shou was concerned more than anyone about the rise and fall of the sect. After Li Qiye’s return, he didn’t get the chance to ask about this matter.

“For the time being, it is difficult. We need more time. With our current situation, we can only let the Ancient Land matter loose. We need to deal with the Evil Infested Ridge first, this is extremely

important to us.”

Li Qiye said.

Gu Tie Shou paused for a moment, and finally said:

“But, Evil Infested Ridge no longer belong to our sect. One could say that the Evil Infested Ridge belongs to the whole world. Once it is opened, I’m afraid all the famous sects in the Grand Middle Territory will all come, then will we still have the opportunity to enter the ridge?”

As the elder, how could Gu Tie Shou not want to recover the Evil Infested Ridge, but the sect today no longer had this power.

“In my view, the moment the ridge is opened, Heavenly God Sect, Heavenly Jewel Kingdom will definitely come. Different clans and powerful heritages such as the Southern Heavenly Kingdom, maybe there is a chance that an invincible colossus such as the Mysterious Cyan Ancient Kingdom would also arrive.”

Gu Tie Shou was not without anxiety, and said:

“What do we have to compete against them?”

“Rest assured, elder.”

Li Qiye calmly said:

“This time I will personally lead the troops and go to the Evil Infested Ridge. If it belongs to our sect, then recovering it would only be a matter of time. This trip to the ridge, anyone who blocks my path, kill without mercy!”

Gu Tie Shou knew that Li Qiye was not being arrogant and mindless, but he didn't exactly know Li Qiye's secret cards to compete with the Jiang Zuo Clan, Southern Heavenly Kingdom, and even the monstrous Mysterious Cyan Ancient Kingdom.

“Very well, we have decided on going to the Evil Infested Ridge. The moment it opens, we the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect will absolutely enter!”

Finally, Gu Tie Shou also agreed with Li Qiye's approach.

The next day, all five elders were gathered inside the ancestral chamber. There were also Li Qiye, Su Yong Huang, and Tu Bu Yu.

“Today, we will talk about the sect master's position.”

The gathering of all the people made the atmosphere feels heavy, so Li Qiye opened first.

Under such a situation, the group of Elder Zhou was all silent. They were not eager to speak, because forcing an abdication was not a glorious matter. Even though Su Yong Huang as the sect master was not something everyone welcomed, but her sect

master's seat was indeed legitimate.

“I know, all the elders, even the protectors and sectional leaders had some qualms towards the sect master.”

Li Qiye slowly spoke:

“However, today, this is the time when the sect master needs to accept her ancestry.”

“Acceptance of ancestry?”

The elders were stunned for a moment. They thought it would be a discussion of the sect master's position as well as forcing Su Yong Huang to abdicate.

“Correct, this is the moment when the sect master should accept her ancestry.”

Li Qiye stood up, and solemnly said:

“Our sect master Su Yong Huang, is the descendant of the Patriarch Immortal Emperor Min Ren!”

“What...”

The news had just came out, causing all the elders to be shocked.

Chapter 97 : Accepting The Ancestor (1)

“This matter is impossible...”

This news was too shocking. To the elders, they didn't dare to believe it. Elder Wu stood up and said:

“The Patriarch never married his whole life, how could he have descendants?”

“Yes, this can't be a possibility. The sect's official record had never mentioned the Patriarch's future descendants.”

Elder Qian couldn't help but exclaimed.

“This truth is absolute.”

Tu Bu Yu, who was standing behind Su Yong Huang, said:

“Under the trust of the elders, I left the sect in order to find the Patriarch's descendants. Although the sect's official record never wrote it down, within a few anecdotes and writings, certain clues were still left behind.”

Here, Tu Bu Yu looked at Elder Gu and continued:

“Elder Gu, around one thousand six hundred years ago, do you

remember having the chance to meet Grandpa Liu? At that moment, you came with the previous sect master. At that time, it was not just Grandpa Liu, I was also present.”

Gu Tie Shou stared at Tu Bu Yu. After a while, he suddenly stood up and emotionally exclaimed:

“Yo-you were the teen that year that helped Grandpa Liu stand up!”

“Elder Gu still didn’t forget.”

Tu Bu Yu nodded his head and said:

“Correct, I was an honorary disciple of Grandpa Liu. At that moment, I carried a great responsibility so my name was not recorded amongst the listings of the sect’s disciples.”

“Grandpa Liu, which Grandpa Liu?”

The elders were all shaking because inside the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, there was only one person called Grandpa Liu.

Gu Tie Shou gently sighed. He finally sat down and said:

“Grandpa Liu was the number one Bulwark of our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, Ancestor Liu San Jian.”

“Ancestor Liu San Jian!”

These words uttered from the mouth of Gu Tie Shou greatly shook the expressions of the nearby elders.

After Young Emperor Mu, Liu San Jian was the most famous in the sect as the number one Bulwark. That year when the Heavenly God Sect fought against the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, Liu San Jian was the one in power.

“Ancestor Liu is still alive?”

This news was incredibly shocking to the seated elders. Elder Qian was at a loss for words because if Ancestor Liu was still alive, this meant that the sect still had a character that could compete with the Heavenly God Sect’s ancestor.

“That was the last time I saw Grandpa Liu.”

Gu Tie Shou shook his head and said:

“At that moment, I didn’t know that Grandpa Liu was indeed Ancestor Liu. I was still young back then and had never seen Grandpa Liu before. At that time, I followed master to visit Respectable Grandpa. However, at that moment, Grandpa Liu’s situation was not very optimistic. His old wound was troubling him and needed help to even sit or stand. After that one time, I never met Grandpa Liu again.”

At this point, all of the elders were looking at Tu Bu Yu. Tu Bu Yu was a disciple of Liu San Jian; even though he was just an honorary one, his status at the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was still higher than the group of Elder Gu.

“The truth is, that was also the last time I had met Master. After that, I never saw Respectable Grandpa again.”

Hearing this, the elders became dejected. Without a doubt, Ancestor Liu San Jian was no longer in this world.

Tu Bu Yu spoke:

“The fight thirty thousand years ago, we suffered extremely heavy losses. Inadvertently, Grandpa Liu found out that the Patriarch did have some descendants. I just so happened to become the disciple of Grandpa Liu and under his grim situation, he ordered me to find the Patriarch’s descendants. Because the clues were extremely limited, I had always wandered outside. Due to my responsibility, I never spoke to anyone about this matter and was not in the disciple’s listings, I only directly contacted the previous sect master. Elder Gu must have met me a couple of times.”

Gu Tie Shou nodded his head. He thought that Tu Bu Yu was a messenger disciple, responsible for liaison with the outside. Also, because Tu Bu Yu was very young back then when he came back to the sect, he only knew Tu Bu Yu was a disciple but he was not aware of Tu Bu Yu’s particular responsibilities.

“In order to find the descendants of the Patriarch, I traveled

outside as a nomad for more than one thousand years. Time did not betray a sincere heart; in the end, I finally found the Patriarch's descendant.”

Tu Bu Yu said to all of the elders present.

The elders looked at each other as Elder Zhou finally asked:

“This... how do we prove that the sect master is the descendant of the Patriarch?”

Tu Bu Yu's identity was not a problem, but how could they prove that Su Yong Huang was a descendant of the Patriarch? This matter was the most important thing, after all.

“The descendant of the Ancestor and the acceptance of ancestry, I was told by the Patriarch in my dreams.”

Finally, Li Qiye said:

“Which is why I requested for the elders to bring the portrait of the Patriarch.”

The elders glanced at each other and finally, First Elder Gu Tie Shou, very solemnly, took out an ancient crumbling wooden box. With both of his hands, he respectfully carried this wooden box.

“The Empress was the Godly General Su who had followed the

Patriarch her whole life. Her contributions towards the establishment of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and the Cleansing Incense Ancient Kingdom was inerasable. After the Patriarch shouldered the Heaven's Will, because she didn't want to hinder his step towards the apex and aspiration for immortality, the Empress brought the descendants of the Patriarch to a secluded location and left the Patriarch."

At this moment, Li Qiye respectfully said:

"The world remained oblivious to this matter, and same with the sect. It was until last night when the Patriarch told me in my dreams."

That year, he failed to give Su Ru an official title. Su Ru exerted numerous efforts throughout her whole life and had to live in seclusion, away from the rest of the world and in the end, she never asked for official titles nor merit rewards. As the Dark Crow that year, this matter was something that was aching in his heart. Today, he borrowed this scheme in order to give Su Ru a proper title. Even though it was already too late, at the very least, it could allow for Su Ru's descendant to accept her ancestry!

Li Qiye words caused the elders to look at each others. In the end, Elder Gu seriously nodded his head and said:

"I have read about the historical past of the Patriarch. That year, the Patriarch's Godly General Su was a peerless female general. She was the earliest to join the Patriarch; when he was still young, she had already followed him. After the Patriarch shouldered the Heaven's Will, all of the generals were given titles except for Godly

General Su. Afterwards, there were not many documents about War God Su and her whereabouts were unknown. So it was because Godly General Su was the Empress!”

Li Qiye slowly said:

“This matter is only words without evidences. Since the elders said that we have a portrait of the Ancestor, we could immediately compare to see if the sect master is the descendant or not. The portrait was personally drawn by the Patriarch so it has hidden emperor power and immortal intent. The sect master could use her blood to test the family’s blood bond!”

Hearing Li Qiye’s words, the elders were in astonishment. Why didn’t they think about this? Finally, under the respectful care of Gu Tie Shou, the ancient box was opened — a portrait was taken out. This portrait was extremely dated; the number of moons it had been passed under were unknown.

The moment the portrait was unraveled, a loud noise occurred. The Emperor’s aura furiously flew out from the portrait. This aura only belonged to Immortal Emperors!

One could see a middle-aged man within the portrait. Even though there were not many strokes and inks, the few lines alone were enough to outline his peerless invincibility!

The Emperor’s aura was emitted like the waves from the portrait. Even though this Emperor’s aura had not suppressed anyone, at the moment, this aura was flowing in the air and it caused the

souls to shiver. Others couldn't help but to worship in awe. This was a fear and respect from the deepest part of the soul!

Witnessing the appearance and feeling the aura of the Patriarch, the elders held it with utmost devotion and reverence. They compared the face of the Patriarch to that of Su Yong Huang.

Su Yong Huang was an extremely beautiful woman. Without the portrait for a meticulous comparison, it was truly difficult to think about Immortal Emperor Min Ren when seeing her.

Li Qiye was the one who saw Min Ren the most. He saw, with own eyes, the development of Min Ren. So, the first time he met Su Yong Huang, his mind was slightly moved because he immediately knew her origin!

“Th-this... too similar, especially the eyebrows. The charm of these eyebrows, it is truly too similar to the ancestor. It's as if they are from the same mold!”

Carefully comparing, the elders were left incredibly aghast. Especially the sword-like eyebrows of Su Yong Huang — it was identical to Min Ren's.

This was also the thing that left the deepest impression for Li Qiye. Su Yong Huang's eyes were similar to Su Ru, but the charm of the eyebrows was just like Immortal Emperor Min Ren.

“Sect Master can drop her blood to accept the family bond. This

is the portrait painted personally by the Patriarch. He had told me in my dreams that if Sect Master is indeed his descendant, then she can obtain the acceptance of the emperor power and immortal intent.”

At this moment, Li Qiye slowly spoke.

Su Yong Huang peaked at Li Qiye. In fact, she essentially didn't believe Li Qiye regarding the dream instruction of the Patriarch, but outside of this, what could make Li Qiye so aware of the matters regarding Min Ren and the Heaven's Edge Su Clan?

Seeing the portrait of her ancestor, Su Yong Huang couldn't restrain her emotions any longer and her heart was excited. Her Su Clan also had a portrait of Min Ren, but it was not drawn by Min Ren. Even though they were extremely similar, it didn't have the Emperor's aura; this aura could only be drawn by Immortal Emperors!

Finally, Su Yong Huang pricked her finger and a drop of blood fell onto the portrait. In a flash, this blood was absorbed by the portrait.

“Boom...” In the blink of an eye, the emperor power and immortal intent ferociously exploded. There was a shadow coming out from portrait. The moment this shadow came into being, it subjugated the nine heavens and ten worlds and swept through the Gods and Devils!

This invincible shadow's frightening aura rushed into the world!

Under this godly presence, the sun and the moon were without lights and the heaven and earth lost all of their brilliant colors!

Within this second, countless grand characters of the Grand Middle Territory felt this invincible emperor's aura that came and went in just a second and were extremely alarmed.

“Emperor's aura...”

Countless ancient beings opened their two eyes, but this emperor's aura disappeared too quickly, making it impossible for others to pinpoint.

As for the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, as the aura swept by, all of the disciples were left lying under the suppression of the aura.

Inside the ancestral chamber, the elders were lying down on the ground. Under this power, they could not be disrespectful!

Chapter 98 : Accepting The Ancestor (2)

At this time, the only one that wasn't affected was Li Qiye. Li Qiye watched this invincible shadow and didn't say anything.

The invincible shadow stared at Su Yong Huang for a while, then looked at Li Qiye for an even longer period. Finally, everything turned into a soft sigh. The invincible shadow dissipated into Emperor's Power and Immortal Intent and went back inside the portrait.

Feeling the ancestor's presence, Su Yong Huang became excited and emotional. This was the first time she was so close to her ancestor!

A long time after the aura disappeared, the elders could finally stand up, still stricken with fear. This scene, to them, was truly too shattering; this was the patriarch's spirit coming back, ah!

"The heavens will not destroy our Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect."

Elder Zhou couldn't help but exclaim:

"The descendant of the Patriarch is back and Li Qiye has his protection, our sect will definitely rise!"

At this moment, the elders were excited with manly tears in their

eyes. The Patriarch's spirit showing up shone a sliver of hope for the declining sect!

The Emperor's Power and Immortal Intent that turned into an invincible shadow... This was a summon by the blood of Su Yong Huang. The shadow personally looked at Su Yong Huang. Without a doubt, Su Yong Huang was a descendant of Immortal Emperor Min Ren.

However, his spirit didn't stop there. He personally looked at Su Yong Huang and this was proof of her identity. What was more important was that the Patriarch stared silently at Li Qiye for a long time. Without a doubt, this was because the Patriarch highly valued Li Qiye. He was the selected hero for the revitalization of the sect!

Of course, the elders didn't know that the emperor shadow of Min Ren silently stared at Li Qiye for a different reason. Even though, in this life, Li Qiye was no longer the Dark Crow, his True Fate and soul were still the same. The Emperor's Power and Immortal Intent naturally could recognize it.

Finally, the elders bowed to Su Yong Huang. Led by Gu Tie Shou, they said:

"We were foolish and didn't know that the sect master was the descendant of the Patriarch. We have offended you before and we beg for forgiveness."

Su Yong Huang slightly nodded and said:

“Elders are too kind. That year, I was only a thirteen year old little girl. To be able to take the sect master’s seat was due to the contributions of the elders, especially Elder Gu. That year, we were unfair towards you. Because the situation of the sect was not stable at that time, I couldn’t publicly reveal my identity.”

“The matters of that year is now all in the past. Everyone was just doing their best for the sect.”

Elder Gu reminiscenced and said:

“Today, with the return of the sect master and with Li Qiye, who is protected by the Patriarch, all of us are of one heart with the aim of revitalizing the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect!”

Su Yong Huang nodded her head. As a descendant of an Immortal Emperor, her elegant and royal aura was completely natural.

Li Qiye happily smiled:

“Today, we will discuss the second matter, which is the Evil Infested Ridge.”

The appearance of the Patriarch’s spirit made the elders excited. However, because Li Qiye brought up the Evil Infested Ridge, the atmosphere became more serious.

“I have decided that this time, we will bring the younger generation of disciples into the Evil Infested Ridge. There will be three groups. The first will be the disciples of the Cleansing Jade Peak. Even though their time in the sect was short and their cultivations are shallow, this is the best time to sharpen them! Another group will be led by Qu Dao Li; this group can be considered the elite force of our sect in the future, so they need to be trained even more. The last group, I think, would be from the second generation, consisting of disciples of a relatively young age and some sectional leaders.”

Here, Li Qiye stared at all the seated elders and said:

“Entering the Evil Infested Ridge, this time, is not only for us to harvest treasures, but also to devilishly hone our disciples.”

“I’m afraid all of the big sects and nations of the Grand Middle Territory will come, how will we compete for the spots? Plus, the Evil Infested Ridge is extremely dangerous. With the power of our disciples, I’m afraid they will only go to accept their deaths.”

Elder Sun worriedly said.

“Spots?”

Li Qiye smiled and nonchalantly said:

“Our spots are not decided by others. When I say we can go, we can definitely go! Whoever blocks my path, kill without mercy!”

Li Qiye's calm tone painted a bloody scenery. This invincible and domineering aura moved the elders. Even though Li Qiye's cultivation was shallow, the elders did not think that he was arrogant. Li Qiye was the chosen hero for the sect, who could block his peerless grand Dao?!

Of course, the group of Elder Gu was too superstitious with the protection of the Patriarch. From their perspectives, with the protection of an Immortal Emperor, who could block his path? Naturally, they didn't know that Li Qiye simply didn't need the protection of the Patriarch!

“Entering the Evil Infested Ridge... I, along with my disciples, will also come with you.”

At this moment, Su Yong Huang said. A moment later, she summoned a group of disciples.

These disciples were very young. The oldest was only around the age of a sectional leader. These disciples were the ones that Su Yong Huang took away that year. Plus, there were also a few sectional leaders.

“Good seeds...”

Seeing this group of disciples, Gu Tie Shou couldn't help but loudly praise. These disciples were stronger than the elites of the sect and could even catch up to the protectors!

What shocked the elders was that with just ten years, Su Yong Huang turned these disciples into experts with the strength of protectors — truly amazing.

This group of disciples were cultivated using the Su Clan's resources. She didn't ask for any treasures nor medicines from the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

“War God Su's Formation... Very good, this type of group is best suited for a large battlefield.”

Li Qiye's eyes were much sharper than the elders. Observing these disciples, he immediately knew how they were groomed. When it came to training disciples, Li Qiye was a grand master that no one could compare with!

Su Yong Huang was surprised and stared at Li Qiye. This group was the ace card for her to revitalize the sect, but Li Qiye could see the truth within. With such a mysterious ability, Li Qiye truly did not seem like a fourteen year old boy.

“War God Su's Formation?”

Gu Tie Shou was moved and said:

“I heard that under the Patriarch that year, there was such a troop; they couldn't be stopped by anything! Could it be that this group was trained under the same method as that year?”

“Correct.”

Su Yong Huang didn't say anything. Li Qiye already nodded his head:

“This indeed has the characteristics of the War God Su's Formation that year. Currently, the only flaw is that it is missing a Formation Array or a Formation Station. Otherwise, it would be even more powerful.”

“How do you know?!”

Su Yong Huang's expression shifted. This group was personally taught by her. She naturally knew their flaws, but at this moment, Li Qiye was able to see them. How could she not be surprised?

Li Qiye smiled and calmly said:

“I calculated with my fingers, and then I knew it with clarity in my mind.”

That year when Su Ru was leading this troop, it came from his hand. How could he not know the strengths and weaknesses of the War God Su's Formation?

Su Yong Huang angrily stared at Li Qiye. Her gaze seemingly wanted to penetrate Li Qiye, but no matter how hard she looked,

she couldn't see through him!

Seeing the cold atmosphere between the master and disciple, Gu Tie Shou busily coughed and mediated:

“With this team coming along, nothing could be better. For safety reasons, I will also go and bring along the portrait of the Patriarch, just in case.”

Li Qiye smiled and said:

“This troop does not need to go. Even though it is lacking a Formation Array or a Formation Station, this troop is versed in both offense and defense. For now, order them to create a battle station in the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. They only just returned so they should get used to the sect. In the future, when the storm comes, maybe they will need to uphold one direction by themselves.”

“Fine.”

Seeing Li Qiye's confidence, Su Yong Huang also agreed and nodded her head.

“Elder Gu definitely has to go, the disciples need your leadership.”

Then, Li Qiye stared at Tu Bu Yu and said:

“This time, I’m afraid the sect will be empty. It needs Sect Master to stay behind and protect it. However, Little Brother Tu cannot be lazy. You need to exert your strength this time, so you will go along with Elder Gu.”

Tu Bu Yu’s identity was very special. At the sect, as the honorary disciple of Liu San Jian, his status was even higher than the group of Elder Gu. However, he unknowingly became the disciple of Su Yong Huang. This identity was complex and became a mess. Normally, the group of Elder Gu could not command Tu Bu Yu, but only Li Qiye didn’t care and still called him “little brother.”

“As long as it is your command.”

Tu Bu Yu still graciously smiled.

This situation silenced the elders. Tu Bu Yu’s identity was too complex and caused them to be a bit embarrassed.

Tu Bu Yu was both the disciple of Su Yong Huang and Liu San Jian. In principle, this would make Su Yong Huang the same generation as Liu San Jian. However, since Liu San Jian was no longer here, no one had the status to fix these messy relations.

Finally, Li Qiye stretched his body and smilingly said:

“Good, then it is decided. Everyone go prepare, the Evil Infested Ridge will be the first battlefield of our Cleansing Incense Ancient

Sect!”

The phrase was uttered in such an ordinary manner, but when it came from Li Qiye, it carried a heroic air that encompassed the whole sky — ten parts domineering!

The time was near for the opening of the Evil Infested Ridge — this news quickly spread throughout the Grand Middle Territory. Even the Hundred Cities in the east, Chained Earth in the south, Desolate Wasteland in the west, and Limitless Land in the north all had big sects that received this news.

In fact, there were many big sects and powerful nations that had earlier calculated the date for the opening of the Evil Infested Ridge because it would open once every one hundred years. The time was near one hundred years so the date was drawing close.

Many sects and nations were adequately prepared, especially the powers within the Grand Middle Territory. They were very anxious for this event.

For everyone, the opening of the ridge meant that there would be a huge amount of spirit medicines and dan herbs, godly ores and treasure metals, and even the magical runes of the Heavenly Beasts’ Grand Dao, Longevity Wheels of Longevity Spirits, Longevity Bloods... It meant that the season of harvest has arrived.

Chapter 99 : Evil Infested Ridge (1)

The Evil Infested Ridge was a land of treasures in the eyes of many powerful sects and nations. This place had an abundance of godly ores, a plethora of spirit medicines and dan herbs, and was accompanied with the roars of Heavenly Beasts and groups of Longevity Spirits.

Even though, in the legends, the Evil Infested Ridge was far away from the Forbidden Burials or Ancient Earths, it was still a rare ground with treasures and riches.

No one could clearly speak of the exact origin of the Evil Infested Ridge. Some said that it was a natural ground. Some described it as a land that came from another world. Some also said that it was a place of the Gods...

Thirty thousand years ago until their loss at the hands of the Heavenly God Sect, the Evil Infested Ridge belonged to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. Even though they managed to keep their ancestral land, they couldn't hold on to the Evil Infested Ridge.

That year, the ridge was the hunting ground for the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect; no one dared to trespass. Even though there was an abundance of treasures that caused the mouths of others to become watery, no one dared to have any intentions against the sect.

The defeat of the sect caused the Evil Infested Ridge to be a place without an owner. Even though the Heavenly God Sect was the victor, all of the grand sects and nations in the entire Grand Middle Territory were interested in the ridge. This was why the Heavenly God Sect didn't dare to own the ridge alone and had to share it with the rest of the world.

Certain grand characters calculated that the opening of the Evil Infested Ridge would happen up to one year at the latest and within three months at the shortest.

Thus, at this moment, all of the experienced big sects and nations clamored to send their disciples on their way to the Evil Infested Ridge, to see whether they would be fortunate enough to seize the treasures in the legends.

As for the hosting country, the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom also sent their disciples earlier and camped at the entrance to the Evil Infested Ridge. Besides greeting the disciples from the grand sects and powerful nations from the eight directions of the Grand Middle Territories, they were also responsible for determining whether certain sects and cultivators had the qualifications to enter.

Even though the saying was that the Evil Infested Ridge was for the world to share, in reality, the sects that could enter the ridge were all grand sects and powerful nations, or a renowned tyrant of one direction. As for the small sects or ordinary cultivators, they wouldn't expect to qualify to enter the Evil Infested Ridge.

The Evil Infested Ridge was actually not far from the Cleansing

Incense Ancient Sect. At most, it was only one hundred thousand miles. If the old boundary of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect resembled a sea snail, then the current sect would be located at its tail and the Evil Infested Ridge would be at its mouth. They had to pass through the sect's Ancient Land.

Calculating the date a little bit, the time until the opening drew closer. Li Qiye wanted to leave early for the ridge and wait for the opening date.

All of the chosen disciples were waiting. At this point, Niu Fen quickly transformed into a giant snail. Because there were many disciples going, Niu Fen's body became even larger, like a giant mountain.

Looking at this enormous snail, all of the disciples were dumbfounded. During their time growing up, this was still their first time seeing such an enormous snail.

“Begin.”

With Li Qiye's command, Niu Fen carried all of the disciples of the sect towards the Evil Infested Ridge up ahead. The disciples sitting on the snail enjoyed this fresh and exciting experience.

There were around one thousand disciples coming along with Li Qiye this time. Outside of the three hundred disciples from the Cleansing Jade Peak, Qu Dao Li and Protector Mo also led a group along with Tu Bu Yu and First Elder Gu Tie Shou. The other four elders stayed behind to protect the sect.

As Li Qiye's maid, Li Shuangyan also came along. She was also a main part of Li Qiye's power so he had to bring her along.

As for Nan Huai Ren, as Li Qiye's errand boy, he naturally wanted to come along. Nan Huai Ren was completely loyal so if there were any spoils, Li Qiye wouldn't forget about his share.

In reality, before the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect's group began their journey, there were people already stationed at the entrance of the Evil Infested Ridge.

The entrance was a huge horizontal ridge. It was like a giant dragon lying on the earth, as if it was a separator between the heaven and earth. This entrance was in front of the ridge that ranged many million miles long. The moment one stood on top of the ridge to overlook all of the directions, it gave the feeling that the whole world was small in comparison.

The door was at the highest peak in this region — extremely magnificent. Of course, this was only the entrance, the true Evil Infested Ridge was bigger than one ever could imagine.

At the first checkpoint of the ridge, there was a team sent by the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom. This vanguard was meant to welcome the disciples from the grand sects as the host, but they also determined who had the qualifications to enter.

The vanguard group of the Heavenly God Sect was personally led by Zhen Wei Hou. Zhen Wei Hou was a Royal Noble of the previous

generation, just like Zi Shan Hou. What was worth mentioning was that Zhen Wei Hou's clan had a good relationship with the Dong Clan. At the same time, Zhen Wei Hou's personal relationship with Dong Sheng Long was very good![\[1\]](#)

The moment the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom's troops were stationed at the ridge, many cultivators had heard of the news. Especially the cultivators without a sect and weaker ones; they had come early and watched from a far distance.

These sect-less cultivators, along with weaker ones, absolutely didn't have the qualifications to enter the Evil Infested Ridge. However, they still wanted to watch the situation and take advantage if the opportunity arose; maybe they could even sneak inside the ridge. If not, they could use this chance to observe the grand characters of the big sects and strong nations for a little bit. There was even a chance to watch the auras of Enlightened Beings and Ancient Saints; this would then be a worthwhile trip.

After the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom's vanguard had stationed at the entrance, these sect-less cultivators knew to stay far away. They were not dumb enough to oppose a giant monster such as the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom.

“Hun Yuan Hou has arrived...”

Not long after Zhen Wei Hou finished his encampment, there was another Royal Noble who arrived by riding a Dragon Horse. This Royal Noble only had three to five followers, but he possessed a powerful primordial blood energy that caused weaker cultivators

to lose their colors.[\[2\]](#)

“Hun Yuan Hou is quite hard to judge, was only bestowed the title Royal Noble for not more than fifty years, yet he already obtained the Mortal King’s special permission to have the qualification in entering the Evil Infested Ridge.”

Witnessing the arrival of Hun Yuan Hou from afar, many cultivators said with admiration.

Zhen Wei Hou, as the host, simply clasped his hands together to greet the arrival of Hun Yuan Hou and didn’t prepare any special arrangement for him. Hun Yuan Hou, in front of Zhen Wei Hou, was also very careful and arranged everything himself.

Then, there were many other Royal Nobles from the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom, with the qualifications to enter the Evil Infested Ridge, who also arrived one after another. However, within their own groups, only one Royal Noble could actually enter.

“The Violet Cloud Sect has arrived...”

As the day went on, there were many disciples from the big sects and powerful nations outside of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom that arrived.

The Violet Cloud Sect arrived from a rainbow in the sky, spanning across the ridge. After the disciples of the Violet Cloud Sect had arrived, Zhen Wei Hou ordered some disciples to greet

them.

The disciples of the Violet Cloud Sect were all extraordinary and had purple energy. A wise man would notice that the majority of these disciples had stepped into the Heaven's Primal realm!

For the younger generation, to be able to reach the Heaven's Primal realm was an excellent achievement. Especially when ten years ago, it was still during the Difficult Dao Era. With the lack of Heaven's Will and how the world's essence was dried up, it made cultivation extremely difficult!

“The Flying Dragon Lake has also arrived, very hot stuff. I heard that this time, the Flying Dragon Lake was personally led by its young master. Rumor has it that the young master of Flying Dragon was a giant python that cultivated into a demon, and there was even a chance for him to become Demon King in the future!”

A person movingly said.

The arrival of the Flying Dragon Lake carried the roar of a dragon. One giant dragon spanned across the sky and carried one hundred disciples, they were all extraordinarily talented. However, the disciples of the Flying Dragon Lake were all demons versed in the Dao and had different appearances. Some had a human body but the head of a hawk, some had ox horns, and some at the back had human heads on a bird's body...”

“How come there are no Ancient Saints arriving?”

Seeing the arrival of new countries along with big sects, a few inexperienced cultivators didn't know the reasons and curiously asked.

“There is something you aren't aware of. The old legends had it that the Evil Infested Ridge was a place to train the disciples of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. It was meant to be a hellish training ground and only awarded to the younger generations, so only cultivators under the Ancient Saint realm could enter. Otherwise, any higher cultivators would be suppressed by immortal power!”

An older cultivator said.

An even more experienced cultivator gently shook his head and said:

“Ancient Saints will not easily appear at the moment. The Difficult Dao Era made everyone suffer for a long thirty thousand years. The majority of grand characters above the Enlightened Being level were all accomplished before the last thirty thousand years. Within these thirty thousand years, no matter if they were Ancient Saints or Heavenly Kings, their cultivations were stuck at the same place so new Ancient Saints within the last era could be counted on one's fingers. Therefore, all of the Ancient Saints from thirty thousand years ago are either dead from old age, or they forcibly froze their lifespan and are reluctant to go outside.”

Legends had it that thirty thousand years ago, the Black Dragon King suddenly became furious and fought against Immortal Emperor Ta Kong, wanting to rob the Heaven's Will that was

shouldered by him. This battle was murderous to the point where the Gods were crying and the Devils were lamenting. In the end, the Heaven's Will was ripped apart. After this, the world's energy dried up and this became the hardest thirty thousand years for cultivators.

During such hard times, many great characters that had reached Enlightened Being and Ancient Saint couldn't take another half step forward because of the dried up world's essence, so their cultivation remained at the same place.

This era caused countless Enlightened Beings and Ancient Saints to die from old age. The ones that managed to escape this fate all froze their lifespan and went into mortal isolation and didn't dare to appear in the world.^[3]

^[1] Hou is indeed a title, with all of these Hous appearing. Hou meaning noble or marquis and are given by the Mortal King

^[2] Hun Yuan = primordial

^[3] Mortal isolation = a cultivation session that will determine whether you live or die. Also, this is an explanation of why the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect's elders are all stuck at Royal Noble and below, even if their aptitudes were limited

Chapter 100 : Evil Infested Ridge (2)

This tough era had only ended ten years ago.

So many geniuses ended their path at the Enlightened Being realm. To be able to reach the Ancient Saint realm would mean that the person was a peerless talent. In these last thirty thousand years, countless geniuses lamented being born into the wrong generation!

“Boom... Boom...”

A thunderous roar resounded in the sky. Suddenly, there was a group of cavalry riding the air; their godly stallions underneath them moved like lightning as they trampled the empty space, traveling several hundred miles in just a second. This cavalry that came from the sky left behind streams of shadows due to their magnificent speed.

“Neighhh...”

After a long neigh, the cavalry, like a wave of torrential steel, suddenly stopped on top of the cliffs. There was almost one thousand riders but their formations were extremely organized. It was as natural as the flowing waters and floating clouds.

This cavalry squad was clad in the same pure color of iron armor as if they had just returned from a battlefield. The squad's disciples were chilling with killing intent. The whole team was cold and

heartless with a murderous aura that filled the sky and rendered others to be unable to breathe.

Everyone held their breaths thinking about the heaven frightening power that was able to groom such a powerful iron cavalry. This had to be a powerful sect or nation.

“The Jiang Zuo Clan...”

Seeing this scene, many people were shocked at witnessing a true ancient lineage.

Even the Violet Cloud Sect’s Sect Master couldn’t help but mutter:

“This generation of the Jiang Zuo Clan is definitely ferocious with wave after wave of talents, ah.”

Seeing such an ancient clan, the arrogant group of geniuses of the Flying Dragon Lake also lost their colors and didn’t dare to provoke such an ancient existence.

“The Jiang Zuo Clan — an existence that is even older than the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.”

A Serpent Demon Lord of the Dragon Flying lake was extremely dreadful and murmured.

The iron cavalry of the Jiang Zuo Clan was led by a young man. He was cold and emotionless. He was encompassed in a godly aura and his body was akin to a jade mountain, yet he was still able to jump down from his godly stallion with ease.

“Jiang Zuo Hou — this person is extremely unfathomable. He’s only around twenty years old but is already a Hou.”

Even an official Royal Noble, such as Hun Yuan Hou, was moved when he saw this young man.

Seeing the Jiang Zuo Clan’s arrival, Zhen Wei Hou didn’t dare to be careless and personally welcomed them.

“The Jiang Zuo Clan — so extremely ancient. It was not only older than the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect but some even say that an extremely great Virtuous Monarch came from it and he was a strong enemy of Immortal Emperor Min Ren when he was younger. There were even rumors that the young Immortal Emperor Min Ren had lost to him before.”

“Virtuous Monarch Jiang Zuo.”[\[1\]](#)

An old Demon Lord of the Flying Dragon Lake exclaimed:

“I heard that he was a rival of Immortal Emperor Min Ren during their younger days, but unfortunately, he still lost in the hands of Immortal Emperor Min Ren in the end and couldn’t shoulder the Heaven’s Will!”

The other cultivators who were listening became astonished from finally realizing how frightening the Jiang Zuo Clan was. When Min Ren was younger, he could be described as peerless amongst his generation. Even though his origin was humble, he had swept through countless powerful enemies when he was younger. He even trespassed into Forbidden Burials and fought inside the Ancient Earth. Oh what kind of invincible youth he was!

However, the ancestor of the Jiang Zuo Clan was able to defeat the young Min Ren — this existence couldn't be underestimated. Virtuous Monarch Jiang Zuo, at that era, was indeed a young genius renowned throughout the Mortal Emperor World.

“Jiang Zuo Hou — his presence is right behind his ancestor, Virtuous Monarch Jiang Zuo.”

An older cultivator from the Violet Cloud Sect mumbled:

“I heard that the Jiang Zuo Clan has extremely high expectations of him and believe that he can definitely exceed his ancestor! The moment when the Difficult Dao Era had not yet ended, Jiang Zuo Hou was already a great talent. Currently, there is a rumor that he has stepped into the Royal Noble realm.”

Many disciples from big sects and powerful nations came after the arrival of the Jiang Zuo Clan, but their prestige was lacking in comparison. The fact that the Jiang Zuo Clan still remained so relevant until now was indicative of their heavenly frightening power.

The upper cliff of the ridge was filled with many cultivators that had started to set up their camp. Some had a treasure pavilion hovering in the sky with their disciples residing inside. Some had ancient giant ships as their temporary homes. There were also many cultivators on the ground that gathered in droves, just to discuss recent matters...

However, cultivators that came to the Evil Infested Ridge were not just limited to these. In the sky, there would occasionally be cultivators that rode on their swords or eagles to arrive, and sometimes even a huge flying mountain would show up... There was a multitude of colorful and strange scenes.

One could even say that people that arrived on the ground do not have the qualifications to enter the Evil Infested Ridge. In the end, for cultivators, reaching the Heaven's Mandate realm would allow for one to use flying treasures to fly. After reaching the Heaven's Primal realm, the cultivators could stomp on space to fly!

A cultivator that isn't able to fly — this was enough to show how low their cultivation was. Cultivators or low ranking sects like these essentially were not eligible to enter the ridge.

“Bang... Bang... Bang...”

The moment when numerous cultivators were eagerly awaiting the arrival of bigger sects that came to join the party at the Evil Infested Ridge, the mountains and earth suddenly shook, as if there was an Earth Bull shaking its body. Many cultivators were

scared to the point where they fled into the sky to avoid the tremors.

“What is happening? Is the Evil Infested Ridge wanting to open?”

A surprised cultivator exclaimed.

However, very soon, many people found that it was not anything like that. At this moment, they saw a giant snail slowly crawl up the ridge; it was as big as a mountain.

Seeing this giant snail, many people were dumfounded. Many of them had not seen such a huge snail during their whole lives. What was even more surprising was that on top of the snail's back, there was a group of more than one thousand people.

Seeing how slow the snail was crawling up the ridge, many cultivators couldn't help but laugh. They had never seen such a funny matter before.

“Fuck, you guys have legs yet don't know how to walk? All of you sitting on the snail's back, are you not afraid of crushing it to death?”

A cultivator felt that this scene was too funny and couldn't help but shake his head and smile.

Another one loudly sneered towards the people sitting on the snail:

“Your snail is crawling so slowly, do you want everyone to help push you up? Otherwise, what year will you all actually crawl up here.”

This caused another wave of laughter and the spectators all felt that this scene was too irrational.

Of course, it was Li Qiye’s group on the snail’s back. With Niu Fen’s speed, he could crawl up the ridge in a flash, but Li Qiye was just enjoying the surrounding scenery as he was filled with nostalgia.

Facing wave after wave of laughter, Tu Bu Yu and Gu Tie Shou could calmly sit there, but people with thin skin, like Luo Feng Hua, couldn’t do anything but smile mirthlessly with a hint of embarrassment.

Li Qiye was also as calm as an ancient god and he leisurely sat at the same place while he enjoyed his travel. He essentially didn’t care about the laughter of the crowd. Riding this snail towards the top of the ridge was like riding a godly stallion in his own courtyard — comfortable and relaxing.

When the snail was climbing up the hill, many cultivators from the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom recognized the flag of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and said:

“It is the people from the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.”

Seeing that it was the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, this caused many other cultivators to glance at each other in confusion. Thirty thousand years ago, this was a territory of this sect. During those years, who dared to gather at this place? Today, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was declining. Not only could the world congregate at this spot, but the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect, as the previous owner, had long lost the qualifications to enter the ridge.

After the war thirty thousand years ago, the Heavenly God Sect did not allow the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect to be involved with the ridge. In reality, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect no longer had the power to encroach near the ridge.

However, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had arrived today and caused many cultivators to be perplexed. This meant that there would be a conflict between them and the Heavenly God Sect, along with the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom.

A few lineages from within the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom were secretly alarmed because not long before this, the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect had executed Dong Sheng Long and Lie Zhan Hou. They even arrogantly destroyed the Mortal King's will. This set off a huge storm and everyone thought that the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect didn't care for the face of the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom.

However, the Nine Saint Demon Gate took a step and settled this matter. Still, this matter had not passed for too long yet the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect was now arriving at the ridge,

wasn't this making things difficult for the Heavenly God Sect?

Sitting on Niu Fen's back, Li Qiye looked through the ancient stone entrance at the edge of the cliff and couldn't help but become emotional.

“Stop...”

At this time, a loud and deafening yell rang in the air. Zhen Wei Hou brought a team to block the path and angrily exclaimed:

“Gu Tie Shou, this path is blocked!”

At this moment, Zhen Wei Hou's anger reached the heavens and he didn't hold back his Royal Noble aura. It furiously rolled forward, wanting to suppress the disciples of the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

“Why is it blocked?”

Gu Tie Shou stood up and glared at Zhen Wei Hou.

Zhen Wei Hou glowered back at Gu Tie Shou. Him and Dong Sheng Long had a great personal relationship but Dong Sheng Long was executed by the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect. How could he not be vengeful towards this sect? If it wasn't for the order from the Mortal King, he would have claimed justice for Dong Sheng Long.

“A tiny sect like your Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect dares to come to this place?”

Zhen Wei Hou coldly scowled and contemptuously said:

“Your Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect does not have the qualifications to enter the Evil Infested Ridge!”

“Thats right, the Evil Infested Ridge no longer belongs to your sect. Roll back however far you came from and don’t look for trouble.”

Men from the Heavenly Jewel Kingdom started to sneer.

Li Qiye, from start to finish, never looked at Zhen Wei Hou. He calmly said:

“The places I want to go, there is still no one that could stop me. Elder Gu, make him roll!”

[\[1\]](#) A higher ranking Virtuous Paragon, very close to Immortal Emperor. Yes there are ranks within Virtuous Paragons as well